





OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 21.

Being the proceedings of the Twentieth Meeting of the Old Dartmouth
Historical Society, held in their building, Water street, New Bedford,
Massachusetts, on June 30, 1908.

THE KEMPTON FAMILY IN OLD DARTMOUTH

Mary Kempton Taber

SOCIAL LIFE AMONG THE FRIENDS OF LONG AGO

Mary Eastman Bradford

HEAD OF WESTPORT AND ITS FOUNDERS

Henry Barnard Worth

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.

F74
118801

GHS
The Society
114 1914

51

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTIETH MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD,

MASSACHUSETTS

JUNE 30, 1908.

The Old Dartmouth Historical society held its twentieth regular meeting the evening of June 30 with a good attendance in spite of the very warm weather. The program for the evening comprised papers on "The Kempton Family in Old Dartmouth," by Miss Mary Kempton Taber; and "Social Life among the Friends of Long Ago," by Miss Mary Eastman Bradford. Both papers were listened to with much interest and cordial appreciation.

In introducing the first speaker of the evening, President Wood said:

"In the history of Old Dartmouth no name is older than that of Kempton for it appears upon our earliest record.

Among the many descendants of the family of Kempton now living, few of them bearing the name, there are a goodly number who are living in the very district set off to their progenitor, old Manasseh Kempton, 250 years ago.

"Our fellow member who is to speak to us this evening is now living, and I believe has always lived in about the centre of the largest tract that belonged to this worthy ancestor. She is well fitted to speak to you on the subject which she has chosen, for she has always been proud of the Kemp-ton. I introduce Miss Mary Kempton Taber, who will address us on the Kempton family in Old Dartmouth."

THE THREE MEETING HOUSES OF THE CONGREGATIONAL SOCIETY
IN NEW BEDFORD, MASSACHUSETTS.

(Courtesy of the First Congregational Society)



In each of these Meeting-Houses the Kempton Family were prominent members
and pew-holders.

The Kempton Family in Old Dartmouth

By Mary Kempton Taber

"Ephraim Kempton arrived at Plymouth in the ship *Ann* August, 1623. He was the first Kempton to come to this country. (The name was sometime spelled Kimton.) His two sons, Ephraim and Manasseh, came with him. The father died in 1645, the sons were appointed administrators of his estate. Ephraim 2d married and settled in Scituate.

"Manasseh was a very notable citizen a man of great executive ability; was chosen deputy to the general court, surveyor of highways, and assessor of taxes, serving many terms in each office. In 1624 he married Julian, widow of George Morton, thus commencing what afterward became a very close relation with the Morton family, especially noticeable in the christian names in both families, Ephraim and Manasseh being used over and over again.

"He was one of the original 36 purchasers of Dartmouth in 1652.

"He died without children in 1662. The records said, 'He did much good in his place the time God lent him.'

"In 1714 there was a Manasseh Kempton in Southampton, Long Island, by occupation a gunsmith, who was formerly of Plymouth. He represented the Kempton landed interest in Dartmouth which he derived from his uncle Manasseh. There is considerable mystery how the Southampton Manasseh obtained title to the Dartmouth lands; as the original purchaser left no will his supposed heir would be his brother Ephraim, but this brother never owned the Dartmouth lands according to the records; and a still further problem is to decide who the Long Island man was; if the original purchaser was his uncle, it might be suggested that the Scituate Ephraim could be his father, but there is no record establishing this fact, and when later this gunsmith transferred his Dartmouth lands to Ephraim Kempton 3d, he calls him his cousin, which is an absurdity, if this Ephraim was his own brother.

"The confusion created by these different relationships given in the deed, leaves in considerable doubt the relation of the Long Island man to the families in Plymouth; one thing, however, seems certain, that as he died about 1736, Manasseh, the first purchaser could not have been his father.

"In 1733, Manasseh transferred most

of his Dartmouth lands, consisting of extensive tracts of swamps, woodland, and shore meadows. Years before, the proprietors in the division of the common lands had allotted to the Long Island Kempton extensive tracts of upland, meadow and cedar swamps in Dartmouth. The first was 150 acres at the extreme end of Sconticut Neck; the second was a farm of 100 acres on the east side of the Acushnet river north of the terminus of the Coggeshall street bridge; the third was a tract of 40 acres on the east side of Clarks Point, divided by Butler street; the fourth was a tract of woodland comprising 300 acres in Smith Mills, lying between North Dartmouth railroad station and the road between Faunces Corner and Hixville; the fifth, known as the Homestead and designated by Thomas M. Stetson as 'a magnificent rectangle,' was bounded on the east by the Acushnet river, on the west by Rockdale avenue, its south line 100 feet south of Spring street, the north boundary 100 feet north of Sycamore street, and its area over 400 acres.

"The distinguishing marks along the south side have been obliterated for over a century, except a curious jog in the west line of County street in front of the residence of the late James Arnold, which may be observed as late as the Atlas of 1871.

"The north boundary of the Kempton farm can be easily traced: Rockdale avenue at a point 320 feet north of West Maxfield street, changes its direction; this point is the northwest corner of the Kempton homestead. The line extended about 100 feet north of Sycamore street, at Pleasant street crossing the Armory lot, and reaching Purchase street 420 feet north of Maxfield street. Within this domain the village of Bedford started. The county road traversed this farm as early as 1711, and later was called County street; extending therefrom, east and west, were farm lanes which afterwards became the modern streets. On its water front was built 12 of the 15 wharves that were in existence in 1820. Here was built in 1794 the first school house, situated on Purchase street; a meeting house, built in 1795, northwest corner of Purchase and William streets; and dwellings of Bedford's first merchants.

"While the Kemptons owned valuable interests in Dartmouth from the

date of the purchase in 1652, yet for over eighty years none of them lived on Buzzards bay until Ephraim came to Dartmouth in 1736, being the first of that name to reside in this part of the province.

"The Long Island Manasseh in 1733 transferred the land on Clarks Neck, the homestead on the west side of the Acushnet river, and the Smith Mills woodland to 'my loving cousin, Ephraim Kempton of Plymouth, shipwright'; in his will, probated in 1736, he devised the remainder of his Dartmouth lands to 'my kinsman, William Kempton, ship carpenter, now living in the town of Plymouth.' William and Ephraim were sons of Ephraim 2nd, and it is difficult to understand if the Long Islander was another son, why he should have described one brother as 'my kinsman' and the other as 'my cousin.'

"This included the end of Scouticut Neck and the farm on the east side of the Acushnet river. In 1742 William Kempton transferred to Jethro Delano the Scouticut Neck land, the transfer describing it as 'given me by my honored Uncle Manasseh Kempton, late of Long Island.'

"William occupied as his homestead the farm on the east of the Acushnet river. The Smith Mills property was conveyed to William Ryder.

"When the transfer was made of the great homestead to Ephraim Kempton there must have been a family arrangement that a portion of it was intended for Samuel Kempton, the brother of Ephraim, as a short time later Ephraim conveyed to Samuel the south third of the homestead; the north line of this section was 100 feet south of Elm street. Ephraim occupied the remainder of the farm as his homestead; also the Clarks Neck lot until his death in 1758.

"Samuel Kempton never resided in Dartmouth, but in 1744 conveyed his tract of 150 acres to Colonel Samuel Willis; it is said that the latter built a house for his son, Ebenezer, on the west side of County street at the head of William street, and when, in 1748, Colonel Willis transferred the 150 acres to Joseph Russell, the latter occupied this house as his homestead.

"William Kempton, the owner of the Fairhaven farm, at his death in 1787 devised his homestead to his three sons, William, Stephen and James; it was occupied by these sons and their descendants for many years after. This farm lay in the hollow between the hills, one at Dahls Corner and the other at the terminus of the Coggeshall street bridge, and extended from the river eastward a third of a mile; within its limits were the

Tripp farms, Gould place, and the Woodside cemetery.

"The son, William, Jr., moved to Acushnet Village, and at one time owned and occupied the house north-west corner of Lunds corner. He also established on the east side of the Acushnet river, the old tavern which is situated on the south side of the road and is the third building east of the bridge, for half a century this tavern was a famous resort for convivial persons living in New Bedford. In 1758 at the death of Ephraim Kempton the first Dartmouth resident, he gave by will his Clarks Neck lot to his children, Thomas and Joanna, the latter the wife of Benj. Drew, she sold her interest later to Esther Butler, her niece, and they divided the tract and Butler street was opened on the division line. Some of this tract is still owned by the Kempton descendants.

"The homestead farm of Ephraim, the south third of which was between Sycamore and Elm streets, he gave by will to his son, William, the same who lived on the east side of the Acushnet river, and the rest of the homestead to his son Thomas.

"The division line between William and Thomas was Kempton street, which had been opened as a traveled lane in 1778 at the time of the British raid. In his will William Kempton gave the section between Elm and Kempton streets to three other sons, Benjamin, Manasseh and Ephraim.

"During the years between 1760 and 1800 these three Kempton brothers were selling house lots. Thomas Kempton at his death in 1769, by will gave the sections of his homestead between Kempton and Hillman streets to his son Ephraim, the other half of his homestead north of Hillman street to his son Thomas.

"When the Clarks Point tract was assigned to Manasseh Kempton, a stream of fresh water flowed north into the river, south of where the Butler mill is now located. Fresh water was not abundant on Clarks Neck, consequently this stream was considered a public convenience rather than a private right, as in the north-west corner of the Kempton tract the proprietors laid out a watering place, which was a strip of land extending from the road to the brook over 600 feet distant; through this strip ten rods wide, animals could be driven to the water.

"When the Kempton watering place, comprising 4 acres, was found to be of greater extent than the needs of the public required the town of New Bedford placed a school house at the west end and a powder house further

east. Within a few years the old wooden school house had given way to a handsome brick structure; but according to the terms of the original grant, any person today could drive a herd of cattle down by the school house to the ancient brook. In a division of the Kempton lands in 1850 among 15 heirs, they received the numerous tracts between County street and Rockdale avenue, and on both sides of Mill and North street.

"The lot on the northwest corner of County and Mill streets was assigned to Ephraim Kempton, the lot next north was allotted to Alfred Kempton, and they built their mansions that time on these lots.

"The land at the northwest corner of County and North streets originally occupied by the first Kempton house, finally came into the possession of the late David B. Kempton.

"The first Kempton dwelling was on the northwest corner of County and North streets, occupied by Ephraim 3d, who died 1758; this home was two stories and had a long sloping roof as houses were built in those days; was taken down by David Kempton 2d about 1800, and in its place he erected a dwelling, and this was demolished by the late David B. Kempton, who built a house on the same site.

"Col. Thomas Kempton's house stood on the west side of Waldon street, fronted south with a long old fashioned north roof.

"Manasseh Kempton living during the Revolutionary War, built his house in a field, and when streets were laid out it stood on south west corner of Second and Elm streets. Manasseh's heirs in 1806 sold this house to a descendant and it stands today on Elm street, next west of the corner of Second street.

"The numerous descendants of the Kempton family built their houses on different points of the great homestead.

"The Kemptons resided only in New Bedford and Fairhaven, and not anywhere else in Dartmouth.

"No Kempton ever owned a wharf or had a ship named for him; for over a century after the family settled in Dartmouth, only one engaged in the whaling business, the late David B. Kempton.

"The peculiar development of the whaling business seems to have resulted in this condition, the ships were built, manned, and repaired, by men who resided north of Union street, but owned by men living south of Union street.

"The Kemptons were farmers, traders, and many mechanics, not engag-

ing in large enterprises very few met with financial reverses.

"The Kemptons were all Congregationalists, not one a Quaker.

"William Kempton owned half a pew in the meeting house at Acushnet, built 1744. There were 39 proprietors of the meeting house on the north west corner of Purchase and William streets, built 1795.

"Eight were Kemptons; Ephraim owned a whole pew in that meeting house. Ephraim and Manasseh each owned a pew in the meeting house on the north west corner of Union and Eighth streets, built 1838.

"The singular fact is that the Congregationalists resided north of Union street, the Quakers south of Union street. The lines drawn between Quakers and Pilgrims in 1730 were very strong, and any persons of Puritan tendencies moving into Dartmouth after that date would not affiliate with the Quakers; and as Ephraim Kempton, 3rd, had been an attendant at the Congregational church in Duxbury, none of his descendants were Quakers; they were not in any way dependent upon the Friends, as they were rich themselves.

"The Purchase street school house was built about 1794 by a number of men connected with the Congregational church residing in Bedford village. Among the proprietors were Ephraim, Manasseh and Thomas Kempton, also Benjamin Hill, whose wife was a Kempton.

"A modern school house, built in 1900, is named the Horatio A. Kempton school, a grandson of the Ephraim C. Kempton, one of the proprietors of the school house built in 1794.

"In the New Bedford Mercury of 1811 is a notice that Thomas Kempton 'will open a school in Mrs. Lydia Foster's house on the southwest corner of Purchase and Mill streets,' (she was a Kempton).

"In 1821, he was to open a school in the Purchase street school house, which stood on the east side of Purchase street about 90 feet south of William street.

"Smith Mills road, now Kempton street, had been opened for travel in September, 1778, because John Gilbert, a hired man of Joseph Russell's, made his escape on horseback from the British by that road. Nine years later it became a town way.

"Windmill hill, so called on account of a grist mill which stood on the top of the hill 100 feet east of County street, between Mill and North streets. The mill was owned and run by a Kempton in the year 1792.

"Before the division of the lands, the lots west of County street lying

between Mill and North streets were used as circus lots, and small boys and girls and children of older growth gave peanuts to the elephants, as they do at the present day. Also on the lot where the High school now stands, fireworks were displayed for the first time.

"Patience Faunce, wife of Ephraim Kempton, 4th, lived to be 105 years 6 months and 6 days; she lived to the greatest age of any person in this part of the province; she remembered seeing King Philip's head on a pole at Plymouth, where it remained many years; she said, 'there was a wren that built a nest every year in the skull, and there reared her young.'

"She is buried at Acushnet.

"Her epitaph is:

In peaceful slumber of the dead
The aged saint reclines her head;
The paths of virtue long she trod
Revered of men, beloved of God.

"When Elizabeth, the wife of Ephraim Kempton, heard the British were coming, she with her children left her home north west corner of County and North streets, and fled to the woods. The traditions that have come down in the family are that what silver they had she hid in the trunk of a tree. She carried with her one of the most cherished possessions of the family the brass warming pan; as she went through the woods the pan hit the trees and she was advised to drop it, as the British, hearing the noise it made might pursue them, but she would not part with it; it is now in the possession of her two surviving great grandchildren.

"Tradition again says that the British ransacked the house, eating everything that was cooked, and throwing numerous articles into the well which was north of the house.

"There is also in possession of one of the descendants of the family a picture of the Ephraim Kempton house which stood on the north west corner of County and Kempton streets; it was painted by his daughter, Sylvia, in 1780.

"The old Kempton clock is in the possession of one of the descendants.

"Manasseh Kempton of Dartmouth, served as first lieutenant in the Revolutionary War in 1775 and 1776.

"Another Manasseh Kempton of Dartmouth served as captain, then was made first major, in 1776.

Col. Manasseh Kempton served in 1778. Thomas Kempton, captain in 1775, made lieutenant colonel in 1776.

"James Kempton of Dartmouth, sergeant, second lieutenant, then lieutenant in 1775, marched to the alarm of April 19, 1775.

"Thomas Kempton, colonel Revolutionary War; was also a master mariner in 1767, commanding the sloop Dare in 1779, and also the sloop Polly.

"Kempton—Daniel, William, Obed, Stephen, served in the Revolutionary war as privates in 1775, and are enumerated among the minute men.

"Among the effects of William Kempton, who died 1787, were the following books; Thought on Religion, Grace Defendeth, Annotations of the Bible and Ship Builders Assistant.

"Ephraim Kempton, who died 1758 had among his effects: One large Bible, one small Bible, four books of psalms, thirteen old paper books, two pewter platters, twelve pewter plates, one looking glass.

"Ephraim Kempton, who died 1802, had, among his effects: A Bible, a silver watch, six silver spoons, and a pew in the Bedford meeting house.

"It is fashionable in articles on the origin of New England families, to claim as belonging to them the coat of arms of an English family of the same name; it may seem to ambitious persons a matter of regret that no Kempton ever claimed the heraldic rank above a tradesman.

Kempton Family References.

Pioneers of Massachusetts. Pope.
Landmarks of Plymouth. Davis.
History of Duxbury. Winsor.
History of Scituate. Deane.
History of Southampton. L. I. Howell.

Mr. Charles E. Hurd, Yonkers, N. Y. (care of Mrs. M. W. Gaines, Deshott Ave.) has much data concerning the Kempton family and is glad to hear from anyone interested.

In introducing the second address of the evening, President Wood spoke as follows:

"The history of Old Dartmouth is almost identical with the history of the Quakers in Old Dartmouth. Very early in the settlement of this territory the inhabitants came under the influence of the principles of the Society of Friends. This is partly to be accounted for by the fact that Rhode Island early became the centre for all those who were termed dissenters and were driven out by the severeness and narrowness of the powers at Plymouth and at Boston.

"Most of the Quakers who settled within our limits came from the neighborhood of Portsmouth and Newport, Rhode Island. Old Dartmouth lay fairly between the two earliest centres of Quakers in this section. It is a memorable fact that in the seventh month 1658, exactly 250 years ago, John Rouse, a young Quaker, lay in jail in Boston, imprisoned in the bitter prosecution which Boston was meting out to the apostles of this sect.

"At that date John Rouse wrote a letter to Margaret Fell, in which he recounted the numerous sufferings and persecutions which were being experienced in this state, and towards the close of the letter he stated, 'We have two strong places in this land, the one in Newport in Rhode Island and the other in Sandwich which the enemy will never get dominion over.' It was only in 1657, one year before this letter was written that the first meeting of Friends in the new world was instituted in Sandwich. This was ten years before Wm. Penn was converted to Quakerism.

"Last year in October, the 250th anniversary of this event was celebrated in the old Friends Meeting House at Spring Hill in Sandwich. As a part of the exercises in connection with this celebration, Dr. Edw. T. Tucker, a member of this society, read an interesting historical paper.

"Although the first meeting house of the society in Old Dartmouth, that at Apponeganset, was not built until 1699, still there was a monthly meeting of the society before that date which was held in a private house. This meeting house at Old Dartmouth was an enormous structure which was later torn down and built much smaller as we now see it, but the large house was needed when built in 1599 for the meeting became one of the largest in this country.

"We must remember at this time

there were living under the government of Plymouth, church and state were identical and all our inhabitants were being called upon to support from general taxation an established ministry of the Puritan Congregational faith within their limits.

"The failure of the Quakers to do this was the cause of many severe arraignments by the authorities at Plymouth. This was the time of the severest persecution of the Quakers in Boston and vicinity, but they obstinately stood their grounds as defenders of the principle of the right of freedom of worship of religious belief and action, according to the dictates of their own conscience.

"It was not until 1708 that a state church was successfully founded in this neighborhood when the Congregational church at Acushnet was established. From this time on the strife was continuous between the state church, which stood for authoritative religion, and the Quakers who contended for freedom of conscience and independence in matters of belief.

"It is now less than a month since the First Congregational church of this city has been celebrating the 200th anniversary of the founding of Congregationalism in this locality at this first church in Acushnet. The several discourses connected with this celebration have contributed much that will be valuable to us in reviewing the religious history of these earlier times. The present pastor of the church, Mr. Geoghegan, in his address made a remarkably clear analysis of this noteworthy contention. Himself a Southerner with no Puritan blood he has seen clearly as from the outside this remarkable contention of the Quakers of Old Dartmouth against all manner of severe persecution to save to us the right of freedom of worship and Mr. Geoghegan comes out clearly with the statement that in this contention it must be distinctly remembered that the Quakers won. In 1729 the general court of Massachusetts passed a law exempting the Quakers and Baptists from taxation for the support of town churches.

"From this time the Quakers in Dartmouth increased rapidly in numbers, and in influence, and comprised a large part of the inhabitants.

"Daniel Ricketson in writing the history of this period almost apologizes for giving such large place to his sect. He says that the history of Old Dartmouth is, to his mind, so suggestive of the faith of the early settlers and so inseparably connected with it.

"Their quaint speech, behavior and apparel, and their tempered social life, created an interesting phase of society in the first part of the 19th century.

"We have already had two papers read before this society, by Mrs. Mary Jane Taber, which gave an illuminating picture.

"Tonight we are to have another paper prepared by one of our members, whose parents and grandparents had an intimate acquaintance with

the noted Friends of the last century, not only in this neighborhood, but also those in other parts of our commonwealth.

"Miss Mary Eastman Bradford has prepared a paper on 'Social Life Among the Friends of Long Ago,' which will be read by George H. Tripp."

Mr. Tripp stated that the duty of reading the paper devolved on him, owing to Miss Bradford's inability to be present. The address follows:

Social Life Among the Friends of Long Ago

By Mary Eastman Bradford

"A little Quaker girl's debut into the social life of her sect, was the journey to Weare quarterly meeting in Weare, New Hampshire, many years ago. In the language of friends it was held in Tenth month, known to those of the world as October. For weeks she had packed and repacked a small hair trunk, which would hold her sedate wardrobe. How she longed for the day to come, she counted the very hours. The journey was to be made by carriages, and half the fun was on the long ride, where many other Friends joined in the caravan, sometimes sixty or seventy vehicles being in line. To one who has had the rare treat of participating in this delightful journey, the picture unrolls itself, the October landscape of yellow and red, so unlike the Quaker drab and brown, the delight of new scenes, the ripening of all nature (before its final decay), was at its greatest beauty. Then the social intercourse between Friends, who only met at quarterly, or yearly meeting, was in itself a delight. A stop would be made at Lowell and at Nashua, called in those days taverns, where horses were put up and food put down, for be it known Quakers of the olden time lived well. To the little maiden of Friendly training the suppers of fried chicken, cold meats, all sorts of sweets, cakes, and pies, told to her by her older sisters, the big dinners of roast chicken and meats of all kinds, puddings, nuts, and the autumn fruits, made her idea of Weare quarterly meeting one large eating. The day came; long before sunrise the breakfast was eaten, the big roomy carriages, and strong pair of horses was driven to the door, the packing away of boxes commences, numerous parcels, the small hair trunk swung under the carriage, the family also packed in, and all was ready—at last; the long expected moment had arrived, and they were off. The first dinner was eaten in Lowell, then on to Nashua for the night, at the old 'Indian Head Tavern.' It was the first time this dear little Quakeress had ever seen lace curtains and red, actually red velvet furniture. She felt as if her life was too full of great experiences. The breakfast over,

a new start was made on to fresh scenes. Then the discussion would begin between father and mother where they would put up for the night, at Eliza's or Moses or Enoch's, but one house appealed to the younger members, as apples, nuts and new cider were always brought out during the evening, and it was almost a party.

"The meetings were what they were supposed to attend, and of course all the older Friends did, but there was that quarterly meeting dinner, after the long first meeting; then the seemingly longer business meeting, and by this time real hunger held full swing with the younger generation, and the 'queries and answers,' were sometimes lost sight of as visions of the long table full to overflowing appeared. All the older people sat down at the first table, if there was room the children also; if not they had to wait for the second table, but there was always enough and to spare. So this little Quaker girl had her first quarterly meeting dinner away from her own home. There was the roast chicken for dinner, with all sorts of roasts besides, fried chicken for breakfast, and such fried chicken, then all sorts of new dishes her sister had never told her about. When asked on her return home if she had had a good time she replied with a sigh of satisfaction, 'oh, yes, for we had chicken all the way through.'

"Into the past have faded the sermons, and meetings, but the hospitality, the hearts, and doors thrown wide open to receive new faces and old, still remain forever in heart and mind.

"The preparations for quarterly meeting were commenced weeks before, the families in town or city where the meetings were held usually filled their homes with visiting Friends, and as every room was needed the family used to vacate their own rooms, sleeping in the unfinished attic. In one Quaker home long ago, the entire family used to vacate their comfortable rooms, and depart for the big attic in the ell of the house, where temporary rooms were partitioned off. The house was large, and in the main part could take care of thirty people, the big ell held

servants rooms and housekeeper on the second floor.

"These were never disturbed as the servant question then, seemed to be of tender nature as now. The big kitchen with its brick ovens, large set ranges, and a big stove did good work, pies, cakes, sweets of all kinds, hot and cold meats, were sent forth from the four walls. One huge kettle could cook a dozen pairs of chickens, and all this was none too much, as on quarterly meeting day at dinner, the long table which seated thirty was filed twice. Then came the supper at 3 o'clock, and again the table was loaded with old time prodigality, and twice thirty were again seated. The young grandchildren thought it a great favor to help the waitresses serve the guests. This Quaker host would remain at the meeting house until nearly all had gone to see that every one was asked to dine, if any remained, whether he knew them or not, he would ask, 'has thee accepted an invitation to dine?' on their replying they had not (probably they had been over asked) he would quickly say 'my wife has provided plenty of dinner and will be glad to welcome thee.' Sometimes he would have to ask their names that he might introduce them to his family. Many Friends came for the day from near by towns, so only required dinner. This was before the days of cold lunches at the meeting houses. Was not this true hospitality? John Adams has described his entertainment by a Quaker hostess of Philadelphia, who offered him at one meal, ducks, hams, chickens, beef, pig, tarts, creams, custards, jellies, fowls, trifles, floating island, beer, porter, punch and wine. At another Quaker home he 'drank at a great rate and found no inconvenience.' Of course this quotation is long before the time of which I am writing.

"It is very hard to write of the social life and free it from its strongly religious, as the two go seemingly hand in hand in Quakerdom. One very beautiful custom of the old days was even in purely social gatherings they often had a little season of silence at the close, when some one would feel called upon to say a few words, or offer prayer. On these occasions as well as the purely religious, a seriousness was most pronounced, and while they enjoyed much it was in a restrained, and self controlled manner.

"On their faces as they sat on the high seats be sermon ever so affecting, not a face showed emotion. One story will illustrate this calmness. A little Quaker was taken by his mother to First day meeting; he had never

been before, so it was with some fear he was allowed to go to a really long meeting. He sat very still for a long time; after a little he began to look around; the silence became more and more intense, until he could stand it no longer; he could hear himself breathe. Then he shouted 'go it,' 'go it,' 'go it.' Only his creaking boots broke the silence, that awful silence, as his mother removed him. Not an eyelid had lifted, not a muscle moved under the Friends's bonnets, or on the faces of the sterner sex on the other side.

"As one looks back it is hard to remember emotions on faces in the dear old Friends meeting, but they were sometimes most beautiful in their calm placidity, and would we could see them once more. The 'American Friend' of Tenth Month eleventh I think of 1906 has a very interesting article a 'memory of times Gone By.' I quote from it this extract. 'Sometimes a little coterie of visiting Friends would stay a week and have appointed meetings in the neighborhood visiting families and otherwise occupy themselves; always coming home for supper and breakfast.

"In return for their company and prayers, they shared our best things. Some of these things, more especially the delicacies of the table were a surprise to our not over indulged juvenile relish, and the children wondered where mother had previously stored them away. She has kept all her secrets to this day God bless her. In return for the best we had, our guests gave us their best. How well I remember it; the Friends in the parlor while we girls with increasing dignity passed back and forth with china from the parlor closet. We were not so intent upon bringing the cups and saucers carefully, as upon the bits of conversation that fell upon us. The most solemn moments of my life were those at father's table when a holy hush fell on the oblong group, for the table was an extension, on purpose for company.

"The Friend, on whom the burden to pray first fell, leaned forward with her hand on her face, as if she were indeed one of the cherubims leaning over the Mercy Seat in Moses's time. In reverent and orderly turn each of our guests prayed for our parents, 'the heads of this house,' 'the dear children, collectively and individually, most of it was individually. It was this personal appeal in prayer and exhortation, not forgetting prophecy that has so riveted me physically and mentally to these 'family opportunities.' The Reading meetings were another

social recreation, someone read aloud from a Quaker book of biography, travel, or religion, for instance, 'The Life of Elizabeth Frye,' 'The Works of Daniel Wheeler in Russia,' who was sent for by the czar of that land for agricultural education among the Russian peasantry. From the works of Barclay and of later date the noted family of preaching Hoags, the father of whom Joseph Hoag, author of 'Joseph Hoag's Vision,' which he had in 1803—in which he prophesied the Civil war, and many events which seem about to be fulfilled. Another, Lindley Murray Hoag, son of Joseph, had this wonderful close to a sermon which had held a large audience, 'And when, ten thousand times ten thousand years shall have passed away, eternity, a bounderless, endless eternity will have just begun, and Friends, have you ever thought this bounderless, endless eternity must be spent with the saints or with the devils damned.'

"Do you wonder the faces were solemn with such awful pictures before their eyes! These reading meetings were held in the homes once a week or every two weeks, and old and young mingled freely together. A strong element in the home life was the respect shown the old and infirm. Today this might be a lesson taken into more than one home in our land. No young Friend would think of sitting if an elderly person entered the room, and all were expected to shake hands and say 'how does thee do,' when callers came. You remember Julia Ward Howe in one of her lectures said in all her going about she never saw such universal respect and deference from youth to age as in the Society of Friends.

"While the reading was taking place everyone was still, of course, but after came the purely social, then old and young talked freely, and, strange as it may seem among this rather prim gaiety, there were Quaker flirtations, and some found the place in which to declare that the little god Cupid was busy among the demure maidens and the male followers of George Fox.

"Friends were great lovers and writers of poetry, some had the gift of repeating for hours not alone poetry but from the Bible. One well known Friend repeated to Tennyson in the Quaker artist's studio in London some thirty years ago portions of his 'Locksley Hall' and 'In Memoriam,' also from our beloved Whittier. She had the sing-song of the Quaker which you know Tennyson said was the only way it should be repeated.

"Here in our own New Bedford, 'Old Dartmouth Historical Society,' a

name arises of peculiar significance, a writer of poetry, prose, a strong philanthropist, a man of noble aims, whose life was spent for others, Daniel Rick- etson. The Society of Friends lost one of her most gifted sons when he, with others, left the old Quaker hearth stone. The question often arises with those not conversant with the past history of the Friends why a religious society with such a wonderful foundation here in New England should decrease in membership when elsewhere they are increasing, as statistics show, The answer is of so delicate a nature that one hardly dares venture on the debatable ground. The old Friends meetings were for the members and by the members. The Friends of the later years are ruled by the one man power.

"I think the Friends really must have had a love for music as well as poetry. Some voices for the 'high seats' as they grew to forget all but their inspired utterance were really almost a song, and its impression is a tender and sweet memory with us today. A dear old Friend, who would never allow a note of music to be heard in his house, used to take his children far from home into the wonderful land of nature, a dense forest, where bird and insect sang their glorious song to the Creator. Here, out in freedom, each child would feel at liberty, for father always sat down on a big bowlder that the woods were filled with, take his broad brimmed hat off, hold it between his knees and say, 'Children, you may sing your songs now as free as the birds,' and sing those children did. The dear Quaker mother, who had a beautiful voice, would join in, simply humming the tune. The sweet soul didn't dare to do more.

Newport Yearly Meeting.

"Back from the past comes the date of that wonderful time to the old and young of Quakerdom, held on the first Seventh day after the second Sixth in Sixth month continuing for a week. From all parts of New England, New York, Philadelphia and Baltimore, and the then far west came the elders and 'the precious youth.' The old Truro and Fillmore houses, then of later date the Atlantic and Ocean houses held this large number of attendants at the meetings. The older Friends solemnly and calmly attended the religious and business meetings, but alas, some of those 'precious youth' were found wandering by sea and show, and many matches were made 'for better, for worse' which were consummated by that beautiful, yet solemn Quaker

cremony of marriage which is familiar to some of us today.

'Near Newport is the famous old Friends school at Providence, known over our land with alumnae scattered far and wide, now it has lost its old Quaker individuality in a new name 'the Moses Brown school.' Many men in after life distinguished look back with loyal and true hearts to their Quaker alma mater. The strong and high ideals were developed there which made them what they were. With the long line of principals of the old Friends school come names and faces that bring back memories some pleasant, others not. The highest development in the school's life which was to prepare the Quaker boys and girls for social and religious life was under that colossal man in mind and body Augustine Jones, himself an author.

In his long principalship of twenty-five years pictures and pianos were allowed where not thirty years before no sound of music was heard and the walls severely white or drab. His wonderful power of making friends among those noted in literature, art and travel brought to the school men who met the scholars in a social way, thus adding much to their outlook on life. With his departure went also the old name. So Augustine Jones was the last principal of old Friends school of blessed memory.

"These quiet Friends with the seemingly plain dress really showed much time and money, if they were costumed in the real English fashion. Elizabeth Frye was noted for her beauty of dress, and we who are fortunate to own miniatures of her prize them beyond words. The silk shawls, long or short, of white, brown or gray were very expensive. The bonnets here in America were made by Friend Hollingsworth of Philadelphia, who was, may I say it, very fashionable in Quakerdom. The muslin caps were never laundered, if worn by those who could afford to always wear new ones, as a cap was never so exquisite after 'being done up.' An old Friend as she pondered one day over her muslin caps and handkerchiefs, grew troubled as she feared her cap-maker would die before a fresh supply was obtained. So her daughter was requested to see how many she then had for present use. With twinkling eyes she informed the anxious mother of eighty-five years that eighty caps were in her possession.

"Some idea may be had of the old time Friend's extreme conscientiousness. Members of the society of today may not know that their trust in the Divine power for good or ill was in-

tense. For instance, if the Lord sent rain one should accept it without a murmur, or one had occasion to venture out of doors, no shelter from an umbrella should be used. A story is told of a member of the Salem monthly meeting who had a brother of rather a worldly turn of mind, a very naughty Quaker youth. On his return from Europe he brought his fair little sister a beautiful green silk umbrella with an exquisitely carved ivory handle. She, delighted to carry it, looked longingly for rain, not being really old enough to have severe convictions on the subject of green umbrellas. After she had had the intense joy of using it once, a committee was sent from the meeting to visit her. The Friends sat in silence almost as solemn as a real funeral. Then each spoke his or her warning to this wayward child. One dear old Friend, who felt all she said, spoke in this way, 'Martha, if thou wast dying how would'st thou like to have this green umbrella held over thy head?' 'I don't know how,' Martha answered, but that awful vision was too much for her youthful mind, and that green umbrella never saw light of day. This really is no exaggeration of the olden time ideas on the subject or adornment. One idea of religious belief which had a strong place in life was their views on insurance. They did not think it right, on the ground that it was taking out of God's hands a power which mortal man should not usurp. If God saw right by his dispensation to send fire, destroying homes or property, why accept it with resignation, and they did so accept it. Life insurance was the same, one's life was in God's hands; if one died poor, he must 'leave it all in a Higher power,' trusting his loved ones should be taken care of, and they were in those days. The equality between the rich and poor, the care of those dependant upon the society was most tender and unostentatious, so that never a Friend was allowed to go to any public institution for support; this all done so quietly that no one knew who was assisted except the committee. This applies to the past. One of the 'Queries' read three months ago was 'Are the circumstances of the poor and of such as appear likely to need assistance duly inspected and their necessities relieved; are they assisted in obtaining suitable employment; and is proper care taken to educate their children?'

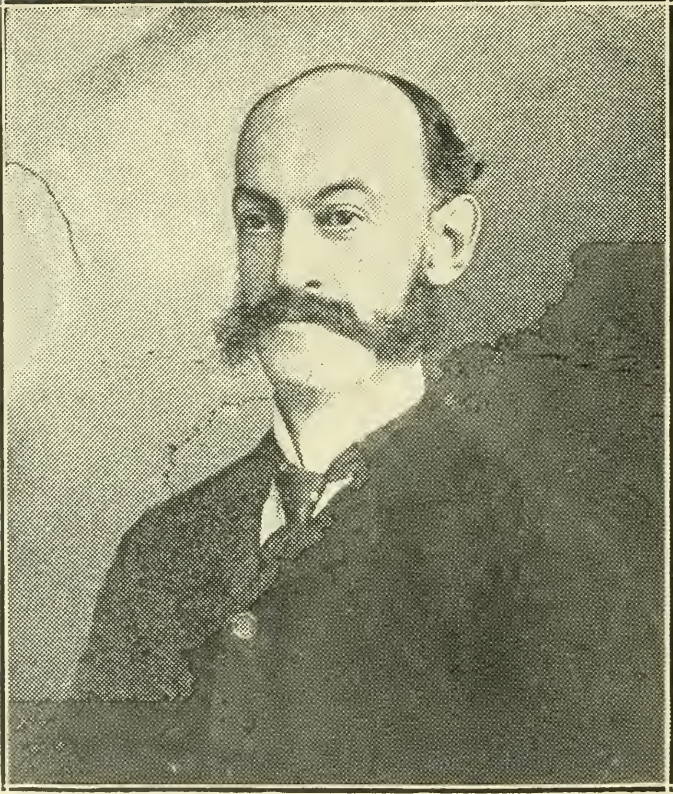
'The greatest oversight was given the Quaker youth in education and home training. Friends were most careful who their children associated with, usually keeping them within their own society, and they always attended

Friends schools. Co-education was very early introduced and proved most successful. Quaker colleges now extend all over our own land and are of high order.

"'Social Life' depends on its location. Western and eastern life is as varied as its climate. Quakerism extends from Alaska to Florida, California to Maine. Of course its social life partakes of its environment. Sweden and Norway claim their Quakers, England and Ireland, besides far off Palestine where at Ramalla near Jerusalem is one of the finest foreign mission posts founded by Eli and Sybel Jones. The society of Friends has borne and is bearing the burdens of the world's advancement.

The changes have come to the society in which many of the very beautiful customs are being forgotten, but to us of Quaker birth-right their inspiration is strong as life itself, and proud are we of their memory, though we may have left the old home of our Quaker ancestors.

"No longer do we hear of the old time Quaker hospitality that belongs to bye-gone years; only memory keeps us in touch with that period. So good-bye to the dear old life, gone with its plain bonnet, muslin kerchief and cap; lay them all away in the old chest of the dim past, but lift the lid once in a while that the memories of so many tender experiences may bless our hearts today.



HENRY BARNARD WORTH.

Head of Westport and Its Founders

By Henry Barnard Worth

At 3 o'clock a very interesting historical address was given by Henry B. Worth of New Bedford, his subject being "The Head of Westport and Its Founders." Mr. Worth spoke as follows:

Before Dartmouth was a town the western section was called Coaksett. For their protection and defense the English settlers selected their farms in the southern portion near Horse Neck and the Point, so that in case of an uprising of the Indians they could escape to the bay, where the red men could not follow. During the King Philip war two important results occurred. In the first place a large number of Dartmouth Indians surrendered, were removed and sold into slavery in foreign lands. Those that remained were so effectively subdued that they never after manifested any war-like tendencies. As soon, therefore as the struggle had ended the inhabitants began to occupy the regions further north. During this period Acushnet, Smith Mills, the Head of Westport and other places similarly situated and remote from the bay were settled by the English.

While the lands on the Noquochoke river were well suited to agriculture, the principal natural advantage was the water power about a third of a mile to the north. This attracted enterprising men from other parts of the town. The region was well covered by paths selected and used by the Indians, and later adopted by the English settlers as the location for their roadways. The great east and west thoroughfare crossing the present bridge was one section of the system that joined Plymouth and Cape Cod to Newport, and in the early days was frequently designated as "the Rhode Island way." At the junction of the roads at Lawtons Corner, near the west line of the town, stands an ancient guide-stone on which are two inscriptions:

To Howland's Ferry.

To the Point.

It suggests the period two centuries ago when travellers from Barnstable, Rochester and Dartmouth passed along this way to the place now called Stone Bridge where the ferry transferred them to the north end of the island of Rhode Island. The other inscription pointed the wayfarer from the west to the road to Westport

Point. This road became the great cross-country highway, famous and important in the days of the stage-coach. On each side of the river, following the lines of ancient paths, were other town roads, which starting in the wooded regions to the north extended to the Necks that projected into Buzzards Bay.

Before the King Philip war it would have been venturesome to think of settling eight miles from the seashore, and so far as known only one made the attempt. If the information furnished by the records is complete, the first man to locate at the head of the Noquochoke river was Richard Sisson, and he was bold and hardy enough to locate his home, as early as 1671, on the west side of the river, and on the south side of the main highway, for in that year he was elected surveyor of the town roads. He is next mentioned in 1681 in a suggestive record. The question arose as to the proper notice to be given to the inhabitants of the town meetings, and it was voted that a notice should be posted in three places, "at William Spooner's; at the mills and at Richard Sisson's." It is now known that William Spooner was located at the head of the Acushnet river. The second place, at a later date, was designated as Smith Mills, and the third must have been at the Head of Westport at Sisson's place, probably just west of the landing, and near both the road and river.

At an uncertain date, ten or fifteen years later, Samuel Mott purchased a farm on the east side of the river about a third of a mile south of the main road, which in 1709, he conveyed to Nicholas Howland. There is no indication that before this transfer there were any other families located in this vicinity.

It was in 1712 that three enterprising men formed a combination to utilize the water power north of the present village, and naturally one was a miller. A few years previous George Lawton moved from Portsmouth and acquired a large farm at Lawtons Corner, the most of which has remained in his family ever since, and is now owned by a George Lawton of Fall River. He had both means and experience, having learned before he came to Dartmouth how to conduct a mill. But no man was allowed to secure to himself, alone, any such valuable public utility. It was necessary

that it should be shared by several. In the old house with a stone chimney north of Central Village, owned by Perry G. Potter, lived a carpenter named Benjamin Waite, who afterward built the house on the west side of the main road, owned in recent years by Mrs. Joseph T. Lawton.

Northeast of the Potter farm, between the Drift road and the river, and near the brook, is an ancient house, recently repaired, with an overhang gable. It was probably built by John Tripp, who owned this farm in 1720, and the same has later been owned by the Waite family and Thomas Preece.

Lawton, Waite and Tripp formed the association. When the entire program had been arranged by vote of the Proprietors of Dartmouth, which was very much like a town meeting, the different owners had received layouts according to their ownership, of undivided lands.

Beginning at the landing on the west side of the river the Sisson farm, then owned by James, extended west to the Central Village road and along the river over half a mile south to the property owned in modern times by Abner Kirby. On the east side of the river, east from the landing, was a small tract set off to Robert Gifford which extended to the Pine Hill road; next south Mary Hix had a strip of twenty acres; she was at that time proprietor of Hix Ferry which was conducted by her and her sons until in 1745 her son William built the Hix bridge. She must have been an energetic woman, and seems to have been determined to locate where there was business. She never lived at the Head of Westport, but a short time later disposed of the property. It included the farm, which in 1895 was owned by William R. Brightman. Next south was the Samuel Mott farm, then owned by Nicholas Howland. To the eastward, bordering on the road which has since become the division line between Westport and Dartmouth, was the extensive farm of Joseph Peckham. The northeast corner of this tract was at one time owned by Paul Cuff, a slave owned in the Slocum family, who received his freedom about 1765.

The Giffords were land kings of Coaksett, and in all land allotments demanded a satisfactory share. In the 1712 apportionment at the Head of Westport they received nearly four hundred acres. One tract lay on the north side of the main road, and extended north to the Forge road corner and from the river eastward over half a mile to the brook. Between this section and the present Dartmouth

line were several small tracts, set off to various persons, and at one time owned by Jonathan Mosher, and the same now comprised in the farm owned by Joseph Smeaton.

Then they laid out a public landing on both sides of the river at the main road.

In the vicinity of the Forge Road corner was the water privilege sought by Lawton, Waite and Tripp, and this they secured with seventy acres of land in the vicinity, along the river.

On the north side of the main highway, and on the west side of the river, is the Beulah road; west of this Lawton and Waite received a tract which extended west to include the lot where fifty years ago stood the Friends' meeting-house. Next west the Giffords received seventy acres more, and this was later transferred to Stephen Packham and in modern times, wholly or in part, owned by Giles E. Brownell. Next west was the farm of Beriah Goddard, a man of considerable prominence in Dartmouth in the days when there were only a few scattered houses in this region. The farm was owned in the Davis family for several generations, and comprised the places now or lately owned by Richard S. Tripp and George L. Cornell. Still further west, as far as the brook, was a farm set off to John Sowle and now owned by Philip T. Sherman. At the corner was the homestead of Zoeth Howland and later of his son Philip, and in recent times owned and occupied by George H. Gifford, trial justice and country squire for whom the corner has been named.

Such were the layouts around the Head of the River. The Giffords lived near Horse Neck and Westport Point, and were not concerned in the early development of this section. Before the Revolution they had transferred all their tracts to other parties. Some of their descendants later become prominent in the affairs of this village, but they did not receive by inheritance any of the original layouts.

As soon as Lawton, Waite and Tripp secured the water privilege they built two mills. That on the west side of the river was known for a century later as "Lawton's Mill," and was owned in recent times by Benjamin Cummings, Thomas J. Allen, A. T. Sisson and C. E. Brightman.

George Lawton died in 1727, leaving an estate large for those days, and included in his property was a Negro man valued at forty pounds. Among his effects was a gun. In the house at Lawton's corner is a Queen Anne musket of great length, on the stock of which are cut the initials "G. L." If the tradition is trustworthy this gun

belonged to the first George Lawton, and may have been used by him at his mill on the Noquochoke river.

On the east side of the river the partners built what was called "Waite's Mill," which was located a third of a mile east of the Forge road corner. Later it was known as Tripp's or Chase's Mill, names derived from subsequent owners.

During the years before the close of the Revolutionary war there was very little increase in the wealth or population of this locality. The millers sawed the logs and ground the grain that was brought to them by the neighboring inhabitants, and there was no business from outside localities demanding the attention of the Westport mills. The farms as originally laid out remained undivided, and the principal activity of the locality consisted of people passing to and from the mills.

Soon after the Revolution a decided change ensued; ten miles away New Bedford was starting on a prosperous maritime career; ships were being built and iron and wood were in demand. This was the opportunity. In 1789 William Gifford and Lemuel Milk purchased the site now occupied by the lower Westport mill, for the purpose of building a forge. Most of the early iron mills in New England were established by some member of the Leonard family of Lynn and Taunton. In this case Gifford and Milk secured the services of Josiah Leonard, and gave him one third share in the forge. After operating this industry a few years, another important change took place, due to the removal from Nantucket to New Bedford of the Rotch and Rodman families. It was their policy to control every line connected with the whaling business. The merchant not only superintended the business of the ship, hired and paid the crew, sold the oil, and distributed the proceeds, but he had a saw-mill in some forest to prepare timber, and an iron factory to make anchors, chains, and other appliances; a factory to manufacture cordage and another to make sail cloth. Also a refinery to change oil into candles, and frequently large inland farms where he could prepare meat and other food supplies. In fact the success of New Bedford merchants grew out of the system by which they started with the original material and prepared and constructed them into vessels, controlling every line of business concerned in the fitting of the ships, and at the end of the voyage prepared the product for the consumer. In this way they secured to themselves every profit, and no won-

der they became millionaires. In pursuance of this policy, in 1795 William Rotch, Jr., purchased all the mill property once known as "Waite's and Tripp's Mill," including twenty acres of land, a grist mill, saw mill, forge, utensils, coal house, store house, blacksmith shop, and a dwelling house; at an entire cost of three thousand dollars. Mr. Rotch operated these mills for half a century. Soon after the purchase he built the house on the west side of the road at the corner south of the lower mill. This property afterwards passed into the hands of Anthony Gifford, and the old Forge became a hoe Factory. In 1854, and subsequently, the property was purchased by William B. Trafford, who transferred it to the Westport Manufacturing company. And in recent years the spot where the old forge stood has been occupied by the lower stone mill. It is well to keep in mind that much of the material used in constructing those ships that a century ago were adding to the fortunes of New Bedford merchants, largely came from those little mills at the junction of the Forge road and the Noquochoke river.

It was in those days that the village at the Head increased in size; the mills were working not only for Westport people, but for the centre of the whaling business of the world. A community must result with a meeting-house, school, store, tavern and dwellings. During the half century of ownership of the Westport mills by William Rotch the Head of the River was established and reached its height.

The slow growth of the village may be illustrated by the manner in which the meeting-house was managed. Coaksett was strongly Quaker and has held tenaciously to that form of belief even to modern times. They had a meeting-house 70 years before New Bedford at Central Village. In 1761 there was a demand for a place of worship in the north part of the town, so a building was erected at George H. Gifford's corner, and called "The Centre meeting-house," which was maintained until 1840, when it was removed to the north side of the road about a quarter of a mile west of the bridge. This was discontinued about 30 years ago.

Just what happened in 1840 to induce the Friends to move their meeting-house nearer the village may be inferred from some hints to be found in the records. In 1830 George M. Brownell purchased from Dr. J. H. Handy a lot of land which in 1845 was conveyed by John O. Brownell to the First Christian Baptist society. There had then been a meeting-house on this

lot, which, in 1859 is described as "The old meeting-house." There is some reason to infer that it may have been built soon after 1830. Evidently the Quakers felt that it was necessary to have a meeting-house nearer the dwellings of their members or they might attend the other meeting.

In 1856 Isaac Howland sold to the Pacific Union church the lot where their meeting-house stands, and at the present time the village has two churches.

It would be interesting to know how the inhabitants arranged their school affairs, but there is an exasperating absence of record relating to this subject. Land was cheap, and the owners donated lots verbally, without delivery of deeds, and when the school-houses were discontinued there was no necessity for a conveyance from the town. The same was true when the district system prevailed, and previous to 1840 it is not possible to find the record of any purchase of land for school purposes in Westport. Thus the schoolhouse east of the village on Wolf Pit Hill, now used as a library, was in existence in 1848 and belonged to District 19, but the records of the district cannot be found and no deed has ever been recorded. On the other side of the river west of the Landing, the lot for the school was purchased by District No. 14, from Abner B. Gifford, in 1841.

In every New England community the village store was an important institution. It is not possible to determine how early one was established at the Head of Westport. When John Avery Parker located in New Bedford he engaged in the grocery business, and when in Westport in 1801, he may have engaged in the same line. The first certain record is that Isaac Howland, in 1801, purchased a lot east of the bridge and built a store building, and the successive owners of the same have been Adam Gifford, Jonathan Peckham Gifford, John L. Anthony and Joseph M. Shorrocks.

In the days when liquor selling was respectable and dealers sold respectable liquor, the tavern and inn were necessary and reputable institutions. James Sisson and his son Richard from 1725 to 1730 had licenses, and may have had a country store. For years after there was no license granted to any local resident, a certain indication that there were not in the place a sufficient number of people to support that trade. At the time that the forge was started, Lemuel Milk had a license to keep an inn. In 1801, John Avery Parker had a license for some building west of the Landing,

and near the river. Parker sold his property to Isaac Howland who for a number of years continued to keep an inn, and probably built the house which stands on the south side of the road next west of the Landing. Adam Gifford owned the store on the east side of the bridge, and occupied a house further east where he had a license for an inn. The house now occupied by Dr. J. B. Parris was built in 1828 by Eliphalet Tripp, and when he sold the same he called it "my tavern stand." It was later owned by A. B. Gifford and Charles Dana, and was used by some of its occupants for the same purpose. When the stage coach yielded to the railroad the village tavern disappeared.

In the immediate neighborhood of the village there was only one house built before the Revolution; in fact when the Center meeting house was built at Gifford's corner, there was no village at the Head. On the road to Westport Factory, opposite the cemetery, is a gambrel roofed house built by Benjamin Mosher, about 1760, and owned in recent years by Bradford Coggeshall. With this exception all the houses in the vicinity of the bridge were built after the date when William Rotch bought the mills near the Forge pond; but within a radius of a mile from the bridge are several dwellings that have an interesting history.

The Zoeth Howland house at Gifford's corner was built between 1720 and 1730 and later owned by Philip Howland and Squire George H. Gifford. It is the last house in Westport having the long north roof of the early Colonial type.

On the farm next east is the dwelling of Philip T. Sherman, the west end of which having a gambrel roof, was built in 1740 by Ann West, a single woman and seamstress. Apparently it cost her over two hundred pounds. She was one of those important artisans of that period who spent days and weeks in the homes of well-to-do families performing the duties of dressmaker and tailor. Personally she must have been successful to build such a fashionable house, which was a sure index of affluence. It was later owned by William and Jonathan Devoll, John W. Gifford and Lydia T. Earle.

Another house of the same type so popular in this section is east of the village near the town line, on the north side of the main road, and is owned by Joseph Smeaton. It was built in 1742 by Jonathan Mosher, and was owned and occupied later by Benjamin Gifford and his son Stephen.

Between this house and the village, at the head of Pine Hill road, is the house built by Charles Baker for himself in 1792, when he was only eighteen years of age, and is still owned by his descendants. It is one-story center-chimney dwelling, of a style that became a great favorite throughout Westport shortly before and after 1800.

East of the Landing and at the foot of the road from Westport Factory, is the substantial dwelling built about 1818 by Thomas Winslow. In recent years it has been owned by C. E. Brightman.

East of the Shorroek store is a house built before 1830 and occupied at one time by Abner B. Gifford and his son Jonathan Peckham Gifford. A. B. Gifford died in 1847, having been one of the most prominent men in the community. His wife's father was Jonathan Peckham, a wealthy man, and this placed the son-in-law in high social and business relations in the village. He was justice of the peace, trial justice and transacted much of the local probate business of his day. In these legal functions he was succeeded by George H. Gifford.

West of the bridge, on the south side of the road, is a large house built by Isaac Howland soon after 1801, and probably occupied as his inn. It was later owned by Stephen Howland, Henry B. Gifford, Rufus W. Brightman, George F. Lawton, and R. D. Wicks.

A house that always attracts attention is the stone mansion on the west side of the river and immediately south of the Landing, with its unusual stone fence. It was built by Humphrey Howland about 1830, according to tradition, at a cost of \$11,000, and the material came from a large boulder on the farm a quarter of a mile to the southwest. Howland's widow, Rhoda, gave it to her nephew, Charles H. Hathaway who in 1848 sold it for \$2,500. It has since been owned by Nathan C. Brownell, Captain Michael Comisky, and Albert C. Kirby.

In this hasty sketch of the village at the Head of Westport, the aim has been to present only the salient features of its development. Starting in an attempt to develop the local water power, it lay dormant for nearly a century, and then shared in the great prosperity of New Bedford and reached its height at the date of the advent of the steam engine and railroad. Since that time its growth has been interrupted, the mills to the north have developed independent villages which exert very little influence on the affairs at the Head, and in the future it must rely, as in the beginning, upon its natural resources. Its water power has ceased to attract business, but there still remains unimpaired, the peculiar charms of location and environment, and in coming time, as at present, the Head of Westport will be known as a village of delightful homes.

“We have no title-deeds to house or lands;
Owners and occupants of earlier dates
From graves forgotten stretch their dusty hands
And hold in mortmain still their old estates.”

LONGFELLOW.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 22.

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-first Meeting of the Old Dartmouth
Historical Society, held in their building, Water Street, New Bedford,
Massachusetts, on September 29, 1908.

JOHN HAWES

By Rebecca Williams Hawes

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
society quarterly, and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

F 74
· II 2504



CAPTAIN JOHN HAWES
1768-1824

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTY-SECOND MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD,

MASSACHUSETTS

SEPTEMBER 29, 1908.

At the 21st regular meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society the feature was the reading of a paper on "John Hawes." The paper was written by Miss Rebecca Williams Hawes, a grand-daughter of John Hawes, and was read by Miss Mary Hawes, his great-granddaughter, who is a cousin of Miss Rebecca Hawes.

There was a large attendance, when President Edmund Wood called the meeting to order.

President Wood touched briefly upon the two distinct branches of the society's work, the collection of objects of interest especially connected with the history of this locality; and the historical research. Of this first department, President Wood said the society was to be congratulated on having accumulated so extensive a museum collection in so short a time. He alluded to the reputation which it had

given New Bedford, and said that a visit to the rooms was a most proper pilgrimage for former residents to make while visiting this locality in the summer.

With the approach of winter, the president said, the other department—that of historical research, was again coming to the fore, in the preparation, by members, of papers on the history of the past and the men and women connected with that past. The speaker said that the taking up of this work did not mean that the efforts of the museum section were to cease, as a very interesting program for the winter was being laid out. He concluded by expressing the hope that the owners of many valuable objects of historical nature would realize the appropriateness of the society rooms as a dwelling place for these properties.

President Wood then introduced Miss Hawes, who read the following paper:

John Hawes

By His Grandaughter, Rebecca Williams Hawes.

In his family Bible, now belonging to his great grandson and namesake, we read that John Hawes was the second son of Shubael Hawes, a captain in the Second Bristol County Regiment of Massachusetts in the Revolutionary army, who died in 1781, in his 43d year, and Elnathan, his wife, daughter of Robert Wrightington, also a Revolutionary soldier. She died in 1779 in her 40th year.

Nothing further was known of his ancestry until, within a few years, through the zeal and perseverance of his oldest grandson, a full record has been obtained, beginning with the pilgrim Edmund Hawes, who sailed from Southampton, England, in the ship James, April 6, 1633. He settled in Duxbury, Mass., and later removed to Yarmouth. In the Yarmouth records he is set down as "late of London." He served in Yarmouth as deputy of the court 16 years, selectman 23 years, town clerk 25 years, and as assessor and chairman of land committee for short terms. The record further says: "He survived all the first settlers of Yarmouth and died June 9, 1693, about 80 years old. He was a man of education and good parts, and was a leading man in the town and county."

His grandson, Hon. Benjamin Hawes, born in Yarmouth, 1662, removed to Edgartown, Marthas Vineyard, about 1700, and married there. Their son, Samuel Hawes, born in Edgartown in 1717, moved to Dartmouth, where he married, in 1736, Elizabeth, daughter of Lettice Jenne, of the Plymouth Colony settlers. He was the first of the name to establish a homestead in Dartmouth. He bought several acres of land, inherited by his wife's family, from John Ward, who owned 1000 acres in the northwestern part of the township, now Acushnet. This land was situated about half a mile north of Lund's corner, on the west side of the road leading from East Free-town. Here he built a house, afterward owned and occupied by his son

Shubael Hawes, who died there in 1781, leaving the estate to five children, his wife having died two years before. In this house John Hawes was born. One room of the part originally built by his grandfather, Samuel, still remains, but is entirely built over by the house now standing on the original site. Shubael Hawes was a devoted father to his motherless children, and his son John always spoke of him with respect and affection.

Beyond the personal recollections of his widow, who survived him 35 years, we have no account of the early life of John, who was 13 years old at the time of his father's death. It was my privilege to be much with her in my childhood, and I never tired of hearing stories of the Revolutionary days and of my grandfather's early life. These last she repeated again and again, the last time on her 90th birthday, when she added "You must remember this for them all." Now, at "three score and ten" I have endeavored to recall as many as possible, and there is no one living to help me.

Shubael Hawes was a shipbuilder by trade, and had charge of the yard where many ships were built for the Russells and Rotches. His son often spoke of going to the yard at noon-time, and sitting on the timbers while the father told him stories of the sea, and counselled him to learn all he could from his teachers and be a good boy, adding, "Perhaps you will live to command some of these ships I have built,"—a prophecy that was afterwards fulfilled.

At his death in 1781, John was given into the guardianship of an uncle who was about to emigrate to Saratoga county, N. Y., then a wilderness, who carried the boy with him. Of his life there he rarely spoke, but it was very evident that it was one of hardship and much unjust treatment, and that the boy, who later became the stern foe of injustice, found the situation unbearable on that account, and not because of physical trials. He was evidently a thoughtful, intelli-

gent boy, and it was one of his greatest troubles that he was allowed no "schooling." When he was 15 years old, without money, he left his uncle's house at night, in midwinter, and walked and worked his way, "sometimes with bleeding feet," he said—back to Acushnet. On his arrival there he received a scant welcome. His sisters were married and gone, and his two uncles either could not, or would not, help him. In a letter to his oldest son written 20 years after, he says: "My greatest anxiety in life is for my children, having myself experienced the want of parents in my youth. I often reflect on the sufferings I endured; even those who professed the greatest friendship for my father when living, when he was dead they would hardly let me come into the house. However I have since both fed, and clothed, and educated some of their children."

The homeless orphan then took to the water, and at 19 years old, during the last years of the Revolutionary war, was master and part owner of a small coasting vessel, which carried supplies for the American army into Long Island sound, where it was once captured by a British frigate, and its crew held prisoners for a short time. The details of these experiences have faded from my childish memory, and I find no other record of them. During these years he made every possible effort to educate himself, studying and writing, and copying at night in his cabin, and receiving instruction, when on shore, from everyone who could teach him anything.

"When he became of age in 1789, his father's estate was settled, and he not only claimed his part, but bought out the other shares for which I find receipts dated 1793. In 1792, when 24 years old, he married Marcy, daughter of Stephen Taber of New Bedford. I find bills of this date, and again 1797, for 'repairs and painting of my house,' the one where he was born, built by his grandfather. They probably went to housekeeping immediately, and the family Bible records the birth of two sons and a daughter in the next ten years.

"His wife dying in 1803, he married in 1804, Mary Tallman Willis, daughter of William Tallman. To them were born four children, one dying in infancy, and the home became an ideal one for the seven children, who realized no distinctions of blood in the faithful care of both parents. As long as they lived, they recalled gratefully the incidents of their life together there.

"After his second marriage, he gradually gave up a seafaring life, and for the next twenty years lived in Acushnet—excepting two years in New Bedford,

1815-17—fulfilling all the highest duties of a father, citizen and patriot. We do not find the date of his first appointment as justice of the peace, but it was probably about that time that his old title of Captain Hawes was changed to 'Squire Hawes.' In this capacity he became one of the leading men in the community. It was a post for which he was eminently fitted. Everything shows that he had a judicial mind, and that a stern sense of justice ruled every action. His widow said of him at this time, "For years and years, every one, both in the church and out of it, came to Squire Hawes for advice and help. They brought him all their affairs, from fights over their fences to the settling of their estates, and he was like the good Samaritan, he never 'passed them by,' but was patient and helpful, even with unworthy." His office, as justice, was in his own home, a home that was the centre of innumerable interests for nearly 30 years. He often brought from his office amusing stories of the people who consulted him there, and the children always responded eagerly when their elders were summoned to the parlor as witnesses to a marriage ceremony. From the list of these it would seem that he 'joined in the bonds of matrimony,' as the record phrases it, more people than did the ordained ministers around him. He had many firm friends among the Quakers, whose children, when marrying out of meeting and not wishing to employ a hireling for the service, generally came to his home instead, and he officiated often in the homes of his friends and relatives. Many of these certificates, some of them 100 years old, have been returned to the descendants of the parties. His reverent and impressive manner at such times was always remembered by those most interested. His was a home of boundless hospitality, and for many years, both before and after the founding of the Methodist church, was the headquarters of all the Methodist preachers within a large circuit. At the earliest conferences, not only was the house filled, but the barn was so filled with saddle horses that the squire's horses and cows were turned into the meadows. Father Taylor was a constant visitor, and so was the eccentric Rev. Dr. Maffit, who once made a long stay with his wife and large family, including twin babies. Another eccentric visitor was the celebrated Lorenzo Dow, whose delivery of his sermons here was punctuated by throwing the cushions from the pulpit in his excitement, and who was so absent minded that he walked directly by the chaise waiting for him at the door to take him to Fairhaven, and

started on foot, across the fields, in a heavy storm. It is also recalled that on their way to a conference at Nantucket, 15 ministers left their saddle horses to be taken care of for the week.

There are many pleasant stories of him at this time, from which to form some idea of his personality. In his home, in church meetings and in his public and private business he seems to have shown a native dignity that never failed. He was of medium size, stoutly built, and extremely neat in person, with fair skin and light brown hair. His daughter-in-law describes him, as he drove up to the custom house in his bellows-topped chaise. "He was a man of stately presence, gracious and serene, ever careful in his dress, wore bottle green broad-cloth-only parsons wore black in those days—a buff vest, white neck cloth and a ruffled shirt." The only picture ever taken of him, a small oil painting made in Liverpool when he was about 30 years old, repeats these details of his dress. His children remember playing with the tassels of his "Wellington boots" brought from England. Daniel Ricketson writes of him. "He was a retired and respected shipmaster, a man of commanding presence, well dressed in the style of that day, and wore a white beaver hat." My father, his youngest son, said of him: "He was always firm, but never harsh. I never heard him laugh aloud, but his smile I can never forget. It was always reward enough when we pleased him." A daughter of Abram Smith, my maternal great-grandfather, for 20 years postmaster of New Bedford, told me when she was 80 years old, "as a child I often went from the postoffice room to the next one, used for the custom house. Squire Hawes always made me welcome with a pleasant smile; I have never since heard the word 'serene' without thinking of him." Another, the daughter of an old sea captain, on hearing a few years ago that he had a living namesake, said: "I am glad to know some one lives to bear that name; it is one I was taught to reverence."

"The history of this interesting household would not be complete with out special mention of the "house mother", his second wife, Mary Tallman Willis, who for 20 years as his help mate, and after his death, fulfilled all the duties bequeathed to her, surviving him 35 years, and dying in New Bedford where she was born, in her 91st year.

"At the time of their marriage she was the widow of Samuel Willis, with one daughter, ten years old, afterwards the wife of Dr. Alexander Read,

and he was a widower with one daughter and two sons, and to these seven children she was a mother so just and loving that her youngest stepson never knew, until he was 19 years old, that he was not her own son.

"In appearance and temperament she was a direct contrast to her husband. She was of medium size, with marked features, dark complexion, with bright dark eyes, quick in her movements, had a "quick wit," a positive genius for seeing the bright side, and an unflinching cheerfulness and patience in dealing with the inevitable cares and anxieties of this large family, as well as those of the varied interests of her husband's public and private business. For 20 years she was the "main spring" of the Acushnet home, regulating it with unflinching tact, and joining her husband in its unbounded hospitalities. Their last Acushnet home, still standing and well preserved, was sold at his death, 1824, to his neighbor, Mr. Russell, whose son, George Russell, when very old, told me, "I remember them well, and they were fine people. My father who had always known her, said Mrs. Hawes was a high stepper and a good manager." I remember once, after Captain Hawes had started on a voyage to London, she made up her mind that the house was not big enough; "her new baby crowded the other children." So she sent for a carpenter the very next day, and had another story added to the back part of the house, which was very old. When he returned the bill had been paid and the rooms were in use and when she asked him if she had done right, he answered, "you always do right, wife."

"From her childhood she had a pleasant gift of rhyming, and after her death I found little rhyming notes, written in 1769, when she was ten years old, to her playmate Hannah Pope. The Tallman and Pope homesteads, on the present Acushnet avenue, were separated by a brook, and a hollow tree, overhanging its bank, was their postoffice. In later years she always carried paper and pencil in her pocket, and often stopped in her work to "set down her thoughts." Gifts to her children and grandchildren all had a bright loving verse added to them. Often a gift of food to a sick neighbor would have its "line," and long, interesting, beautifully written letters to her children were carefully preserved. When she became blind, in her last years, she often called me to her and said "Bring pencil and paper, I have some thoughts to set down."

If John Hawes ever entered the whaling service, it must have been soon after the close of the Revolutionary war, but there is no record

of it. His first voyage to Europe of which I find a record is in 1793. He made several voyages there before 1795, and was once one of only two survivors of a shipwreck. Later he was given charge of a shipping agency in Dunkirk, France, in company with William Rotch, Jr., of New Bedford, Thomas Macy of Nantucket and Jeremiah Winslow of Portland. On the breaking out of the French revolution Mr. Rotch left France with Mr. Hawes, bringing a large amount of specie hidden in the ceiling of the ship's cabin, none but those two knowing of its existence. They were chased by pirates, and Mr. Rotch, losing confidence in his sailing master, gave the command to young Hawes, who brought the ship and treasure safely to New Bedford.

"After his return from France he became a successful captain in the foreign and coasting merchant service, in the employ of New York and New Bedford merchants. There are letters from the Posts, Grinnells, Howlands, Minturns, Hazards, Rotches, Russells, Fishes and others, and as carefully preserved copies of his replies to many of them. They form a collection that any man might be proud to leave to his children. Would that all his children could have lived to see them! While the majority are on business, all have personal expressions of their reliance on his judgment and 'integrity'—that good old-fashioned word is often used—and many have postscripts about personal matters that are very pleasant reading. One letter from Gilbert Russell, afterward his brother-in-law, in formal business words, ends impulsively, 'I regret to hear you are not well. I beg you to take good care of yourself, for good men are scarce.'

"Soon after his first marriage, during one of his visits in London, he happened one evening into a crowded religious meeting, where he was greatly interested by the fervor and eloquence of the speaker. On his return to his lodgings, in the house of an old Quaker lady, on telling what he had heard, she said, 'Why, thee has been among the Methodees!' On his return to Acushnet he found that the trustees of the Congregational church, of which he was a member, had, according to the church law then in force, levied on the property of some aged neighbors, unable, through sickness and poverty, to attend services or pay their church tithes. Choosing what seemed to be their most valuable personal effects, the officers had literally 'despoiled their very hearthstone' by carrying off the brass andirons from their only fireplace, and offering them for sale in the village store. He immediately

bought and returned them, and severed his connection with the church that seized them. The very next Sunday his pew was empty, and remained so. He soon turned definitely to the faith which realized his personal principles of love and justice. The stern Puritan doctrine had never been acceptable to him, and the new atmosphere of Christian fellowship was very grateful. Methodist preachers from Boston were invited to hold meetings in his house, and a class was formed of which he was the first leader. In 1805, Rev. Epaphras Kibby held the first public services, followed by Father Taylor, Mr. Maffitt and others, and when the church was finally organized in 1807 he gave a lot, timber, and money for the first building. The deed of the lot stipulates that it should revert to his heirs if ever diverted from the use of this church, and his children were pledged to fulfil his wish. To their loyalty to this pledge, this congregation now owes the present church at Acushnet on the spot now consecrated by 100 years of the faithful service of five generations.

"The original contract for the first building, signed by Henry Remington and Stephen Davis, housewrights, and John Hawes, Esq., was found among his papers, and has been given, with others, to the present church trustees, to be preserved with the later records. The only description of the building that I recall is that it had one door in front, one aisle in the middle of the plain benches which served for seats. Being hard of hearing, Mr. Hawes sat in a large chair in front of the pulpit, among the singers, who sat on the front bench, and Capt. Gordon, with his pitchpipe, led the tunes.

"When he gave up his seafaring life, he became interested in many business enterprises. In his shipyard on the Acushnet river, he was builder and part owner of seven vessels, and he formed several business partnerships, besides building salt works at Bellville. At one time, in partnership with Joseph Wheldon, they carried on their business in the building, now in ruins, afterward used as one of the first cotton mills in America. This partnership of Hawes & Wheldon was begun in 1819. There are papers of Hawes & Taber (his brother-in-law, Stephen) from 1811 to 1814; Hawes & Haskell, no date. In 1813 the shipyard 'on Sam'l Perry, Esq.'s, land,'—John Hawes, part owner,—was leased by William Kempton. At this time he was nominated collector, and disposed of his ship interests. In 1822 there are accounts of his interest in 'candle works,' and contract for build-

ing 'salt works,' the only business papers I find at this time outside of his collectorship.

"For ten years, from 1805, he felt the general depression of business preceding and during the war with England, 1812-15. In political matters he early took a firm stand, and in 1807 was elected representative to the Massachusetts legislature from New Bedford for one term. Political excitement was intense, and he was defeated as a candidate for the same office in 1808. As ship owner and merchant, he suffered much from the Embargo, both of France and England. He writes to his son in 1811, 'I am unable to collect from my many interests enough to defray the necessary expenses of my family, and there is absolute need in the community which I am unable to relieve.' In the same year he writes: 'I devote much time to the farm and the boys (then 9 and 11 years old) have been of real service to me in getting in the harvest. It is, however, so small that I shall send you, by packet, a quantity of bags which I wish you to ship promptly to be filled with corn in a southern market.'

"As justice, he had waged a steady war against the universal persistence of smugglers, and as ship owner he lost heavily, saying, 'I would rather all my vessels would rot at the wharf than to trade with the enemy, or ask my captains to take a false oath at the custom house.' Of course he incurred the lasting hatred and opposition of disloyal custom house officers, and when his name was first present for appointment as collector of New Bedford, in 1808, he was defeated by his political opponent, who became his bitter, personal enemy.

"In 1812 he was one of the organizers of the New Bedford Bible society, and was chosen its first president, and the same year he was authorized to issue a warrant calling on the inhabitants of Fairhaven to vote upon the question of establishing the township, and to preside at the meeting until the election of a moderator. He was also head of the committee appointed to build a 'Town House' in Fairhaven, then New Bedford. There seems to have been no limit to the calls upon his time and strength.

"On taking possession of the custom house he soon revolutionized the administration of its affairs, fighting within it, as he had long fought without, against all disloyalty, and establishing there the orderly, painstaking, loyal service he had always given to his private, judicial and church work. That he was utterly fearless in the discharge of his duty is shown by copies, in his own handwriting, of letters written to both friend and foe. The bit-

ter opposition of his political enemies, beginning with his first election to the legislature in 1807, was continued entirely through his collectorship and was ended only by his death in 1824. A personal letter from his 'good and true' friend, Thomas Hazard, Jr., written in 1818, when he had held the office four years, warned him of fresh attempts of his enemies to have him removed. Charges of dishonesty and disloyalty among the employes of his office were also reported, and he was urged to watch carefully, lest there might be some grounds for them, which would result in injury to himself.

There are many other interesting letters from this good old Quaker, who left all his business interests in New Bedford in the care of John Hawes. In one he says, "Do as you judge best in all matters, I trust you entirely." Among other long ones are those of the old Quaker, Capt. Preserved Fish, many of them political, in which he strongly, but in a friendly spirit, objects to Friend Hawes' opposition to the old Federal party. The letters of these sterling friends show them to have been intelligent, loyal, practical men, and personal matters, freely discussed in them, show a close friendship, valued by them all.

The issuing of the Embargo Act marked the beginning of several years that tried men's souls, especially those of government officers, who tried faithfully to perform the duties of their offices. A recent article on the condition of affairs at that time says: "They were hard days for revenue officers. Many of the most prominent merchants of the largest seaports, when their trade was practically ruined by the embargo, sent out their ships as privateers. Many of them honestly and firmly believed in their right to seize all they could, and enter it free of duty, and many more, utterly devoid of principle, preyed on friend and foe alike." I find many copies of search warrants issued by John Hawes, justice, giving authority to search for smuggled goods in New Bedford and Fairhaven. This was the beginning of the general opposition to Mr. Weston, who was appointed collector in 1808. I find receipted bills of a Boston lawyer to "John Hawes for services in his contention with Isaiah Weston."

The Centennial number of The Morning Mercury, issued in 1907, gives an account of this long contention, and adds, "It was not long afterwards that Mr. Weston, the collector, was removed, and John Hawes, Esq., appointed in his place." This was five

years after he had been first nominated for the office and defeated by Mr. Weston. Meanwhile, he had again served as a member of the Massachusetts legislature, for Fairhaven, in the session of 1813-14. His honorable and faithful service there, convincing his fellow citizens of his fitness for the service of the United States government, he was again nominated for the collectorship. A copy of this petition, sent to Washington at this time, records that some of the signers, "being convinced of the unfitness of the present collector for the office, and that all his charges against Mr. Hawes were unfounded," asked the appointment of John Hawes, etc.

After building his house in Acushnet, in 1817, Mr. Hawes rode daily to the custom house, returning at night. Up to a few weeks before his death he dined at Nelson's tavern, and I find numerous bills, one only two inches square, which reads:

Esq. Hawes, to 17 dinners, \$3.12.

Rec'd Pay't,

Nath'l Nelson.

In April, 1815, he removed his family to New Bedford, to be nearer the custom house, renting there the house of his friend, Thomas Hazard, now standing on Water street, but he was greatly annoyed by the constant opposition and abuse of his disloyal neighbors there. This, added to the strain of his official duties and his personal business and home duties, affected his health seriously, and by the advice of physicians he took a long rest and change of scene, traveling from New Bedford to Saratoga Springs, N. Y., in a chaise, accompanied by his wife, who kept a daily journal, which we now have. Neatly written in ink, sometimes on her lap in the chaise, while the horse was fed, often at night, when her husband slept, it is an interesting and amusing manuscript. The chaise was new, also the horsehair trunk strapped on behind; the horse was strong and trusty, and the return journey was made in six weeks from their de-

parture, in September. But a few miles from the Springs stood the home of the uncle from whom he fled in his boyhood. His uncle's aged wife was still living, and when he one day made himself known to her she showed great emotion. The journal says: "With streaming eyes she welcomed the honored and beloved man, who, 40 years before, a helpless, unhappy orphan, left her door to begin a new life. Now he stood before her a noble, loyal, successful man, in his prime."

The use of the water at the Springs did not seem to benefit him, and they remained but a short time, but the rest and change strengthened him, and he resumed his official duties. In 1817, he returned to Acushnet, bought an old homestead, and added to it the large house now standing east of the stone bridge and next to the home of Judge Spooner. He and his family gladly returned to a country home, and the change was a happy one. Here he passed the last seven years of his life, riding daily to New Bedford and enjoying, when there, the companionship of many valued friends.

A chronic dropsical affection of the chest, caused by exposure in his early life, slowly and steadily increased, but almost to the last he went to his office in the custom house where his faithful deputy kept watch during his absence. He bore his increasing weakness and pain patiently, calmly setting his household and business cares in perfect order, as he had always done. On his death he delivered to another guardian the property left by his two brothers which he had held many years for their children; principal and interest were untouched, although he had clothed and educated them meanwhile. Squire Spooner, to whom the charge was given, said: "It was a most affecting sight to see this good steward of the Lord give up his stewardship, faithful unto death."

He died on the evening of Dec. 29, 1824, aged only 56 years.

"Behold the upright man! For the end of that man is peace."

Note.

In the summer of 1906 I was requested by a committee of the Methodist Episcopal church of Acushnet, of which John Hawes was the founder, to prepare a short personal sketch of him to be read at the centennial celebration of that church in September, 1907. At that time I gave what small help I could to Mr. Franklyn Howland, for the history of the church he was then preparing. It was always a great regret to his children that there were no records of his later life, and there was very little reliable material for any account of him.

All his books and papers were given, at his death, to his oldest son and executor, John A. Hawes, of Fairhaven, who duly administered the estate and was then supposed to have destroyed them. He died three years after his father, in 1827, leaving two very young sons who never knew anything of their grandfather's affairs. By a very strange and remarkable coincidence, at the very time the first steps were taken to mark this centennial, all these letters and papers were accidentally found by the widow of his grandson, John A. Hawes, Jr., in a chest stored in the old Fairhaven Academy. Instead of destroying, the executor had carefully preserved and refiled them, adding many of his own letters from and to his father. At his death, others of his own papers had been placed above them, and although some of these were afterward referred to by his heirs, the oldest ones, those of John Hawes, remained at the bottom, unknown and untouched for 82 years. As I happened to be in New Bedford at the time they were found, they were all given into my care, the first thought being merely to obtain dates, etc., connected with this church anniversary and Mr. Howland's history of Acushnet, but I soon found that a much larger trust had

been "laid upon me," as the Quakers say.

I have since carefully sorted and read more than two thousand of these letters and papers, varying from small bills and receipts not more than two inches square, to long legal papers. Beginning in 1792 at the time of his marriage, when he was twenty-four years old, the oldest are marked "My accounts since I became a household-er." They furnish a minute history of the last thirty years of his useful, busy life. Most of them were in his own handwriting. Printed forms were few in those days, and paper was scarce and expensive, and hundreds of pages of carefully copied legal papers and business letters show how the "unlettered youth" developed into the well-trained, intelligent, painstaking, upright business man.

There are copies of business and political letters from his tried and true friends, neatly kept small books of his personal expenses, copies innumerable of local and government papers, yearly files of bills and receipts, accounts and contracts connected with the Methodist church, papers relating to his administration of several estates—a wonderful record of his faithful stewardship of the affairs of his fellow men.

I have attempted no extended history of his life, nor any eulogy of his honored name, but have tried, in connection with this memorial, and from written and spoken words, simply to show to his children's children here, and to you his successors in this household of faith, the personality of the man himself. Would that I could also make plain to you what I have read between the lines of these papers committed to my care, and, more than all, the fragrance, so real to me, that has exhaled from those dusty and worm-eaten records of a "just life."

REBECCA WILLIAMS HAWES.

“Do as you judge best in all matters,
I trust you entirely.”

In a letter to John Hawes from Thomas Hazard, Jr.

“The glories of our blood and state
Are shadows, not substantial things.
There is no armor against Fate;
Death lays his icy hand on kings.
Sceptre and crown
Must tumble down!
Only the ashes of the just
Smell sweet and blossom in the dust.”

JAMES SHIRLER,
1596-1666.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 23.

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-second Meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building, Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on January 12, 1909.

THE VILLAGES OF DARTMOUTH IN THE BRITISH
RAID OF 1778.

Compiled by Henry Howland Crapo in 1839-40

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.



HENRY HOWLAND CRAFO
1804-1869.



PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTY-FIRST MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD,

MASSACHUSETTS

JANUARY 12, 1909.

The Old Dartmouth Historical Society's regular quarterly meeting proved of exceptional interest to the members. The feature was the announcement of the discovery, by William W. Crapo, of a series of historical sketches of early New Bedford, written by his father, the late Henry H. Crapo, and their forthcoming publication by the society.

President Edmund Wood called the meeting to order at 8 o'clock. The disagreeable weather kept the attendance down. Comparatively few members were present.

"The society continues prosperous," continued Mr. Wood. "The membership is holding its own, new members off-

setting those who have fallen by the way; and the interest in the society also continues.

"In the first place, the building is being used, and a great many people visit the collections. The museum committee has been active, and have arranged exhibitions that were very successful. The teas have also been held, and a very satisfactory entertainment, a 'Bretton Afternoon,' given through the kindness of Mr. and Mrs. Clement Swift.

"The research committee is actively at work, and several papers are in embryo, for future meetings. The program for tonight has been arranged by this committee, and it is fairly full, so that the president will not detain

you by remarks. Every community has its history, generally written about it; and in nearly every community there have been a great many written histories. Many citizens have an interest that leads them to accumulate facts, sometimes never printed, by old worthies of Dartmouth—narratives written by some of our grandmothers that probably entertained small audiences in the past; and it would be well for the committee to obtain them, if possible.

"The historical matter of tonight is a much more ambitious effort. One of our older inhabitants did, in a more complete way, assemble a great deal of material, and it has come to our notice. It will be introduced to us by the son of the author, who, by his commemorative addresses and his efforts in behalf of the society itself has already taken place as one of the prominent historians of this community. I will introduce William Wallace Crapo."

Remarks by Hon. William W. Crapo.

"There resided in New Bedford in 1839," said Mr. Crapo, "a man named John Gilbert. In the directory of that year he is mentioned as a laborer living at 24 North street. I remember to have seen him and to have heard him tell the story of what he and others of that day regarded as the most notable and exciting event in the history of the town—its invasion by a British army in 1778. When I saw Mr. Gilbert he was about seventy-five years of age. He was short and slight in stature, but active and alert and quick in his movements. He had readiness of speech and clearness of memory. I was told, if I remember rightly, that he was of Scotch birth and that at an early age he was apprenticed or bound out, as it was called, to Joseph Russell, the leading resident and largest landed proprietor of Bedford village.

"When a young man, my father, Henry H. Crapo, entertained the idea that at some leisure time in the future he might possibly be disposed to write a history of Old Dartmouth or of Bedford Village. That leisure time never came. But his fondness for local historical research led him to gather up for reference and preservation whatever referred to the earlier years of the town. He desired to obtain accurate and detailed accounts from those who had witnessed and participated in its memorable events. He knew John Gilbert of whom I have spoken and thought his story had historical value. Mr. Gilbert a number of times came to my father's office. It was there that I saw him, encouraged and aided by suggestive ques-

tions he told with much minuteness what he saw and learned about the pillage and burning and killing by the British troops. All this was carefully written out. Sixty years had elapsed, but they had not effaced his recollection of those days of alarm and danger.

"He further gave a complete account of all the buildings in the village, the dwellings, stores and shops, at that time, those burned by the British and those that were not destroyed, giving their location and thenames of their owners and occupants. This information was made a matter of record.

"There was another narrative. It was told by Elijah Macomber, who was a soldier and a member of the military company that garrisoned Fort Phoenix. He was in the fort on the day it was bombarded by the British fleet. With some minuteness he described the occurrences of that eventful day.

"These narratives are interesting because told by persons who witnessed and had a part in the events they described. They are contributions to our local history which ought not to be lost.

"These manuscripts, carefully prepared and arranged, were placed in a portfolio used exclusively as the receptacle in the collection of whatever data and information came to hand relating to the history of the town. Several months since I came across that portfolio. Its contents have not been disturbed for more than fifty years. As I was unable to read the manuscript, through failure of sight I handed the portfolio to Mr. Worth, the chairman of our Historical Research committee, with a request that he examine its contents and learn if it contained anything of value in the present or worthy of preservation for the future. This he has kindly done. While he will not weary you by reading all it contains, perhaps there may be descriptions and incidents which may interest you."

Remarks by Henry B. Worth

During the Revolution the towns on Buzzards Bay were neither wealthy nor populous. Dartmouth had been for a century under the domination of the society of Friends and was not especially belligerent. Fairhaven had sent an expedition in 1775 to recapture two vessels seized by the English and anchored in the Bay. During the first three years of the war 120 Dartmouth men had served in the American army. These acts were not so extensive as to furnish a reason for sending a force of several thou-

sand troops to destroy the villages on the Acushnet. The motive, however, was not due to any warlike demonstrations of the inhabitants but to cripple business activity which had given aid to the American cause.

The river between Bedford and Fairhaven had been a safe and convenient harbor for privateers where they could obtain supplies. A fort had been established on the rocky promontory since 1804, known as Fort Phoenix which provided a slight defence against vessels approaching from the ocean but more important than this were maritime enterprises that directly or indirectly assisted the colonial insurrection. In South Dartmouth Elihu and James Akin had a ship yard and in September, 1778, a vessel was ready to launch. There is a suggestion that she was to be a privateer. Then on the west side of the Acushnet from its head south to the bay were ship yards, oil factories, rope walks, wharves, a distillery and other accessories of whaling and commerce beside vessels always at the landings. Here was property that contributed liberally to the support of the continental revolution.

Shipping was built, equipped, repaired and supplied, store houses were filled with rum, oil, cordage and other merchandise in demand at every market, for which could be obtained in exchange commodities of which the colonies were in need. Such active assistance to the rebellion was sometimes to be checked and a raid was planned as a military movement to reduce the opportunity for assistance.

According to the records in the archives department in the State House in Boston it appears that at the opening of the war orders were given to prevent vessels leaving the colony without permission. Bedford men who owned vessels were William Tallman, Isaac Howland, Lemuel Williams, Gamaliel Church, John Alden, Joseph Russell, John Williams, Barnabas Russell, Leonard Jarvis, David Shepard, Seth Russell, Joseph Howland, William Claghorn, Patrick Maxfield, Zadock Maxfield, Abraham Smith, Daniel Smith, Ureal Rea.

In October, 1775, William Davis received permission to fit out a sloop for some West Indian port to bring back a cargo of powder.

In the same year the brig Kezia, David Sowle, master, was permitted to sail on a whaling voyage, a bond to bring the oil and bone to Dartmouth having been given by the owners, David Shepard, Seth Russell, David Sowle and Abraham Smith.

During the year 1776 restriction on whaling and commerce became acute.

Leonard Jarvis, a business associate of Joseph Rotch, sent the sloop Polly with rum and sugar to South Carolina for a cargo of rice and Joseph Russell sent the Smiling Molly for the same merchandise. At the end of that same year Barnabas Russell stated that provisions were scarce and he petitioned for permission to send to South Carolina the schooner Rouger for rice and Patrick Maxfield sent out the schooner Wealthy for the same cargo.

In April, 1777, there were 75 men at Fort Phoenix and as their time had expired the local authorities asked for a detachment of 40 men and four field pieces—4 pounders.

A committee of "inspection and safety" was formed with Col. Edward Pope as chairman. Its duties were to detect and report any inhabitants who exhibited Tory sympathies.

Privateers began to make the Acushnet a harbor. The brig Fanny 18 guns, owned by Abraham Babcock and commanded by Capt. John Kendrick was at Dartmouth; also the "American Revenue" with two prizes, a ship and a schooner.

No systematic attempt was instituted by the English to hinder the Dartmouth merchants conducting whaling and trading. Some of their vessels were captured, but more escaped.

An amusing incident gives a glimpse of a possible reason why the English may have regarded the Dartmouth inhabitants as entitled to favor. In April, 1778, Jireh Willis reported that the British were in the habit of landing on Naushon and taking all cattle there. Holder slocum, one of the owners, persisted in landing there two pairs of oxen.

Freedom from interference by the English tempted the local traders to engage in commercial ventures and to accumulate considerable property.

Under date of June 16, 1778, certain prominent men of Dartmouth addressed a communication to the General Court representing that the harbor on the Acushnet river is the only one between Cape Cod and North Carolina in control of the Americans and that there were fifty vessels there and the stores are filled with provisions; that several families had moved from Bedford and more proposed to do so unless assistance were given. It was signed by Fortunatus Sherman and Thomas Kempton, selectmen, Edward Pope, Leonard Jarvis, Joseph Rotch, Joseph Russell, John Alden and Abraham Smith.

As a consequence Col. Crafts was ordered to Dartmouth with 50 men and 4 field pieces to act under orders of Col. Edward Pope.

The risk of an invasion into such an unprotected seaport ought to have aroused more caution in the minds of the Bedford merchants and until there could be guaranteed to them sufficient protection such tempting collections of property ought not to have been permitted. Possibly the alluring profits derived from trading in time of war induced them to assume the hazard.

Tory sympathizers kept the British fully informed and two of them piloted the fleet into the bay. A time was selected when the collection of property on the Acushnet was large and valuable and all men capable of bearing arms had gone to Stone Bridge for military defence.

The English expedition was arranged with all spectacular accompaniments calculated to inspire terror and subdue the inhabitants. An army of British regulars fully armed and equipped entered the bay in a large fleet of vessels. The force was ten times more numerous than all the men residing in the region. The grim labor of destruction was systematically conducted. The purpose was to destroy and not to pillage. While the torch seems to have been applied only to structures devoted to manufacturing or mercantile purposes yet there is no evidence that the English endeavored to prevent the flames spreading to dwelling houses. In their tour of fifteen miles from Clarke's Point to Scouticut Neck they accomplished a thorough work of devastation. The British commander complacently reported to his chief that he had executed the order "in the fullest manner." Five years later Stephen Peckham, Jabez Barker and Edward Pope, selectmen of Dartmouth reported to the general court that the value of property destroyed exceeded £105,000, or over one-half million dollars.

It was the only occasion when hostile military forces landed on these peaceful shores and consequently it has always been regarded as one of the few occurrences of signal importance in the history of the town. Eye witnesses found eager listeners among succeeding generations. Old men related to children the events of that woeful night and yet for over half a century the recollections of these witnesses were not reduced to writing. A few meagre statements were the only results deemed worthy of preservation. Fortunately for the modern historical student before all the participants in that disaster had passed away an efficient and able scribe compiled a collection of greatest use because of its accuracy and completeness. He was the first and only in-

vestigator who appreciated the value of seeming trivial facts and with commendable patience wrote down the narratives of the old men giving numerous minute details which other historians had not deemed of sufficient interest to perpetuate.

Henry H. Crapo was born in Dartmouth near the Freetown line in 1804 and died in 1869. The first of the Crapo family in this section came from the town of Rochester and located in the vicinity of the Babbit Forge in Freetown and it was in this locality that the family continued to live for several generations. Peter Crapo had a large family and it became necessary to provide for them homesteads in other places. One of the sons named Jesse married Phebe, the daughter of Henry Howland, and in 1807 the father purchased for his son from Barnabas Sherman the farm on the north side of the Rock a Dunder road, a short distance east of the Bakertown road and here was built the house still standing where the boyhood of Jesse Crapo's son Henry was spent.

Much speculation has existed as to the meaning and origin of the name of that road. Some distance north of the road in the woods is a large boulder resting on a high ledge of rock and this possibly was named the Rock of Dundee and from that phrase the numerous variations in the name may have originated.

In 1825 Henry H. Crapo married Mary Ann Slocum, daughter of William, who was the owner of the great farm at Barney's Joy. In early life young Crapo was a school master in Dartmouth and studied land surveying in which he became very proficient and which furnished considerable business after he had ceased teaching school. He possessed to a great degree two traits of a successful man, an unflagging industry and a careful attention to details. As a natural outcome of his environment and heredity he had a taste for local history.

In 1832 he had removed from Dartmouth to New Bedford about the time of the failure of the whaling firm of Seth Russell & Sons. The Seth Russell farm was bounded on the south by the line of South street; on the east by the Acushnet river; on the north by a line half way between Grinnell and Wing streets and the farm tapered as it extended westerly nearly to Buttonwood Brook. Russell's house was located on the southeast corner of County and Grinnell streets. His son Seth, Jr., occupied the house on the east side of Fourth street and north of South street, and his son-in-law, George Tyson, occupied the stone

house on South street between Fourth and County.

One of the results of the failure was to bring in'o the market at once the whole of this farm and it was necessary to have the same surveyed and divided into small lots. This work was performed by Mr. Crapo and was the first extensive job in surveying which came to him after his removal to New Bedford. In 1842 he purchased for himself a considerable tract of this arm on the southwest corner of Washington and Crapo streets, both of which he laid out and built the house for his residence which later became the home stead of Capt. William H. Besse. During many of the succeeding years he served the town as town clerk and occupied various offices until he removed to Michigan in 1856.

During the early years of Mr. Crapo's residence in New Bedford he became considerably interested in the history of the town and formed the purpose to prepare and write a more or less detailed account of the events and people of that locality.

With considerable care Mr. Crapo reduced the recollections of these persons to writing and collected from newspapers and other sources a portfolio of historical data relating to New Bedford, but before reaching the stage where he was satisfied to put the material in narrative form, business connections required that he move to Michigan and the subject was never completed, but a portfolio of papers for over half a century has remained in New Bedford in the possession of his son, William W. Crapo, and the same has now been examined and revised for the purpose of publication.

Among these papers are two letters addressed to Mr. Crapo by James B. Congdon, written about the year 1844, and they disclose an interesting situation in New Bedford in reference to a compilation of a local history. It seems that James B. Congdon and Daniel Ricketson were also intending to prepare local histories of a more or less elaborate character and there existed some rivalry between them, each considering the "field" his own.

Mr. Congdon delivered a lecture on the early history of New Bedford before the Lyceum, and some feeling was aroused in the minds of Messrs. Ricketson and Crapo, and during the day of Dec. 27, 1844, there was a considerable exchange of letters, and those of Mr. Congdon have been preserved; but the matter was quickly dropped. Years later Mr. Ricketson published his history of New Bedford.

Mr. Congdon collected numerous papers and historical data which have been added to the records in the New Bedford Public Library.

The extracts from old newspapers made by Mr. Crapo may be found in the files of the Medley, Courier and Mercury. His extended interviews with the old men of his day have the greatest historic value. Only a few minor corrections have been necessary, and these appear in the notes; but the bulk of the statements has been found to be in exact accord with contemporary public records. This reflects the greatest credit not only on the accuracy of the narrators, but the scrupulous care of the writer who elicited the facts and committed them to paper.

John Gilbert, whose story is the longest, was a peculiarly valuable witness. By birth a Scotchman, he lived as hired boy in the family of Joseph Russell, the leading man of business and wealth in Bedford village. At his home visitors of standing were entertained, and the household numbered over 20 persons. Here would be heard, even by the servants, discussions of all public events of the day, and such an occurrence as the British Raid would be the topic of conversation for years. While Gilbert was an eye-witness to the facts, yet in this atmosphere he would have a most intelligent appreciation of the relative importance of different details, so, although his account was stated 60 years after, it no doubt contains the salient and principal occurrence that came within his observation, narrated according to their importance.

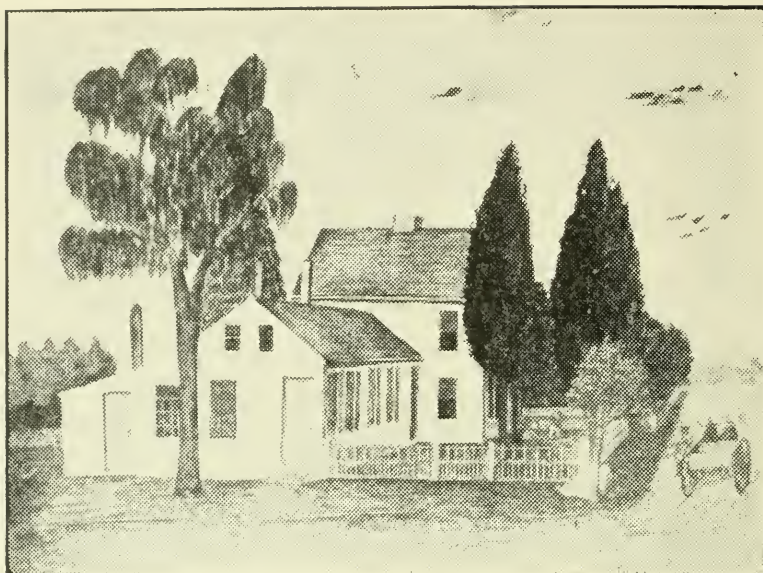
Although Mr. Crapo seems to have considered the Macomber narrative entitled to great weight, in two particulars it has been criticized.

1. As to the English troops landing on Sciticut Neck.

2. That Isaac Howland's house could not have been burnt because it was a brick house and stood across the end of Pleasant street on the north side of Union and was standing until modern times.

In order that the landmarks and localities may be understood notes have been inserted in brackets. It should be kept in mind that the narratives were written in 1840 and the word "now" refers to that date.

Other accounts of the Invasion may be found in Ricketson's and Ellis' History of New Bedford and in the New Bedford Evening Standard of Sept. 5, 1878.



THE JOSEPH RUSSELL HOUSE.

The Villages of Dartmouth in the British Raid of 1778.

Compiled by Henry Howland Crapo in 1839-40.

Statement of John Gilbert of New Bedford in relation to the burning of Bedford Village by the British in 1778; and, also, in relation to the number, location, owners, etc., of the dwelling houses and other buildings, including those destroyed at that time.

Said Gilbert was 75 years of age the 16th of September, 1839; was born in 1764, and consequently was about 14 years of age at the time of the attack. He is a man of extraordinary memory, of quick comprehensions, very intelligent, and has resided in New Bedford since he was 4 years of age.

His statement is in substance as follows:

On the 5th of September, 1778, in the afternoon, the British fleet arrived off Clarks point. It consisted of two frigates, an 18-gun brig and about 36 transports. The latter were

small ships. The two frigates and brig anchored opposite the mouth of the Acushnet river and a little below the point. The transports were anchored outside the Great ledge and opposite the mouth of the cove. The troops, including light-horse artillery, etc., were landed in barges. The landing was completed a little before night, near where the present almshouse is situated, and the troops arrived at the head of Main (now Union) street about dusk. A part of the troops were wheeled to the right and passed down Main street for the purpose of burning the town, whilst the remainder continued their march to the north on County street. There was not at this time more than 15 able-bodied men in the place, every person that could leave having gone to reinforce the American army in Rhode Island, where at that very time

they were engaged, their cannon being distinctly heard here.

I was at this time an apprentice to Joseph Russell, the father of Abraham, etc., and had been sent for a horse to carry my mistress to some place of safety. On my return she had gone, as also the goods from the house, but Peace Akins was there (a connection of the family), whom I was directed to carry with me. The house stood at the present corner of County and Morgan streets, and a little within the fence on the south-east corner of Charles W. Morgan's lot (a). By this time the British had appeared in sight. I was upon the horse by the side of the horse block, urging Mrs. Akins to be quick in getting ready. She, however, made some little delay by returning into the house for something, and before she had time to get up behind me four light-horsemen passed us, but without paying us any particular attention. Whilst the head of the British column was passing us and whilst Peace was in the very act of getting upon the horse, a soldier came up and, seizing the horse's bridle, commanded me to get off. I made no reply, but by reigning the horse suddenly round, knocked him down, which left me perfectly at liberty and headed to the north. The troops occupied nearly the whole of the road, leaving, however, a small space on the west side between them and the wall. Through this open space I attempted to pass by urging my horse at the top of his speed, but before I had gone five rods a whole platoon was fired at me, without hitting either myself or horse. These were the first guns fired by the British since their landing. The troops now opened from the centre to close the space next the wall, which reduced me to the necessity of passing through the centre of the remaining platoons. This I effected without injury, in consequence of the speed of my horse and being so mixed up with the troops as to prevent their firing. About 20 feet in advance of the leading platoon were placed two men with fixed bayonets, as a kind of advance guard. They were about six feet apart, and as I advanced from the rear they both faced about and presented their pieces, which I think were snapped at me, but they did not fire. I passed through between them and made my escape, turning up the (b) Smith's Mills road; I went to Timothy Maxfield's, about $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles, and stayed all night.

I afterwards learned that upon leaving Peace Akins on the horse block some British officers rode up and assured her that if she remained

perfectly quiet nothing should injure her. She remained in this situation until the troops had passed and the officers left her, when she went over the east side of the road into a field of pole-beans, and thence traveled.

The four horsemen that first passed us on the horse block went into the house and plundered two men whom they found there, the goods have been already conveyed back. These men were Humphrey Tallman and Joseph Trafford, who worked for Joseph Russell.

As I passed up the Smith's Mills road, and about one-quarter of a mile from County street, I met William Haydon and Oliver Potter, both armed with muskets, who inquired where the main body of the British then were. I told them they were nearly square against us. Upon receiving this information they cut across the woods, etc., as I was afterwards told, and came out a little in advance of the British and near the west end of the present North street. The woods were very thick on the west side of County street at this place, and under cover of night and these woods Haydon and Potter fired upon the British and killed two horsemen. This I was told by Haydon and Potter, and also by the American prisoners on their return home, who saw them put into the baggage wagon. One was shot.

A few minutes after these men were shot Abraham Russell, Thomas Cook and Diah Trafford, all being armed, were discovered by the British attempting to leave the village by coming up a cross-way into County street. When at the corner of this way with County street, or nearly so, they were fired upon by the British and all shot down. Trafford was 21 years of age lacking 14 days, and was in the employment of Joseph Russell, with whom I then lived. He was shot through the heart and died instantly, after which his face was badly cut to pieces with the sabres of the British. Cook also worked for said Russell, by the month; he was nearly 40 years of age. He was shot through the leg and also through the bowels, the latter bullet passing through his bladder. He died about daylight next morning. Russell was about 40 years of age. He died about 10 o'clock the next morning, at the house of said Joseph Russell, where they were all carried after remaining all night in the road where they were shot. Russell and Cook were buried in Dartmouth (as stated by Macomber); Trafford was buried on the hill by the shore, a little north of the old ropewalk in this town. This was a sort of potter's field, where

(a) It is the present William S. Reed's dwelling house.

(b) Smith Mills road was Kempton street, Rockdale avenue and the Hathaway road. Timothy Maxfield's house was on the north side of the Hathaway road near the junction with Kempton street.

sailors were buried; the land was owned by Joseph Russell (c).

A company of artillery consisting of about 80 privates had been sent from Boston for the protection of the place. The building occupied by them as a barracks was the "poor house," which stood near the present site of Philip Anthony's dwelling house. It was a long, low building, and has since been pulled down (d). The company was commanded by Capt. James Cushing of Boston. Joseph Bell of Boston was first lieutenant, William Gordon of Boston, second lieutenant, and James Metcalf, third lieutenant. The latter was mortally wounded by the British during the night, at Acushnet. This company, although stationed here had a short time previous to the landing of the British been called to Howland's Ferry to aid the Americans against the British in Rhode Island. But during the day of the landing Lieuts. Gordon and Metcalf had returned with a part of the company and one piece. As the British advanced they were under the necessity of retreating. They had a yoke of oxen of Joseph Russell's to draw their cannon.

The officers of this company had their quarters at and boarded with Mrs. Deborah Doubleday, a widow, in the house in which Judge Prescott's office now is, which was then owned by Seth Russell, father of the late Seth and Charles. After Metcalf was wounded he was brought down to this house, where I saw him the next day. I think he lived three days (e). I was at his funeral—he was buried on the hill by the old meeting house at Acushnet, "under arms".

The evening of the British attack was clear and moonlight. The sloop Providence was very often in here, and I was frequently on board of her. She was commanded by John Hacker of New York (since a pilot through Hell Gate), was sloop-rigged, and I think about 100 tons. She brought in the prize "Harriet of London," which was burnt on the south side of Rotch's wharf, below where the sail-loft now is. This was the wreck recently taken up on the bar. She also took and brought in prize the British-armed brig Diligence, of 18 guns and commanded by John Smith of Liverpool. The engagement was off Sandy Hook and lasted five glasses (2½ hours). The Providence had two men killed—the sailing master, James Rodgers of Conn., and the steward, Church Wilkey, of Fairhaven (north part). Don't know the number killed on board the brig. She was subsequently repaired here and manned, fitted, etc., as an American

cruiser. She was with the squadron in the Penobscott and was there blown up by the order of the American commandant, as was the Providence. The crew of the brig was landed here, but I do not know where they went to.

McPharson's wharf was at Belville, and was burnt by the British, together with some vessels laying there. A brig called the "No Duties on Tea" was burnt at this wharf. She drifted down the river after her fastenings were burnt off and finally sunk just at the north of "Dog Fish Bar" and abreast of the Burying Ground hill. Several other small vessels were burnt at this wharf and sunk; they were afterwards got up.

An armed vessel sunk on the west side of Crow Island (which is opposite and near to Fairhaven village). She was afterwards got up. Her guns were got up by some persons diving down and fastening ropes to them upon which they were hoisted up. Benjamin Myrick was drowned in diving down for the purpose of fastening a rope to the last one. There were only two wharves in the village of any consequence. The largest was Rotch wharf (the present Rotch's wharf), the other was Joseph Russell's wharf (now Central wharf).

[John Gilbert has been employed in the merchant and whaling service since 21 years of age. His parents resided in Boston. He was left an orphan. His father was lost in a vessel out of Boston, which was never heard of. He was brought to New Bedford at the age of 4 years and bound an apprentice.]—Note by H. H. Crapo.

Privateering.

There were no privateers owned and fitted from New Bedford. They were all owned in Boston, Connecticut and Rhode Island, and rendezvoused here.

A large sloop called the Broom frequently came in here. She was commanded by Stephen Cahoon of Rhode Island and mounted 12 guns.

"The Black Snake," a long, low, black schooner, frequently came in here. She was owned in Connecticut and mounted eight carriage guns. Don't know the name of her captain.

An Indian burying place occupied the present site of the Merchants bank and Hamilton street. It was a burying ground both before and after the war. It was a high hill, composed of rock covered with a few feet of earth. When the hill was cut down the bones were put into a box and interred in the Friends burying ground by William Rotch, Jr. The Friends burying

(c) The rope walk stood on the land now Morgan's lane and extended from the shore west to Acushnet avenue.

(d) This lot was on the southeast corner of Sixth and Spring streets.

(e) Prescott's office was on the west side of North Water street in the building next north of the corner of Union.

ground was on the shore, at the foot of Griffin street.

Gilbert says "on the day the British landed they commenced carting goods about the middle of the afternoon, and carried them on to a piece of cleared land, containing about one acre, which was situated in the woods west of the jail and surrounded on all sides by swamp, heavy wood and thick copse. Many others carried goods to the same place. After moving all the goods I was sent for a horse to the pasture west of where the jail now stands."

Elijah Macomber's Account of Raid.

Account of the burning of New Bedford and Fairhaven by the British troops, on the evening of the 5th of September, 1778, as given me by Elijah Macomber, formerly of Dartmouth, now resident in New Bedford, Dec. 6, 1839; said informant being in good health, and sound mind. He was 85 years of age on the 14th day of May last, and consequently more than 24 years of age at the time, being born May 14, 1754. He was in the fort at Fairhaven on said 5th day of September, where he served as a private from March, 1778, to December following.

The substance of Mr. Macomber's statement is as follows:

The fort below Fairhaven village was garrisoned, at the time, by Captain Timothy Ingraham, Lieutenant Daniel Foster and thirty-six non-commissioned officers and privates, making a total of 38 men. There were eleven or twelve pieces of cannon mounted in the fort, and about twenty-five casks of powder in the magazine, twenty casks having been procured a few days previous from the commissary store in New Bedford, which was kept by Philip and Leonard Jarvis, brothers.

About 1 o'clock p. m. Worth Bates (Timothy Tallman, Wm., etc., knew this man) who lived at a place on the Bedford side called McPherson's wharf (a), and who had that day been out fishing, landed at the fort in his boat and informed the captain that a British fleet was in the bay and nearly up with the point. In a few moments they made their appearance by the river and anchored off abreast the fort. About one-half or more of the smaller vessels anchored off Clark's point and the remainder dropped in to the east of the larger vessels and commenced embarking troops in a small cove, a short distance to the east of the fort, behind a point of woods and under cover of the guns of the larger vessels. The fleet consisted of 36 sail. Immediately upon discovering them three guns were fired from the fort to alarm the country, and a

despatch sent to Howland's ferry, where a part of the American army then was, for reinforcements. The debarkation of the British troops commenced about 2 o'clock, both to the eastward of the fort, and at Clark's cove. A company of artillery from Boston consisting of about 60 men, under the command of Capt. — Cushman, was stationed at the head of Clark's cove, which upon the landing of the British fell back, and retreated to the head of the Acushnet river. — Metcalf was first lieutenant of this company and was shot during the night at Acushnet village. Wm. Gordon, of this town, was second lieutenant, and was taken prisoner by the British, but made his escape before they arrived at the head of Acushnet. The troops continued to debark from the transports lying to the east of the fort until night, but neither their movements nor those landed at the cove could be seen from the fort.

Not long after dark the detachments from the cove commenced the work of destruction. The first building discovered in flames were the ropewalks and the distillery belonging to Isaac Howland (father of the late Isaac Howland, Jr). Soon after all the stores, warehouses, some barns and dwelling houses, together with every vessel they could get at were in flames. There were a large number of vessels in the harbor at the time,—a large English ship having been brought in a prize by the French a few days previous and then lying at Rotch's wharf, as well as several others a short time before. Every vessel was burnt, excepting those lying in the stream, which they could not get at, and a small craft somewhere up the river. The number of vessels destroyed was 70. Among the dwelling houses burnt was — Rotch's and Isaac Howland's, Sr.

A little before 9 o'clock or between 8 and 9, and after some of the vessels which had been set on fire on the Bedford side and their cables and fastenings burnt off, had drifted down towards the fort, the detachment which landed on the east side advanced upon the fort from the eastward. Two guns were then fired at the fleet, and after spiking the guns the garrison retreated to the north, leaving their colors flying. The British supposing the fort to be still garrisoned, opened a heavy fire upon it with their artillery, which soon ceased upon not being returned. The garrison were at this time ranged along a low wall a short distance to the north of the fort, waiting to discover the exact position of the army in order to make their retreat successfully. They were soon discovered by

(a) McPherson's Wharf was at Belleville.

the British who fired upon them and wounded a man by the name of Robert Crossman. A ball passed through one wrist and across the other. A hasty retreat was then commenced and the enemy not knowing the exact position and strength of the Americans did not make a vigorous pursuit. The whole garrison with the exception of the wounded man and two others, John Skiff and his father, who were taken prisoners, succeeded in making their escape to the woods at some little distance north of Fairhaven, where they lay through the night and until the British had passed them from the head. Before the fort was evacuated a train of powder was placed from the magazine to the platform. The British upon entering after destroying the ramrods, sponges, etc. applied a slow match to the magazine which communicating with the train left by the garrison, was blown up sooner than was intended, destroying one man at least, the fragments of whose gun, cap and accoutrements were afterwards discovered near by. After burning the barracks, guard house, etc., the detachment moved north, destroying vessels, stores, etc., and formed a junction with the detachment from the west side somewhere towards the head of Acushnet, after which they marched down towards the fort. They were out all night. The next day they re-embarked near the fort. The leading platoons of the detachment on the west side of the river fired upon three men, who were armed, near the house of Joseph Russell (father of Gilbert, Abraham and Humphry), two of whom were shot down. These men were Abraham Russell, about 40 years of age, Cook, a young man who lived with him, and Diah Trafford, about 23 years of age. The British advanced rapidly upon them with charged bayonets. They begged for quarter which was refused. Russell was killed immediately, his head being entirely cut to pieces with cutlasses. Cook died about day-light, his bowels were ripped open. Trafford (this is the uncle of Joseph Trafford, the continental), was shot through the leg and severely wounded in the abdomen by bayonet thrusts he died the next day about 10 o'clock, after making some statements relative to their death. They were all carried in to Joseph Russell's house in the morning.

Mr. Macomber says he saw these men lying where they were attacked the next morning before they were taken up. The sun was up and he was on his way home, the garrison forces having dispersed for a few days until reinforcements should ar-

rive. These men were carried over to Dartmouth and buried on the farm of Jediah Shearman (whose wife was sister to the said Abraham Shearman) a few rods north of the house, where their graves may now be seen. The farm is now owned by Philip Gidly, who purchased it of Samuel Barker. Trafford married Macomber's sister.

The prisoners taken stated when they came back that the troops which landed on the east side were delayed some hours in consequence of their light horse artillery becoming entangled in a marsh which lay at the head of the cove where they landed. This accounts for their delay in making an attack upon the fort.

On the night following the general attack a number of barges were discovered coming up the river which were fired upon and driven back by the force which by this time had assembled at Fairhaven, a detachment having, I think, arrived from Howland's Ferry, and a body of militia from Middleborough, making several hundred. It was supposed that their object was plunder and that the expedition was not ordered by any of the general officers.

William Bliss says he was serving at that time at the Ferry. Says troops were sent for, but they could not be spared and none went. Says he moved to New Bedford about 1800.

Mr. Macomber further states that he returned to the fort in two or three days, as did also the rest of the garrison, that he entered the fort on the first of March for ten months and stayed until December, completing said term.

Also, that Wm. Tallman's father was taken prisoner and he thinks prisoners were taken at Acushnet village.

Also, that the American prisoners on their return reported that the whole force of the British was about 5,500. This, I presume, includes the number attached to the several vessels.

Also, thinks the detachment on the west side must have nearly reached the head of the river before the fort was evacuated.

Also, that both detachments had artillery and he heard light horsemen, too.

Also, says Obed Cushman was here with the militia next day, says he was in the sloop Providence a while, and was all cut to pieces during her last cruise.

Mr. Macomber further says that Isaac Howland, Sr., stated his loss in shipping to be \$6,000.

He thinks the following privateers were owned, fitted and sailed from

here: Sloop Providence (— Stoddard's father was in her) — Fairfield, — Revenue, — Hornet. Don't know how many were in port at the time.

Mr. Macomber is very intelligent for a man of his age and has a good memory. The facts above stated so far as they relate to himself, to what took place on the east side of the river during the night of the landing, what fell under his observations on the west side relating to the conflagration, and the death of the three men which he saw in the road where they fell the next morning, are personally known to him, and that the others were told him on his return and at various times afterwards by those who saw them here and by the prisoners who returned from the British.

He states that he cannot be mistaken as to a part of the troops landing on the east side, that it looks as plain to him as if it was but yesterday and that the whole scene is constantly on his mind and before him.

Statement of Perry Russell.

Eldad Tupper and Joseph Castle resided in Dartmouth. They were Tories and were driven out of town by the Akins. Capt. Elihu Akins, father of Jacob, Abraham, etc., was a strong Whig, in consequence of which they joined the British and piloted them into Padanaram. They burnt Capt. Elihu Akins's house and a new brig on the stocks. Inquire of Caleb Shearman. Don't know whether it was at the time Bedford was burnt or not. Perry Russell says he has seen Caleb who says they burnt Capt. James Akins's and Capt. Elihu Akins's dwelling houses and a new brig on the stocks the next morning after they burnt Bedford. They went in with two row-gallies.

Seth Tallman says he can remember when there were but five houses in the village but can't tell which they are.

Timothy Tallman.

Says his father's name was Tim, that he was commissary, that on the day of the landing he was at Horse Neck and rode in 9 miles in 45 minutes, just past the British at the cove. His family had got one load of goods back to farm-house, rest were destroyed. His house stood where Barrows' store now is on corner Third and Union. He was afterward taken prisoner at farm-house, his knee buckles and shoe buckles were taken, his favorite horse taken, but afterward

restored as also his liberty by the general of whom he spoke well.

Caleb Shearman, 80 years old March 15, 1840. British fleet came up the bay Saturday afternoon. Sunday morning several barges came around to Padanaram and burnt Elihu Akins's house, the father of Abram, a two story house, standing where Akins's house now stands. Also James Akins's house, brother of Elihu and father of Justin Akins, set on fire, stood where John Rusaforth, Sr., stands. Set on fire the Meribah Akins house, called the Stone House. Reuben Smith lived there, and his wife (an Irish woman) put it out several times. Also burnt a brig on the stocks ready to launch, owned by Elihu Akins. Richard Shearman, reputed father of Nathaniel Sherman, and Joseph Castle and Elded Tupper were Tories and went off with the British. The two first were pilots. (b)

Old Fort, or Russell's Garrison, up where Thacher's ship yard was 2-3 the way to head of river—fort opposite was on the Pardon Sanford lot.

John Hathaway, 85 in November, 1839, lived in New Bedford since a boy. He was an apprentice to Thomas Hathaway, a boat builder who lived on the Nash farm, afterwards moved down town and lived in James Davis' house whilst building the Gideon Howland house. Made whale boats for Joseph Rotch. I was whaling summer before the war and arrived home in sloop about 75 tons, the fall before the war was declared. Sloop Friendship, Capt. William Claggon. Seth Russell, Daniel Smith, William Claggon, Joseph Rotch, Joseph Russell, carried on whaling, brought blubber in in scuttled hogsheads, I enlisted in Capt Thomas Kempton's (afterwards colonel) company volunteers and went to Boston in May, 1775. Stayed there 8 months. Then came home, joined militia 3 months and served in Boston February, March and April, 1776, under Capt. Benjamin Dillingham of Acushnet. Went on board Privateer brig Rising Empire, 16 carriage guns (States vessel) built in Fairhaven. Was in her 4 months, she was in commission but 2 months. She would not sail. Richard Welden, a Vineyard man, commanded her, took no prizes in her. In fall of 1776 enlisted on board of the sloop Broom, Capt. Welden (the same as above). Was out only 11 days and took 3 prizes and brought them in here, one ship and two brigs, loaded with sugar, wine and mahogany, right from Jamaica, think these vessels were all burnt. Took one brig three days out and the other two vessels five days

(b) The Rushforth house is in Padanaram, next south of the southeast corner of Elm and Prospect streets.

out, which was Sunday morning, no gun fired. Broom had 60 men, 70 or 80 tons. Afterwards the same fall, went on board sloop Sally, 115 tons, of 10 guns and 60 men. Francis Broom, master of Connecticut, owned by Broom & Sears of Connecticut, same as owned the Broom. Was on board the Sally from November, 1776, to February, 1777, cruising all the time; took two prizes, one brig and one schooner fisherman which was sent in somewhere to the east, had no engagement. During the cruise fell in with ship and convoy (of 5 sails in sight) she was a ship and the 5 sails escaped. We fought her 1½ hours, had no one hurt. He hulled us, shot lodged in blankets in forecandle. We hauled off to stop leak and she made sail for her convoy. We afterwards went into Bay of Biscay and dogged a ship in night and got close to 64 gun ship, 2 decker, called None Such. We didn't think in the night she was a man-of-war. We made her in the night. She fired upon us from sunrise till 8 o'clock and when her shot nearly reached us we gave ourselves up. She carried us into Plymouth and I was a prisoner two years and three months in mill prison at a place close by Plymouth, was afterwards at Howland's Ferry.

Dwelling Houses Burnt.

Benjamin Taber.....	2
Leonard Jarvis.....	1
J. Lowden.....	1
J. Gerrish.....	1
W. Claggern.....	1
V. Childs.....	1
Jos. Rotch.....	1
Jos. Rotch, Jr.....	1
Jos. Russell.....	1
	<hr/>
	10

Shops, Etc.

Isaac Howland's	
Distill-house	1
Cooper's shop.....	1
Ware houses.....	3
Jos. Russell's	

Barn	1
Shop	1
Church's shop (shoe).....	1
J. R. S.	
Store	1
Ware house (old).....	2
2 shops, small.....	2
Candlehouse	1
L. Kempton.....	1
	<hr/>
	15
Rotch & Jarvis.....	15
Shop	1
Warehouse	2
Jos. Rotch	
Barn	1
Chaise house.....	1
	<hr/>
	20

Rope Walk and 1 house
A. Smith blacksmith shop.
Benjamin Taber's shop.

Ships Burnt, Sept. 1778 by the British Troops.

Ship Harriet.	
Ship Mellish (Continental).	
Ship Fanny French Prize.	
Ship Heron.	
Ship Leppard.	
Ship Spaniard.	
Ship Caesar.	
Barque Nanny.	
Snow, Simeon.	
Brig Sally (Continental).	
Brig Rosin.	
Brig Sally (Fish).	
Schooner Adventure.	
Schooner Loyalty (Continental).	
Sloop Nelly.	
Sloop Fly (Fish).	
Sloop, Capt. Lawrence.	
Schooner Defiance.	
Schooner, Capt. Jenney.	
Brig No Duty on Tea.	
Schooner Sally (Hornet's Prize).	
Sloop Bowers.	
Sloop Sally, 12 guns.	
Brig Ritchie.	
Brig Dove.	
Brig Holland.	
Sloop Joseph R.	
Sloop Roxiron.	
Sloop Pilot Fish.	
Brig Sally.	
Sloop Retallation.	
Sloop J. Browa's.	
Schooner Eastward.	

Old Buildings in New Bedford

Described by Henry Howland Crapo

On the northwest corner of Union and Sixth streets was a house owned and occupied by **Caleb Greene**, the most westerly one at the time, it being the present John Bailey house. Greene was an apothecary and occupied one of the stores in the building which was burnt on the corner of Union and Water streets, near the present shop of E. Thornton, Jr. He was the son-in-law of Joseph Russell, the first man in the place. His family averaged 21 persons.

A house owned and occupied by **Humphrey Howland**, situate next east of the last, and being the house now belonging to Wm. Howland, 2d, and his mother. He was the son of Isaac Howland, Sr., and the brother of the late Isaac Howland, Jr. He was a merchant, tended store occasionally—worked in the candleworks some, etc. He was rich.

A brick house, owned and occupied by Isaac Howland, Sr., standing next east of the last and where Cheapside block now is. He was a merchant and had two sloops out whaling at the commencement of the war.

A house occupied by **Richard Bentley**, a Scotchman, being the present Wm. Tobey house on the Northwest corner of Union and Purchase streets. He owned a little schooner and followed coasting along shore in her.

A house owned and occupied by **Stephen Potter**, the husband of Lydia Potter, now living on Kempton street, stood (a) next west of the last and directly opposite the Eagle Hotel. It was one story and very old at the time. This house was moved to Kempton street, No. 152, and called the Harper House. Potter was a journeyman blacksmith.

A house built by **Elihu Gifford**, father of the present Abraham Gifford, standing west of the preceding. Elihu Gifford sold it. Don't know who lived in it—it is the Jeremiah Mayhew house, now standing (b).

A house owned and occupied by **Barney Russell**, son of Joseph, standing on the north east corner of Union

and Purchase, occupying the present site of the Dr. Reed house. This is the house now owned by Edward Stetson, on Purchase street, having been moved there. Barney Russell was a merchant. He had three or four sloops whaling and several West India men.

A house owned and occupied by **Joseph Rotch**, and now occupied by **Hannah Case** (c).

It was the first house he built after coming from Nantucket. He was the grandfather of the present Wm. Rotch, Jr., and died in this house. Before moving here he examined the depth of water in the harbor, etc. He was a shoemaker by trade, but never carried it on here. After the village was burnt he moved to Nantucket, but returned again at the close of the war.

A house occupied by **Avery Parker**, as a public house, on the north east corner of Bethel and Union streets, being the same in which Snell's fruit shop now is. He was the grandfather of the present Elisha Parker, was a house wright by trade and kept a public house in this building during the war.

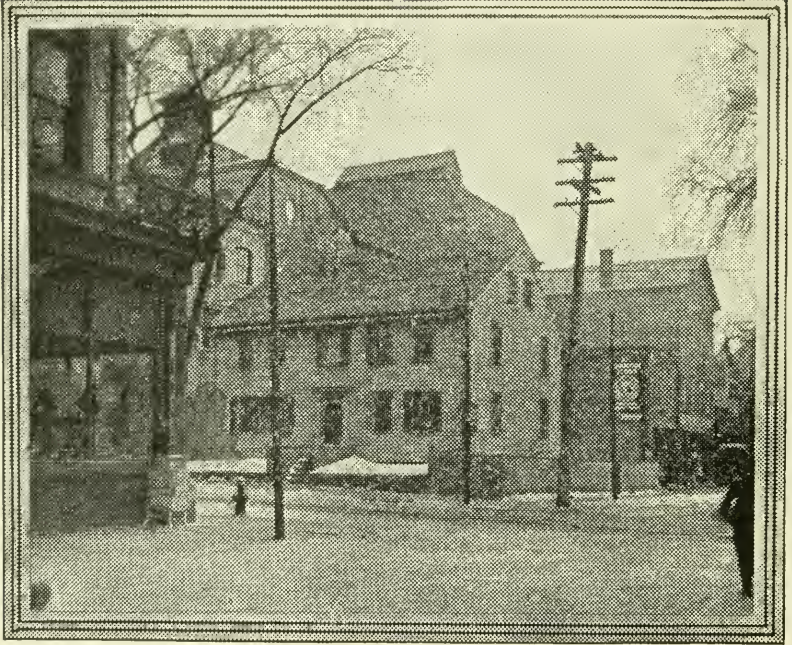
A two story store standing on the four corners where Allen Kelly now keeps. It was occupied as a variety store—groceries, dry goods, etc., and was owned by Seth Russell, senior. It was the same building recently standing on Whittemore lot, near his soap works, and now moved south. (The Russell store stood on the northwest corner of Water and Union streets.)

A long store one and one-half stories high, fronting west and occupied by Joseph Russell, son of Caleb, senior, who subsequently moved to Boston. He was the half brother of Caleb, Jr. (Caleb Sr. was the father of the present Reuben.) The south part of this building was occupied by Joseph Russell, as aforesaid, as a grocery store including rum, etc. The north part by Caleb Greene as an apothecary shop. The part next south of the last by Charles Church, shoemaker. (This building stood on the

(a) On the lot of Eddy building.

(b) The east part of the Masonic building stands on this site.

(c) Stood on the northwest corner of Union and Bethel streets.



THE CALEB GREENE HOUSE.

(See Page 17.)

northeast corner of Water and Union streets) and was burnt by the British.

A gambrel roofed house, standing where the William Russell paint shop now stands on the northwest corner of Union and Orange streets, owned and occupied by Benjamin Taber, Sr., (the father of Benjamin Taber, Jr. who removed from Acushnet to Illinois.) Taber was a boat builder and pump and block maker, and his shop stood in the rear, or to the north of this house. The latter was burnt by the British (d).

The present dwelling house on the southwest corner of Fifth and Union streets was built and occupied by John Williams, a saddle and harness maker. His shop was adjoining the house on the west.

The house now occupied by Elisha W. Kempton, called the West house (e) was built and occupied by Gamaliel Bryant, Sr., grandfather of the present Frederick. He was a housewright. He sold the house afterwards to Captain Elisha West, who moved here from Holmes' Hole.

A house, being a part of the present Eagle Hotel, built by Elihu Gifford, who occupied it at his time, but afterwards sold it to Isaac Howland, Jr. Gifford was a house carpenter by trade, but worked at anything. (Eagle Hotel was on southwest corner of Union and Fourth streets.)

The one-story house now standing on southeast corner of Union and Fourth streets, and east of the Eagle Hotel, owned and occupied by John Atkins, until his death. He was a cooper by trade, but did not carry it on since I can remember; he followed the seas. He was the son-in-law of Caleb Russell, Senior, and the husband of Peace Akins, whom Gilbert attempted to carry from Joseph Russell's, etc.

The house now standing on the southwest corner of Union and Third streets, the basement being now occupied by Noah Clark as a grocery, was occupied and owned by Daniel Ricketson, father of the present Joseph. He was a cooper by trade, and married the eldest daughter of Joseph Russell.

A house on the southeast corner of Union and Third streets, where Barrows's store now stands, owned and occupied by William Tallman, father of the present William. He was a merchant tailor, and his shop was at the corner of Orange and Centre streets. He owned a farm up north, etc. This house is the west part of the present Calvin B. Brooks house (on south-

west corner of Walnut and Water streets.

A long block of shops, one story high, opposite the Mansion House, and extending eastward along the south side of Union street to First street. They were occupied as a barber's shop, tailor's shop, shoemaker's shop, etc. The whole block was burnt by the British.

The house on the southwest corner of Union and South Water streets, being the Martha Hussey building, was owned and occupied by Elnathan Samson, who was a blacksmith. His shop stood at the west of the house.

A house (now occupied by Robert Taber as a tavern) standing on the southeast corner of Union and South Water streets, built, owned and occupied by Simeon Nash (father of the present Thomas and Simoen), who was a housewright.

A house on the edge of the bank, standing about where Bates & Haskins paint shop is, owned and occupied by William Myricks, who died in it. He was a cooper and the brother of Benjamin, who was drowned in getting up cannon opposite Crow island. They have left no posterity. (It stood on the south side of Union, about 50 feet west of Front.

A house on Third street (the Phillips house, corner of Third and Market square), one story high, built and occupied by Ishmael Tripp, a cooper, and the grandfather of the present Ishmael. It has recently been raised up two stories and repaired.

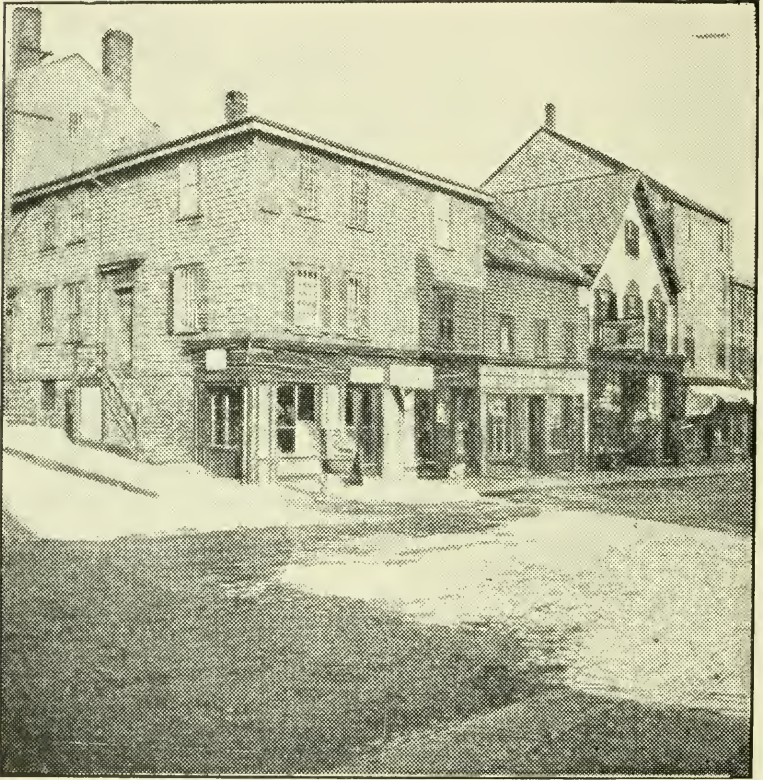
A house in front of the present dwelling house of William Bliss, on Third street, standing within the present lines of Third street. This house was owned by Joseph Rotch, and occupied by Thomas Miles, who was a rope-maker and worked for said Rotch in his rope-walk, the west end of which was near this house. Miles came from Boston. The house was burnt by the British (f).

A house standing on the site of the old market, owned and occupied by Joseph Austin, a hatter, whose shop stood on First street, near Union. This shop was subsequently bought by William Bliss and formed a part of his present dwelling house. (g)

The house was moved south to the John Coggeshall lot and is the same that was recently occupied by Alfred Kendrick being No. 23 South Second street. (h)

A house built and occupied by Silas Sweet, a blacksmith, being the "George Dunham house," and now occupied by Geo. W. Sherman. Sweet sold out and moved to the state of New York. (i)

-
- (d) Orange was the first name of Front street.
 (e) Next west of Ricketson's block.
 (f) William Bliss built the smaller house on the west side of Acushnet avenue, the third south of the corner of Russell street.
 (g) The old market was the central police station of 1908.
 (h) Northwest corner of Second and School.
 (i) Northwest corner Spring and South Second streets.



THE AVERY PARKER HOUSE.

(See Page 17.)

A house built and occupied by James Davis until his death. He was a tanner and currier. This house stood on the east side of South Second street, opposite the Market—had a gambrel roof and is now owned by Bethuel Penniman. (j)

A handsome two story house, built, owned and occupied by Wm. Claggon, master mariner, standing on the west side of Water street, and a little north of the Cory tavern. This house was burnt by the British, and stood at the head of Commercial street, next north of the brick house.

A house standing obliquely with Water street, on the west side thereof, at the head of Commercial street and partly upon the present site of the Cory tavern and partly upon that of the Hill house, two story in front and one in rear. This house was built and occupied by John Louden, formerly of Pembroke. He was a ship-carpenter, and carried on ship building here. His ship yard was on the east side of Water street, northeast from (now) Cole's stable and tavern and between Water street and the present Commercial and Steam Boat wharves. Louden kept a public house here at the time. This house was burnt by the British. Louden moved back to Pembroke soon after the war.

A house built and occupied by David Shepherd, a cooper, standing on South Water street, at the northwest corner of School street, now standing and known by the name of the "Shepherd House." He carried on more business (coopering) than any other person here.

The present Gideon Howland House, three stories high, standing on the hill, southwest corner of South Water and School streets. This house was occupied by Thomas Hathaway, who built it. He was a boat builder subsequently to the landing of the British moved up to the house, now called the "Nash Home." Immediately after the landing of the British it was let by Mr. Hathaway to one Job Anthony for a rendezvous. The officers of the sloop Providence and other armed vessels, quartered in a part of this house when in port. (k)

The house built and occupied by John Howland, the father of the late Resolved Howland, by his first wife, the daughter of David Smith, of Dartmouth, and of John and James Howland by his second wife, the daughter of David Shepherd. He was both a merchant and mariner. This is the house now occupied by Reliance Howland, No. 45 South Water street (and stood on the west side of Water, next south of the corner of School).

The Fitch House, so called, now standing at the south west corner of

Water and Walnut streets. This house was built by Joseph Rotch for Griffin Barney, senior, who occupied it at the time the British troops landed, etc. Griffin Barney, Jr., (the late Griffin Barney) was not married at the time and lived here with his father. The elder Griffin was boss of the rope walks owned by Joseph Rotch (being the only ones then in the place) which were burned and carried on business in the same.

The brick house, now standing on South Water street, between Walnut and Madison streets. This house was built and occupied by Charles Hudson, (a) a mason who moved afterwards to Newport, R. I. He built the house himself.

The James Allen house (d), so called, standing next south of the last. Don't know who built this house (aa)—it is very old. It was occupied by Wally Adams, the father of the present Thomas. Adams did not own it—he occupied it as a boarding house—don't know his occupation.

The "Wm. Russell house," near the foot of School street, built by William Russell, Sr., who always lived in it. He was a cooper and carried on the business a while.

A house built and occupied by John Gerrish, as a public house, standing where Cole's tavern now stands. This was burnt by the British. After the war Gerrish built the present house on the same cellar. He was a pump and block maker (b).

A small gambrel roofed house, built and occupied by John Chaffy, standing on the lot next north of the John Howland house, and on the lot afterwards owned by Alex. Howard. Chaffy was a refiner of oil in the candleworks and the first man here at that business. He stole the art from an Englishman. He worked in the candle-house belonging to Joseph Russell, on Centre street whilst he was in company with Isaac Howland. This was all the candle-house at the time. A short time before the British burnt Russell & Howland had some difficulty and dissolved, Russell occupying the old works on Centre street and Howland building, etc. After the fire Chaffy was a constable. (c)

A long building, 1½ stories high, standing on the site of the present yellow store, Commercial wharf. The west end of this was occupied as a distillery (to make N. E. rum of molasses, etc.) by Isaac Howland, Sr. The east end was occupied by Howland as a candleworks. This building was erected by Isaac Howland after the dissolution of copartnership between him and Joseph Russell and was the second candlehouse in town, etc. This

(j) Next south of southeast corner of Union and Second streets.

(k) The Howland house was built about 1795 after Thomas Hathaway had sold the house that he had erected.

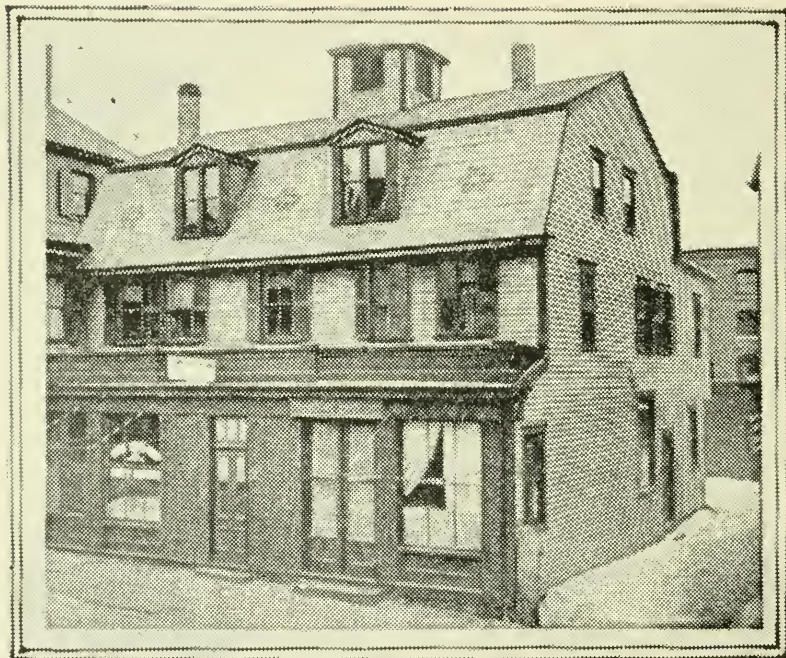
(a) Edward Hudson.

(aa) Moses Grinnell, 1778.

(b) This house stood on east side of Water street at the foot of Spring.

(c) This house stood on the northeast corner of South Water and Commercial streets.

(d) James Allen was a tailor.



THE JAMES DAVIS HOUSE.

(See Page 21.)

building was burnt by the British together with a large quantity of N. E. rum. Russell being a Quaker was opposed to distilleries. (d)

The house next north of Hannah Case's and now occupied by Walter Chapman built and occupied by Charles Church, who was drowned near Crow Island, say 30 years of age. He was a shoemaker. (e)

The house next north of the last and now occupied by the Rev. Mr. Mudge. It was built and occupied by Col. Edward Pope, the collector who subsequently sold it to William Hayden.

A small gambrel roofed house standing upon the present site of the Bethel. It was built by Tim. Ingraham (grand father of the present Robert), who commanded the fort. His son, Timothy, the father of Robert, was a barber and his shop was in the long string of buildings or stores, on the south side of Union street, between Second and First streets. This house was subsequently pulled down.

The house where Prescott's office now is—North Water street—was built by Seth Russell, Sr., and was occupied by widow Doubleday, as already stated. Mr. Russell lived in this house before the war. Upon the commencement of the war, he moved up to his farm, now owned by Timothy G. Coffin. This house was set on fire three different times by the British soldiers, which was as often extinguished, in their presence by the heroic Mrs. D. Upon being asked by them if she were not afraid thus to oppose them, she fearlessly replied that she "never saw a man she was afraid of." This boldness so pleased the soldiers that they desisted from any further attempt to fire the house, which was accordingly saved, together with a large amount of goods then stored in the cellar—liquors. (f)

A house standing next north of the last and separate from it by an alley. This house was one story and very old at the time. Don't know who built it. It was occupied during the war by John Shearman, father of the present Thurston Shearman. It was a long house with the end to the street and its front to the aforesaid alley or court. John Shearman was a blacksmith. The house was called "the old Seth Russell house."

A house next north of the last standing where the south part of the William H. Allen brick block now stands. It was built by Daniel Smith, who owned and occupied it. He was a tailor and had a small shop on the north side of "Main street" near where Nathl. Roger's barber's shop now is. This shop was not noted

among the buildings on Union street. It was subsequently pulled down.

A house next north of the last occupying the site of the northerly part of the said William H. Allen brick block. It was built by Abraham Smith, who owned and occupied it. He was a blacksmith and his shop was on the north side of Centre street, a few rods east of Water street. He was the son of Jonathan Smith, living at the "north end" at this time.

A one story, gambrel roofed house, standing at the north end of the present Commercial bank—on the hill. It was built, owned and occupied by Joseph Rotch, who came from the Vineyard. He was a master mariner and was called "Capt. Joseph Rotch." Burnt by British.

A large house 2½ or 3 stories high, standing on the same cellar as the house recently occupied and now owned by William Rotch, Jr. It was built and owned by Joseph Rotch, the first settler. He lived in it after he left his old home, where Harriet Case now lives, as already stated; but at the time of the British landing, he resided, Mr. Gilbert thinks, at Nantucket. The house at this time was occupied by Joseph Austin, a hatter, who carried on the hatting business in a shop on Union street, which now forms a part of William Bliss' house, on Third street. (g)

A house standing on North Water street, on the north side of the lot occupied by the late Samuel Rodman, and near the edge of the bank between this lot and the present Benj. Rodman lot. It was built by James Smith, who occupied it—and was pulled down some 20 years since. Mr. Smith was a cooper and "carried on the business." Some say this is the "oldest house, etc." but Gilbert says the Loudon house is the oldest. James B. Congdon says this house was built by his grand-father, Benj. Taber, etc. (h)

A large, wooden, one story building standing partly where Mark B. Palmer's shop now is, and thence extending easterly to the "Horton Bake House." This was built by Joseph Russell and occupied as a candle-house by him and Isaac Howland, who were in company during the commencement of the war. But having some little difficulty they dissolved, upon which Isaac built the other, which he had occupied as a distillery and candleworks, but a short time when it was burnt by the British as before stated. This was the first candle works in town, and was occupied by Jos. Russell after the dissolution of copartnership. (i)

A cooper's shop stood at the southeast corner of the last and belonged to Joseph Russell.

(d) The stone block on north side of Commercial street is on the above site.

(e) The Case house stood on the northwest corner of Union and Bethel.

(f) At this date Judge Prescott's office was on the west side of North Water street next to the corner of Union.

(g) The Rotch house stood on the southwest corner of Water and William streets. It is now the Mariners' Home on Bethel street, presented to the Port Society by Mrs. James Arnold, daughter of William Rotch, Jr., in 1851, and moved to its present location.

(h) The Rodman house stood on the northwest corner of Water and William streets.

(i) It was located on the south side of Centre street half way between Water and Front.



THE GEORGE EAST HOUSE.

(See Page 25.)

A boat builder's shop, standing upon the present site of the store now occupied by Daniel Perry, extending from the house on the corner north-erly to where Joseph Taber's shop now stands. It was a long building set in the bank two stories in front and one in rear. The first story was occupied as a pump and block maker's shop, and the second story as a boat-builder's shop, which was long enough to set up three boats in a string. The whole was carried on by Benj. Taber, Sr., who lived in the house adjoining on the corner where the paint shop now stands. It was located on the west side of Front next north of the corner of Union. (j)

A two story wooden store, standing on the present corner of Orange and Centre streets, and where the William Tallman brick store now is. It was built by William Tallman, Sr., and occupied by him as a grocery store in the first story, and as a merchant tailor's store in the second story.

A store standing east of the last and where Orange street now runs, built and occupied by Joseph Russell. The front was two stories and the rear one. It stood into the bank of rock. The first story was occupied as a grocery and the second as a dry-goods store, and the whole was carried on by his son, Gilbert. This was burnt—goods principally saved. Some powder having been left it blew up with a great report. No one hurt.

The "Try works," a building one story high—a sort of shed, etc., stood in front of the Joseph Russell house and nearly at the intersection of the present Orange and Centre streets, leaving a pas-way between it and the last. This belonged to Joseph Russell and was used for trying out blubber, which was "brought in", in skuttled hogsheads, in small vessels. Russell was the only person who carried on the whaling business before the war.

Think Russell had no vessel south of the Gulf Stream before the war. Try works burnt by British.

The Joseph Rotch store stood somewhere, Mr. Gilbert thinks, near the east end of the present Andrew Robeson's candle works—but he cannot say exactly where. Joseph Rotch owned several vessels. Store burnt by the British. (a)

The present Silas Kempton house, at southwest corner of North Second and Elm streets. It then stood in the pasture, or meadow. It was built and occupied by his father, Manassah Kempton, who was a shipwright.

A house standing on the present High street, and a little to the west of the late Benjamin Kempton house at the corner of High and North Sec-

ond street. This was an old one-story house and was built by Benj. Kempton, senior, father of the late Benjamin Kempton. He was a caulker. This was one of the Asa Smith buildings of Ark memory—that is, it was moved east of William Ellis's house and burnt with the Ark. The Ark was the merchant brig, Indian Chief.

House owned, occupied and built by Benjamin Butler, standing on the east side of Clarks Neck. Only house on the Point. Same house which Judah Butler now lives in, and Benjamin was the father of Judah and he was a cooper. (b)

A house standing at the present foot of Mill street on Ray street, east side, two-story house. Built by George East, who occupied it at that time and until his death. He was a mason and came from Rhode Island. (c)

House standing where Third street now runs, immediately in front of the house where William Bliss now lives. (d)

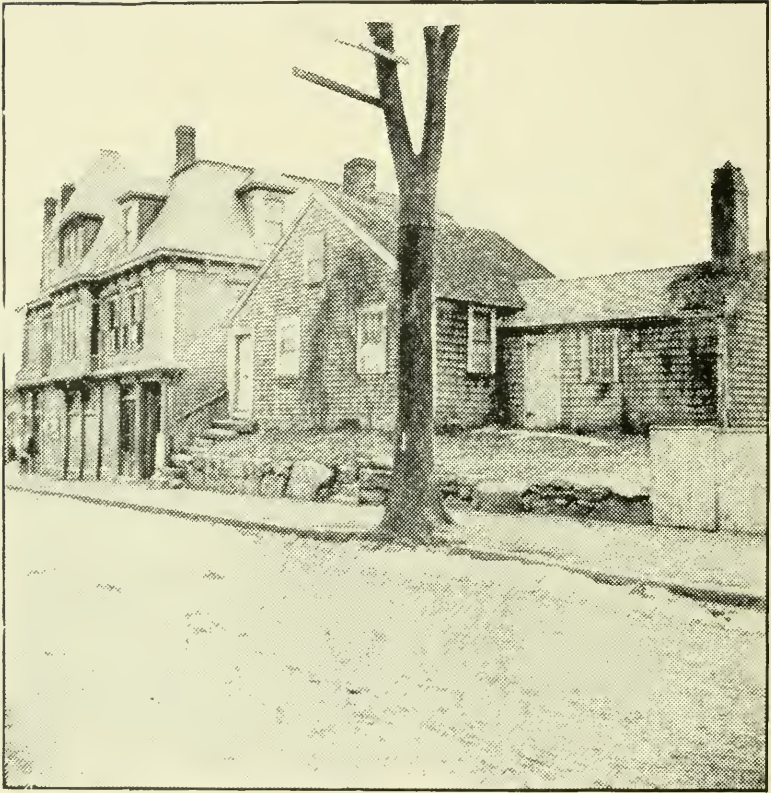
It was two stories and stood near the rope walk which occupied what is now Morgans Lane. The house in which Mr. Bliss now lives, or a part of it, was a hatter's shop and stood near the "four corners." This was first moved on the cellar of the above house, but subsequently, on the laying out of Third street, moved back to its present site. In this shop John Coggeshall, Caleb Congdon and Cornelius Grinnell learned the hatter's trade. The shingles on the north end of this house were put on before the Revolution.

The long one-story house built, owned and occupied until he died, by Jonathan Smith, stood next south of the present (e) Amos Simmons store on North Second street. He was the grandfather of Asa Smith. He was a blacksmith and his shop stood south of his house and where Jacob Parker now lives. This house was moved up to Nigger Town and is now cut in two and makes the two William Reed's houses west of Dudleys. (f)

The two-story house corner of North Second and North street, now occupied by Amos Simmons. This was built, owned and occupied by Jonathan Russell, a cooper, who carried on cooping in the cellar. He was the brother of old William Russell. They came from Nantucket. (House now standing on northeast corner.)

A one-story house built by George Glaggon, a shipwright, standing right east of the last house, fronting to the west. It is a part of the present house now standing there (the southwest part), now belonging to Andrew Robeson. This gentleman was a colonel in the Revolutionary Continental army. After the war he was employed as

- (j) Front street was originally named Orange. Joseph Taber's shop is the stone building on the west side of Front street at the corner of Rose alley.
 (a) The Robeson candle works was the stone building on east side of Water street corner of Rodman street.
 (b) Standing on the south side of Butler street now East French avenue.
 (c) Ray street is now Acushnet avenue.
 (d) The third house on the west side of Acushnet avenue south of Russell street.
 (e) This stood near North street.
 (f) This was Chepachet.



THE JAMES ALLEN HOUSE.

(See Page 27.)

head boss of the yard to build the frigate Constitution and for that purpose moved his whole family to Boston. He subsequently moved back again and after moved to Rehoboth. Peter Lewis's wife of this town was his daughter. Building the Constitution spoilt him.

A house now belonging to and occupied by Susan Maxfield, standing on the northwest corner of North Second and North streets. It was built by Patrick Maxfield, the son of Timothy Maxfield, Sr., who lived in Dartmouth. Patrick was a master mariner and uncle of the present Humphrey Maxfield. He has no posterity.

A house on southwest corner of North Second and Maxfield streets, the present Humphrey Maxfield house. It was built by Zadoc Maxfield, who owned and occupied it. He was a cooper and worked in under part of it, where his son did. Humphrey was his youngest son.

A one-story house on southwest corner of Ray and North streets, now owned and occupied by James Bates. This was built, owned and occupied by Jabez Hammond, Sr. He was a cooper and worked in cellar or basement part of it. He was father to John Gilbert's wife and came from Mattapoisset. Old John Chace's wife was this man's sister, making John Gilbert's wife own cousin to my grandmother.

A one-story house on the west side of Ray street, now standing and occupied by Asa Dillingham, (on the northwest corner of Ray and Maxfield.) Don't know who built it. James Chandler owned and occupied it. He was an Englishman. He was the grandfather of Thomas R. Chandler, who lived with William Rotch. He was a shoemaker and worked in basement. He was a soldier during the war.

A small house now standing on Ray street and next north of the last. It was built, owned and occupied by Thomas West, a very old man at the time and did not work. Think he was the grandfather of John P. West.

A small one-story house standing west of the last (being the house on Purchase street below the bank). It was built by Simeon Price, Sr., father of the present Simeon. He lived in it and owned it. He was a cooper, I think. (1)

A two-story house in front and one-story in rear, on southeast corner County and Cove streets, fronting south and standing on the same cellar as the present Cove House. Was built by Benjamin Allen, grandfather of the present Humphrey Allen. He was a farmer. This house was afterwards pulled down.

The present Timothy Akin's house. This was built, owned and occupied by Caleb Russell, Jr., the father of Reuben. He was a cooper, but followed farming during the war. (It stood on northwest corner County and Rockland streets.)

The house west of the Seth Russell new house and now occupied by Ichabod Coggeshall, was built, occupied and owned by old Caleb Russell. He was a farmer. (It was on the northwest corner County and Washington streets.)

A house on the corner of County and Allen, the present Ezekiel Tripp house. This was built, owned and occupied by James Allen, a farmer called "Lazy Jim," father of Abram and John. (It was opposite the Methodist church.)

A small shop standing on the corner of South Second and Union streets, where William Tallman's house now is. It was a dry goods store and occupied by them. Gilbert thinks it not here till after the fire. This shop formerly stood at the Tallman farm, was moved down here and afterwards moved back to the farm, and thence moved to east side Ray street, where the dye establishment now is, and was then torn down and burnt up.

A house standing on west side County street and near the present residence of Joseph Grinnell. It was two stories and was built and owned by Jonathan Smith, who lived on North Second street, as above stated. Don't know who lived in it. (g)

An old house standing near where William R. Rotch's house now is, two stories in front and one in rear, fronting south. John Akins occupied it. He was a cooper, but followed the seas,—master. The house belonged to Joseph Russell and was built by his father, whose name I think was Joseph and who was not living during the war. This was his homestead, one of the very oldest houses here. (h)

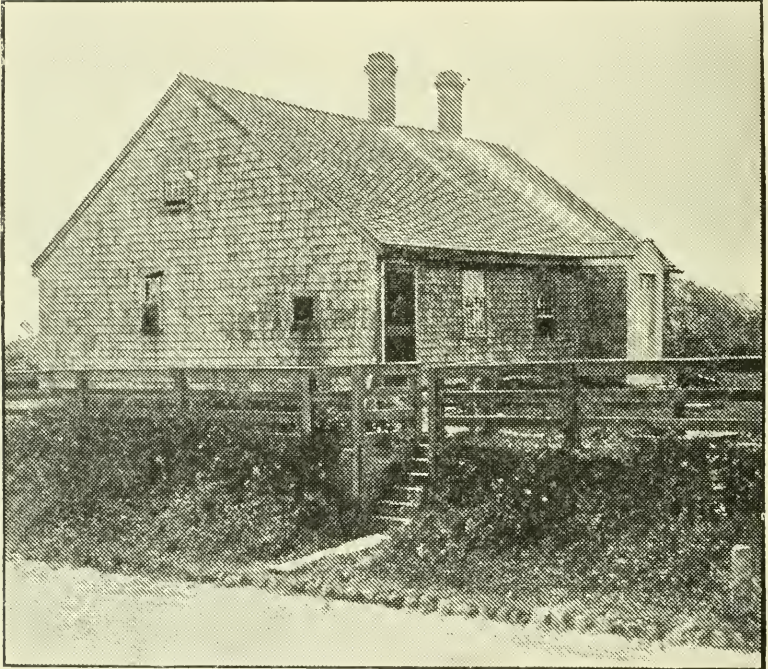
The house of Joseph Russell stood southeast of Charles W. Morgan's on the corner of County and Morgan streets, and is now owned by William Read, who moved it, as before stated. It was built by Colonel Samuel Willis, a colonel in the French war, who was the father of Ebenezer, who lived by John A. Parker's present house. The son Ebenezer was a major in the militia in the first of the war. He was uncle to Pamela Willis, now living, who was the daughter of Jireh Willis.

The Russell house was the headquarters of all gentlemen and troops during the war. There was no other suitable house for gentlemen to put up at. There were in the place three taverns, but they were rough places.

(1) Demolished this winter, stood on site of new rink.

(g) This was at the head of Russell street.

(h) This stood on west side of County street at head of Walnut street.



THE BENJAMIN BUTLER HOUSE.

(See Page 25.)

A house near Kempton's corner, on west side County street, now occupied by Sylvia Hill, sister of Obed Kempton and married Captain Benjamin Hill, Sr. This house was built, occupied and owned by Eph. Kempton, father of said Sylvia, who died in it. He was a shipwright and a caulker. The house was two stories in front and one in the rear, (and stood on northwest corner Kempton street).

A house standing on the west side of County street and a little north of the David Kempton house, at the head of North street, two stories in front and one in rear. Eph. Kempton, 2nd, owned in and lived in it. He was a farmer. Don't know the connection between him and Eph. Kempton, Sr. He was the father of the present Eph. Kempton.

A house standing on Walden street, two stories in the front, west side stuccoed (think John Burgess lives in it). It was built by Colonel Thomas Kempton, in the Revolutionary army. He occupied it till his death. He served through the war. He was brother to Eph. Kempton, 2nd.

An old house standing a little west of where John Avery Parker's house now stands, large two-story house. It was built by Ebenezer Willis, Sr., the colonel in the French war, and his son Ebenezer occupied it, and kept a public house in it. Probate courts were

held in it. It was burnt during the war, but not by the English. It took fire from an old woman's pipe, a coal falling into some flax. A house was afterwards built by Ebenezer, Jr., on the same spot, which was recently moved onto Purchase street. Ebenezer, Sr. and Jr., were both farmers. Ebenezer, Jr., was a major in the militia in the first part of the war. Think this was the only fire before Abram Russell's.

(Note: There is an error in this account. The first house was built by Colonel Samuel Willis, who died in 1765 and left the north third part of his farm between Franklin and Linden streets to his son Jireh, as suggested in the next paragraph, and the remainder to his son, Major Ebenezer Willis. Neither had any sons.)

A house standing at the crotch of the County road and Perry's Neck road and north of Robeson's new house, called the old Willis house. It was occupied by Jireh Willis, a lawyer, and I think the only lawyer in the place. It was entailed, etc., said Jireh owning a life estate. Think it was built by his father, Ebenezer Willis, Sr. (j)

The Benjamin Rodman farm house on Purchase street, built, owned and occupied by Samuel West, father of Stephen West, the pound-keeper. He was a farmer. (k)

(i) Next south of St. Lawrence church.

(j) His father was Samuel and the house was on the northwest corner of County and Robeson street. Robeson's house was the stone dwelling owned later by Dr. H. M. Dexter.

(k) It stood near the southwest corner of Purchase and Weld streets.

“I wish no other—but such an honest chronicler.”

SHAKSPERE.



OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 24.

Being the proceedings of the Sixth Annual Meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building, Water street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on March 27, 1909, and containing the following reports:

REPORT OF THE DIRECTORS	William Arthur Wing
REPORT OF THE TREASURER	William A. Mackie
REPORT OF THE MUSEUM SECTION	Annie Seabury Wood
REPORT OF THE HISTORICAL RESEARCH SECTION	Henry B. Worth
REPORT OF THE PUBLICATION SECTION	William Arthur Wing
REPORT OF THE PHOTOGRAPH SECTION	William Arthur Wing
REPORT OF THE EDUCATION SECTION	Elizabeth Watson

[NOTE.—The "Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches" will be published by the society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson's Book Store.]

F 77
II 2504



PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SIXTH ANNUAL MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

MARCH 27, 1909.

The sixth annual meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical society was held March 27, at the building of the organization.

The following officers were elected:

President—Edmund Wood.

Vice Presidents—George H. Tripp
Henry B. Worth.

Treasurer—William A. Mackie.

Secretary—William A. Wing.

Directors (for three years)—Mrs. Clement N. Swift, Henry H. Rogers, Ellis L. Howland.

President Wood's address was as follows:

The Old Dartmouth Historical society might, with accuracy, be described as that society which, while devoting itself almost wholly to dead men and dead things, is itself very much alive. The past may be mouldy and the people dusty, yet to us they are full of a lively interest.

The history of this township and the study of the lives and characters of its worthies still continue to attract us, and as we pass on tonight

to another year of the society's life we are impressed not with our accomplishments, but with the smallness of the corner of this great field which we have already tilled.

But we have some good workers among us, who are delving into the unexplored corners of our past with rich results, and we begin to have faith in the old prophecy as it applies to Old Dartmouth—'there is nothing covered which shall not be revealed, neither hid that shall not be known.'

The most notable results of the past year are the revelations contained in that most remarkable collection of historical facts found in the manuscripts of our former townsman, the Hon. Henry H. Crapo. It is impossible to overestimate the value and importance of these new contributions to our knowledge. I will not review them, for you have all read them as they appeared regularly in the columns of our morning newspaper. They had been clearly arranged and annotated by the chairman of our research committee, Mr. Worth.

Other papers, of great interest and value, have been prepared and read at the several meetings during the year, and these all have appeared in the printed bulletins of the society.

We have continued to enjoy our richest life in this new convenient home, which is constantly being ornamented and made more instructive by the enthusiastic work of our museum committee and by the liberal gifts of our members and friends. More and more as time passes individuals come to realize that this is the appropriate and fitting home for their own ancestral treasures. Here they are fittingly displayed, with the names of the donors, and here they are studied, admired and appreciated by hundreds of sympathetic visitors.

It isn't often that a building erected for business offices lends itself so graciously to the uses of new tenants with different aims and purposes. When we entered in upon the enjoyment of this gift we found already erected in the vestibule two marble memorial tablets waiting to be suitably inscribed with appropriate legends. These have lately been prepared, and tonight you have been properly received and guided at our portal.

On one of these tablets the visitor can read:

"On this site in 1803 was erected the building of the Bedford bank, the first financial institution of Bristol county. Here for nearly a century, in the centre of the mercantile and commercial activity of New Bedford, the banking business was conducted."

On the other tablet is the following:

"Old Dartmouth Historical society, incorporated 1903. This building was erected by the National Bank of Commerce, 1884. Donated to the society, 1906."

In the early history of the settlers in this region we can well imagine that living was quite primitive. The struggle with an ungenerous soil and a rigorous climate was real and unremitting and the venturesome voyages in small vessels were full of hardship. It would not be expected in those first 100 years that the arts and sciences would find a footing—or that the softer side of our nature would receive much nourishment. But it is sure that as whaling developed into a leading industry—and as the voyages extended to foreign seas and uncivilized islands the fireside tales of our ancestors were full of romance and the imaginations of the youth were richly fed and sufficiently excited. Soon the commerce which had to follow the world wide demand for the oil, broadened the horizon and gave

abundant mental stimulus to the larger portion of this whole community.

Now were born conditions in which literature and art might find a fitting soil and take root. Whether it matured and flourished or not depended in large measure whether the budding artistic imagination encountered the cooling and quieting winds of Dartmouth Quakerism. Art must then be colorless and the imagination chastened and subdued. No one since ever knew the flaming red buds of poetic and artistic promise born and fostered by the extreme romanticism of family travel and adventure which faded into gray with the maturer example and teaching of friendly environment.

But some found a stimulating atmosphere and landscapes in which nature's brilliant coloring was recognized and admired.

Fairly early in the last century our captains brought home oil portraits of themselves painted abroad and soon we had native talent attempting severe portraiture. It was not long before these local painters felt the stronger and more romantic call of the sea—and of the life of those who go down to it in ships, and we begin to find sketches of the shore and ships, the wharves and the boats.

At last some sailor himself becomes the artist—or the artist goes a voyage for the experience, and then we have a portrayal of the actual excitements of hunting the whale—the chase, the harpooning and the capture. The most spirited illustrations of whaling as a sport, and the most accurate are found among the sometimes crude etchings on whale's teeth. Some of these are remarkable representations, and many valuable specimens can be found in our collections now in this building.

It often happened on ship-board that the member of the crew who developed a talent for drawing became a favored individual who was relieved from standing watch and worked during the day in carving or etching in ivory for the captain—or pricking in india ink a spirited sketch of a whale's dying flurry upon the bared forearm of a mate.

The first local artist who produced finished pictures of actual scenes of whaling was Benjamin Russell of New Bedford. Some of his best pictures have been lithographed and thus given a wide circulation. Some of the most popular of these were entitled "The Chase," "The Capture," "A Ship on the Northwest Coast Cutting in Her Last Right Whale," "Whaling in all its Varieties."

Mr. Wood said that Russell's panorama of a whaling voyage was still in

existence in this city, and expressed the hope that it might be revived for a presentation before the members of the society.

Last year, many years after Benjamin Russell's death, continued the speaker, three of his original finished drawings came into the market and were held at prices which would have delighted and flattered the artist during his life time. One of these pictures has been purchased by W. W. Crapo, and presented to the society. It is one which perhaps has the most interest as a picture to hang in a historical society. The scenes represented by the artist is the burning of the whale ships by the Shenandoah. Sunday we shall have read in this room a paper on the events which led up to the court of the Alabama claims—a

most interesting and exciting chapter in this city's history. Then, with that recounting we shall realize the historical value of this picture—and the true appreciation of its value, and the foresight on its liberal donor.

Benjamin Russell was a good draughtsman and remarkably well informed on the details of the subjects which he painted. He had not much knowledge of technique or of values, but his composition was excellent. His painting of water is never artistic. But he was inspired in his art by the artistic value of the familiar scenes connected with his native city and he has represented with fidelity and talent scenes and events which were unique at the time and which make his work of unusual value to the students of Old Dartmouth history.

Report of the Directors

By William Arthur Wing

The Old Dartmouth Historical society again greets its members at its sixth annual meeting, the third held in its beautiful home.

During the past year your secretary has as usual kept in touch with various other historical societies, ancient and of highest standing, and wishes to express not only his pleasure but gratitude to them for the courtesies and cordial recognition extended to this society, and to him. Our methods have been the subject of hearty commendation and approval in many ways most gratifying—and we, too, have much to learn from them and may well follow in their footsteps in many directions.

There is only one—it hardly can be called unpleasantness, rather an inconvenience—and it seems to obtain in most historical societies—carelessness about paying annual dues (only \$1 a year), and no society offers more attractions than this.

Every membership card contains the legend, prominently placed: "Read this card carefully and keep it as a receipt." If you will only heed this to the letter, you can always tell when your membership money is due, and pay accordingly. Notice in regard to dues is placed on the postal notices of

each quarterly meeting—"lest we forget."

New members are joining, but death claims from our ranks these, whom we shall ever hold—

In Memoriam—Elizabeth Williams Braley, Albion Turner Brownell, Wm. H. Carney, H. Wilder Emerson, Myra Norton Haskins, John Jay Hicks, Dr. Frederic H. Hooper, Frederick N. Gifford, Frederic Sumner Potter, Mrs. Alfred Nye, Helen Howland Prescott (a life member), Eleanor Masters Read, Dr. John Cook Shaw, Hannah Mary Stowe, George Howland Wady, Martha Jefferson Waite (a life member), William Ricketson Wing.

The executive board have met as occasion required. The secretary will always gratefully remember one such meeting so full of kindly fellowship and cordial appreciation of his services. A recent writer has aptly expressed our feelings, in saying: "It is commendable to cherish the home towns among the home-people. If there were shrines at such places we would visit them. There is an urgency to recognize shrines."

Respectfully submitted,

William Arthur Wing,
Secretary.

Report of the Treasurer

By William A. Mackie

The treasurer's report was presented by William A. Mackie, as follows:

"William A. Mackie, treasurer in account, with Old Dartmouth Historical society:

	Dr.	
March 26, 1908.		
To Balance,		\$624.86
Life memberships,		175.00
Annual dues,		705.00
Income, N. B. Lyceum fund,		129.00
Memberships,		57.00
Museum,		125.00
Rebate tax,		50.44
Publications,		22.40
		<hr/>
		\$1,838.70

	Cr.	
By museum,		\$61.40
Salaries,		300.00
Labor,		279.27
Repairs and improvements,		225.37
Current expenses,		464.64
N. B. Inst. for Sav. Life Mem.		175.00
Balance,		383.02
		<hr/>
		\$1,838.70

Respectfully submitted,

WM. A. MACKIE, Treasurer.

Report of the Museum Section

By Annie Seabury Wood

The report of the museum section was presented by Mrs. Anna Seabury Wood, as follows:

The museum section herewith presents its fifth annual report. At the first meeting of the section held during the year just closing we found that we had in our possession a fund which had accrued from entertainments and teas held the previous year amounting approximately to \$140. The existence of this fund made the creation of a new officer necessary, and to fill that office Miss Florence L. Waite was elected treasurer. The greater part of the money has been expended for cases to hold the various exhibits of the society.

We point with especial pride to the cases in the main room, the cost of which was \$150. Of this amount \$75 was paid from the fund of the museum section, \$25 from the fund of the society, and \$50 was contributed by Mr. Oliver F. Brown. We take this occasion to make public acknowledgment of his kindness.

The balance in our treasury at present is extremely small, and it is hoped that it may be substantially increased by an entertainment to be given in the Unitarian chapel on Patriots' Day, the 19th of April. The entertainment is to consist of a series of historic tableaux, which should be of interest to all members of the so-

ciety and to all lovers of Old Dartmouth.

In addition to the regular teas held as usual each month through the winter, the entertainment committee has managed successfully an exhibition of old prints, rare books and book plates, an exhibition of old china and a 'Breton Afternoon,' when Mrs. Clement N. Swift, in Breton costume, read two delightful stories written by Clement N. Swift.

We consider that the work of this committee has always played an important part in arousing and maintaining public interest in the society, and we acknowledge with gratitude the services rendered by the committee for 1908-1909: Miss Mary E. Bradford, Miss Elizabeth H. Swift, Mrs. Clement N. Swift, Mrs. Herbert E. Cushman, Miss Mary K. Taber and Mrs. Edmund Wood. The last of the teas given under their auspices will be held on Saturday, April 3, and Saturday, May 1.

During the year the value of the museum itself has been increased by many notable acquisitions, the enumeration of which would be well-nigh impossible. The largest collection which has been added is one brought from the Philippines and loaned by Dr. Frederick A. Washburn. We are promised for the coming year the loan of a very good Alaskan collec-

tion, which, in addition to the one we have already, should make our Alaskan room one of the best-equipped in the museum.

We congratulate ourselves that more portraits are finding their way to us, and pictures, some of them of historic interest and some the work of famous Old Dartmouth artists. Now and then pieces of rare old china are entrusted to our keeping, and bits of ivory, carved into curious shapes and polished by the skillful fingers of dead and forgotten seamen, are gathered in for us by our chairman, Frank Wood, or by Nathan C. Hathaway, who are always awake to their beauty.

Photographs and colonial relics arouse the especial enthusiasm of William A. Wing, and his aid in arranging and caring for all our exhibits

is simply invaluable. And so we have grown into a museum to love and be proud of—a museum which adds dignity to our city of New Bedford.

We have many ambitions for the coming years, some of them perhaps never to be realized; but two things it is safe to say here we are promising ourselves to do—one, to make our whaling exhibit as concise and complete as possible; the other, so to arrange and mark it as to make it of the greatest possible benefit in an educational way to our own people and to the many visitors, for whom it is the thing of all others in our museum which they most desire to see."

Respectfully submitted,

Annie Seabury Wood,
Chairman.

Report of the Historical Research Section

By Henry B. Worth

The method of many people in preparing historical works is to consult all possible books, make copious extracts therefrom, and then interview all old people and pour together the combined results and present the aggregation as history. Compilations from printed works merely rearrange what is already prepared and add nothing to the store of historical knowledge, and often produce mischievous results by copying the errors of former writers and perpetuating these mistakes.

The testimony of old persons as to facts which have come within the range of their observation comprise an important contribution to the amount of historical knowledge and should not be under-estimated. A notable example is a recent publication of this society of the labors of Henry H. Crapo, but the value of that work was largely due to the skilful manner in which the witnesses were interrogated and the results of their interviews stated. If the same men had been questioned by a less careful investigator, the results might have had no value. Dr. Leonard W. Bacon once said that he never stated a fact of history unless he had verified it by his own investigation. This remark was quoted to him a few months

before his death and his characteristic reply is worth preserving: 'Yes, that is a very good rule if you don't want to be contradicted.'

But original sources vary according to the subject under investigation. It may be an old Bible, a gravestone, an account book, letter, log-book, report, public record, will or deed. The cardinal rule followed by the courts of law is that written statements to be entitled to credit should be made at the time of the event by some person acquainted with the facts with no purpose to mislead or deceive. This involves several requirements, and one of the most important is that the individual shall be known. Unsigned statements are always open to the objection that there is no way to judge of their accuracy by knowing the author. This is one of the defects in a very highly respected class of records, viz.: entries in old Bibles and inscriptions on tomb-
numerous patriotic and historical societies, like the Mayflower Descendants, Colonial Dames, Sons and Daughters of the Revolution. In some circles it is considered a high honor stones. At the present time there are to gain admission thereto, and so eager are many persons that they will furnish money without limit to obtain

the prize. The temptation has led to the fabrication of pedigrees and genealogies and the production of fictitious evidence to comply with the requirements. It would be entirely possible to place an entry in an old Bible, or to cut some inscription on a tombstone with the expectation that the fraud would not be detected.

In the old cemetery at the Head of the River at the grave of Dr. West is a fine marble stone. The original inscription was no doubt contemporaneous with his death, and is on the face of the stone; but in one of the lower corners near the ground, in recent cutting, will be found the words 'See other side.' On the north side of the stone, also in recent cutting, will be found the statement that one Captain Francis West, the brother of the third Lord Delaware, came from England to Virginia in 1608; he had a son, not named, who had a son Thomas, a physician, who had a son Sackfield, and Samuel West, D. D., was son of Sackfield West of Yarmouth.

It is not the present purpose to state the objections that have been presented to this pedigree, but to call attention to the fact that here is a case where years after the death of Dr. West and the erection of the tablet, some person not known, inspired by a motive not apparent, has placed a modern inscription on the old tablet, and when it is considered that the statements could be preserved in many other ways equally permanent, the query arises as to the object of the person who resorted to this singular performance.

In a burial lot in Freetown near the Acushnet line are some slate stones erected a few years ago, having several names on each; the purpose being to preserve the names of some of the family who might have been buried in that lot; but if in the future the inscriptions on these stones are taken as historic evidence, some troublesome discrepancies might be discovered between them and authentic records. Within a short time a published account has appeared relating to a stone in the Rochester cemetery commemorating the deaths of Elbathan Haskell and his son, Nathan. The facts stated on this stone are in serious conflict with contemporary records, and somewhere there is a mistake. The most reasonable explanation is that the confusion was occasioned by the person who erected the gravestone, who may have had information of the facts stated. Thus the opportunities for fraud, as well as mistake, are much greater than might be supposed, and the most stringent proofs are now being insisted upon by

the above-mentioned societies before applications are accepted. These requirements are fully met in the records of wills and deeds and for the purpose of local history they furnish the surest basis.

Ultimately all history is only a record of the doings of mankind. Land is the most important thing to men outside of themselves; and consequently history is practically what men have done concerning land. All wars have their origin, progress and termination over questions of territory. Every conflict between nations relates to, or involves land, and is determined by the peculiarity of the region over which the war is fought. Land transactions, therefore, in full and complete details, comprise the whole of the world's history, and form the basis of all that is real and certain in historical information, not only concerning states but equally true of individuals. In the first place every document is signed by some person interested, and in the regular course of events is presented to a public official for record, and takes its place among other documents of that date as a usual and regular proceeding.

This kind of historical evidence becomes of the greatest value in this region because of the dominant control of the Society of Friends during the first two centuries after its settlement. In relation to religion, education, politics and social customs this sect firmly impressed its principles on this community. In 1851, for the first time, the New England yearly meeting permitted memorial tablets to be placed in burial places. Before that date none were allowed in any Quaker cemetery, and so subservient were the other inhabitants of Dartmouth, not affiliated with the Friends' meeting, to the principles of that society that there have not been found west of the Acushnet river as many as ten memorial tablets bearing a date earlier than 1800. The adoption of this same principle led to another result: the records of Dartmouth, of marriages, births and deaths are as meagre as in any town in the state. It was considered an exhibition of vanity to preserve the history of individuals in either of these ways; therefore the forefathers of Dartmouth lie in unknown and unmarked graves, and the information generally presented in stone has been irretrievably lost.

In colonial days it was customary for each man to own his own homestead and this was transferred, at or before his death, to the members of his family. So the land records will often chronicle numerous facts as to

what land was his home, who was his wife, and what were the names of the members of his family. In all such matters the fullest credit may be given to the statements in deeds and wills.

A few extracts selected from land transfers, relating to the village of Padanaram, will serve as illustrations: In a deed in 1816 from Patience Smalley mention is made of the schoolhouse lot, the record of which cannot be found, but from this deed, and from those of surrounding tracts it is possible to prove that as early as 1806 a schoolhouse stood near the corner of School and High streets. A deed from John Wing in 1743 establishes the fact that James Akin had a tan-house about 400 feet east of the bridge.

The name "Padanaram" was first used in a deed from David Thatcher, in April, 1818. In 1800, John Ricketson who owned the Neck, divided his estate between his sons, Henry and Clark, and refers to his brother, Benjamin. The division of the land of Elihu Akin in 1796 indicates that his five sons were Ebenezer, John, Jacob, Joseph and Abraham.

In 1818, Laban Thatcher conveyed to William Thatcher, Sylvanus Bartlett and George Parker, deacons of the Congregational church, land for a meeting house. The Baptist church stands upon a lot purchased in 1830, from Reuben and Anna Russell by the church committee, consisting of Anthony and Archelaus Baker. The church at the Head of Apponegansett started in 1838, when the lot was purchased by the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal church, Jireh Sherman, Stephen Sherman, Ezra Baker, Richard Macomber, Elihu Gifford, Barker Cushman and Stephen Brownell. The location of the famous Garrison lot on the Russell farm, can be determined from ancient deeds.

Abraham Sherman, who died in 1772, was a trader and proprietor of a store at the head of Apponegansett, and in the inventory of his estate is

the following item: 'A gun which is said once killed an Indian across Apponegansett river from ye old Castle on Russell's land to Heathen Neck.' Heath's Neck, as it is later called, is the location of the dwelling of the late Dr. Gordon, and in recent years of Captain Charles Schultz.

The land records of Plymouth prove that the John Alden house in Duxbury was not built in 1653 as alleged, but in 1720.

One of the most satisfactory improvements in process of completion is the new Registry of Deeds in New Bedford. This contains 350 large volumes of land transfers relating to Old Dartmouth since the formation of Bristol county, in 1686. These are accessible by the assistance of numerous volumes of maps and plans and carefully prepared indexes. Since the institution of this registry, in 1837, the quarters devoted to its use have been a few rooms in the Bristol county court house. While the repository has been eminently safe, yet it has not been adequate to the purpose of consulting these records. The present crowded rooms during the coming year will be abandoned, and the records placed in a registry equipped with modern conveniences, at the corner of William and Sixth streets, where an ample opportunity will be afforded every investigator to examine this library of historical information.

It has been the aim and purpose of the research department of this society to have its publications, as far as possible, in accord with the evidence from land records. It frequently offends people when some long standing tradition, some cherished bit of folk-lore, or some romantic story is rejected as fictitious; and such disappointments will continue until the difference between fact and fancy and the place and value of each is justly appreciated.

Respectfully submitted,
Henry B. Worth,
Chairman.

Report of the Publication Section

By William Arthur Wing

It was the Gentle Reader who asked, "Can it be true that the quarterly publications of the Old Dartmouth Historical society are only 10 cents each?" It is true, Gentle Reader. They are obtainable at Hutchinson's or of the secretary at the building of the society.

Said the Gentle Reader, "They have such interesting illustrations and subject matter unobtainable elsewhere. Why, I know of people who have found genealogical and revolutionary clues that enabled them to join most delightful societies. Of course, I know," said the Gentle Reader, "that they do not always come out exactly quarterly because you wait and combine them with other interesting and valuable papers. Now, to the proceedings of last year's annual meeting was added that fine article on Smith Mills, by Henry B. Worth,

and though that delays them somewhat, it makes the number so much more valuable, and it takes, of course, much time to see to the proofs, the illustrating, the arrangement and the like." The Gentle Reader is so discerning!

And there is such a range of subjects—Whaling, Friends, biographical, genealogical, geological, colonial and miscellaneous.

"I shall take a complete set (with this number 24 in all)," said the Gentle Reader, "for you can have them nicely bound for less than a dollar."

Would there were more Gentle Readers!

Hopefully submitted,

William Arthur Wing,
Chairman.

Report of the Photograph Section

By William Arthur Wing

Old Dartmouth has ever had her share of famous descendants. Some years since, when Mrs. Nicholas Longworth, descendant of Hathaway Wilcox and Smith families, was married, Old Dartmouth showed a fine Quaker complacency—it was not the first time one of her daughters, likewise the daughter of a president, had been married in the White House during her father's administration. Miss Nellie Grant, the daughter of President U. S. Grant, had done the same thing, and she and her father were both descendants of the Delano Family of Old Dartmouth.

Mrs. Russell Sage, generously dispensing her benefactions throughout the country, has perhaps an added local interest in her good doing, in that her ancestors were of Old Dartmouth's Slocum family.

The artist Whistler's fondness for his half-sister, Lady Seymour-Haden—that delightful lady, whom he has pictured, well known for her interests and accomplishments in art and music—is a daughter of Old Dartmouth, with ancestors in its Delano, Poppe and Cooke Families.

That notable figure in Chicago and the middle west, the late Potter

Palmer, was a descendant of the Potter, Ricketson and Russell families; and a descendant of the Cooke, Hathaway, Russell and Howland families. Governor Henry Howland Crapo, who held that office in Michigan during the trying times of the late unpleasantness, and whose love and interest for Old Dartmouth and its history, has been shown by his manuscript, now published by this society through the kindness of his son, Hon. William W. Crapo, our first president.

Our photograph-room is a thing unique among historical societies, who heartily commend it. There we wish to gather and present portraits of her sons and daughters. For the history of a place is the history of its people! Not only do we honor those who found fame and favor in the great world, but those who lived the "simple life" within their walls; those who 'went down to the sea in ships' and those who kept the hearth-fire burning and awaited their return; those who served their township, their colony and country and their God.

Respectfully submitted,

William Arthur Wing,
Chairman.

Education Section

By Elizabeth Watson

According to our constitution, the special province of the education section is to create and foster an interest in local history among the school children of Old Dartmouth. Or, in a broader sense, to so educate and inspire the younger generation that the work which we have begun may be continued with fidelity and enthusiasm. For the life of this society, in the years to come, depends entirely upon the children of today.

This committee, as the first step in its work, has invited certain classes in the public schools of New Bedford to visit the museum. The superintendent of schools has heartily cooperated in the plan, and the appreciation of teachers and pupils has been most sincere and gratifying.

We have entertained the ninth grades of the Fifth street, Knowlton and Middle street schools. In each case the teacher and principal accompanied the class. Members of the senior class of the High school, with Mr. Butler and Mr. Sargent, have also been our guests. Swain School students, the Young Men's club of the Union for Good Works, and a few from the North End Guild, have enjoyed our hospitality.

No formal plan of entertainment has been adopted. Members of the committee have been in attendance to answer questions or tell the story of the various collections. We have been most kindly assisted by Mrs. Horace Smith, whose knowledge of the Arctic and Alaskan exhibit added much to

the pleasure of the visitors. Mr. Wood, of the museum section, has shown us many favors, and Mr. Wing's assistance has been, as it always is—invaluable.

Perhaps the most popular place has been the whaling room, where Capt. Geo. O. Baker has walked the deck, and undismayed by the sea of upturned faces on every side, has dispensed reliable information and doubtful "yarns" with equal facility.

"These youthful guests of ours have carried into hundreds of homes the news of what we are doing here, and the echoes of their enthusiastic reports have come back to us in many different ways. Surely a wider knowledge of our objects and ambitions must slowly, but none the less surely, beget a wider and permanent interest in the society.

Although various plans for enlarging the work of the section are in contemplation, provided the committee is reappointed. The immediate future will be devoted to receiving school children at the rooms; extending the invitation to the schools of all the towns of Old Dartmouth when satisfactory arrangements can be made.

Having reported progress and outlined its platform, the committee respectfully submits its report and its fate to the hands of its friends.

Respectfully submitted,

Elizabeth Watson,
Chairman.

OLD HYMN CALLED DARTMOUTH.

Bless'd are the humble souls that see
Their emptiness and poverty ;
Treasures of grace to them are given
And crowns of joy laid up in Heaven.

Bless'd are the men of broken heart,
Who mourn for sin with inward smart,
The blood of Christ divinely flows,
A healing balm for all their woes.

—*Belknap.*



OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 25

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-fourth Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on 30 June, 1909.

THE HOMESTEADS AT APPONEGANSETT
BEFORE 1710.

Henry B. Worth.

FIVE JOHNS OF OLD DARTMOUTH.

William A. Wing.

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
TWENTY-FOURTH MEETING
OF THE
OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY
IN THEIR BUILDING
WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD
MASSACHUSETTS
30 JUNE, 1909

President Edmund Wood, in his remarks at the opening of the meeting, paid a tribute to the work of the Education Section, in charge of Miss Watson. He said that during the last few months Miss Watson had had all the higher grammar grades of the public schools, and the pupils of the local and Fairhaven High Schools, in the rooms, by classes, and given them afternoons of interesting amusement and study. President Wood expressed the opinion that this was a very intelligent use of the society's facilities in an educative way among the younger people of the city.

The president also stated that the secretary of the society had had the inspiration of commemorating the early settlers of Old Dartmouth by setting brass tablets into the panels of the entrance to the main room, and that several of the members had already adopted the suggestion by installing tablets to commemorate ancestors. The secretary, he said, had volunteered to assist members desirous of contributing panels, by preparing inscriptions that could be etched in the brasses. The cost of the tablets will be from \$5 up, according to the length of the inscription.

Alluding to the death of Henry H. Rogers, who was a member of the

board of directors, President Wood said that this community mourned his loss together with the community on the other side of the river.

President Wood then introduced William W. Crapo, who spoke as follows:

The June, 1906, meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical society was held in the Town House at Fairhaven. Henry H. Rogers was present. A day or two later he called at my office and expressed his gratification. He was interested. He commended the purposes of the society and spoke of the earnestness of those who were actively engaged in its work. He inquired about the resources and needs of the society. I told him that its revenue was derived from the annual fee of one dollar paid by each of its five or six hundred members and that with this modest income we had paid for rent and the furnishings of the room necessary for the exhibit of our collections and the other incidental expenses of printing, postage and the like; and that the society had no surplus, neither did it have a deficit. I told him that the lease of the room occupied on Union street expired at the close of the year; that we had outgrown the premises; but had not been able to find suitable accommodations.

I added that, in my opinion, the society had reached a critical point in its history and that its continued efficiency and even its permanency depended upon its having a home of its own. He asked what steps had been taken in this direction. I told him none, except vague talk about location, some favoring the stone mansion on County street constructed by William R. Rodman, others favoring the vacant bank building at the foot of William street, while others preferred the Bank of Commerce building on Water street at the head of Centre street. Mr. Rogers thought a preferable location would be near the municipal centre of the city in the neighborhood of the city hall and public library. I dismissed this idea as reaching out for something unattainable.

A week or two later when we met he said he had been considering the question of location for the Historical society and had reached the conclusion that the preferable place of those named was the bank building on Water street; that it was convenient to the people of Fairhaven and Acushnet and was easy of access by the trolley lines in the city. He remarked that the building was attractive in appearance, was substantial in its construction and that he was familiar with its interior when it was used for banking and office purposes and thought it could be readily adapted for the purposes of the society.

At a still later date he asked me what progress had been made in the matter of a home for the Historical society. I told him that practically nothing had been done, and that so long as there were positive differences of opinion as to location it seemed useless to make any effort. In my judgment I told him a concentration of sentiment as to one location was necessary. He said that perhaps this concentration of sentiment might be obtained by a purchase of the Water street property and its presentation to the society. He had, however, he said, no wish to interfere with or in any way influence the action of the members of the society, but was willing to offer the building in such a way that if it was not agreeable to the society it could occasion no displeasure. He suggested that I act in his behalf in the purchase of the building and he left it discretionary with me as to the price. He stipulated, however, that neither the owners of the building, the members of the society, or the public should know that he was in any way connected with the transaction.

When I had agreed upon terms

with the owners of the building and notified him of the fact, I inquired in what manner he desired to convey the property to the Old Dartmouth Historical society, suggesting that a proper method would be for the grantor, the New England Cotton Yarn company, to deed the property to him and then that he convey it to the society, with such conditions and stipulations concerning its use, occupancy and future disposal as might occur to him. He said in making the gift he did not propose to attach any string to it and that the deed must go directly from the New England Cotton Yarn company to the Old Dartmouth Historical society and that the society should have full power to use it or dispose of it in its discretion. The only stipulation which he made was the one he imposed upon me that he should not be known in any way in connection with the transaction.

Against this withholding of his name I remonstrated. I urged that it would be embarrassing to the members of the society to receive such a munificent gift from an unknown person, since it would preclude them from the expression of their appreciation and gratitude. I further urged that the Old Dartmouth Historical society was organized to chronicle and preserve the record of interesting local events and the transfer of this property being of vital importance to the society and of general interest to the community there would be a strange incongruity in the fact that the society could not tell in what way or by what means it had acquired its premises. After discussion it was arranged that after the death of Mr. Rogers a modest tablet with a simple inscription of the name of the donor might be placed in the building. This, he said, might be a gratification to his children and his grandchildren.

This gift came to the society without solicitation. Neither I nor any other person to my knowledge ever requested or suggested a contribution from Mr. Rogers for this purpose. It was made because he approved the mission of the society, because he was pleased with the work it was doing and desired its continuance, and because of the hope that the society having a home of its own might secure permanency. It was also made because of his affection for his native town of Fairhaven, and Fairhaven is a part of Old Dartmouth.

It may be asked why was Mr. Rogers so insistent in withholding his name? In this instance it was evident that he desired not to antagonize or influence the action of the society on the question of location. He desired that the members of the

society should be free to accept or decline his offer and that this freedom of action would be secured if they were ignorant of the donor. Besides this there was his well-known dislike to any publicity in connection with his gifts. This trait in his character was not artificial. It was part of his nature. It was inborn. It was shown in his numberless acts of private charity and in the bestowal of assistance to many philanthropies and in his larger benefactions. His pleasure was in the giving and not in the notoriety of the gift.

At the entrance of this hall are two tablets. One of them mentions dates of important events in the history of the society and of this building. It tells us that the society was incorporated in 1903 and that this building was erected in 1884 and was donated to the society in 1906. There is a vacant space in which may be placed the words "by Henry H. Rogers." No action need be taken to-

night in this matter. I simply make the suggestion because it is in harmony with the permission granted by him.

Resolve on Gift.

President Wood read the resolve presented by Mr. Crapo, as follows:

"The members of the Old Dartmouth Historical society, having learned from whom came the gift of the land and building owned by it and occupied as its home, it is

"RESOLVED,

"That the directors are hereby requested to place on a tablet within the building the name of Henry H. Rogers, its generous donor, and to take such further action as deemed appropriate in acknowledgment and recognition of the timely and important service which he rendered the society."

The resolve was adopted by unanimous vote.

The Homesteads at Apponegansett Before 1710

By Henry B. Worth

"It was in 1652 that the 'old comers' of Plymouth secured the grant on Buzzards bay. During the early years before the region had received a name, land transfers described the place at 'Cushena, Ponagansett and Coakset.'

"These names were used to denote separate sections which in some deeds were called villages. When the town of Dartmouth was divided in 1787 the region called Coakset became Westport; Cushena was constituted New Bedford, while the central portion retained the ancient name of the town and comprised substantially the section designated by the Indians as Ponagansett. These names later became modified by the prefix 'A,' but the form in the old deeds is probably the nearest to the original and more clearly indicate the meaning of the names. For nearly two centuries the name Aponagansett has been used exclusively in reference to the river west of Padanaram. The meaning of this name has been explained in several ways, and generally upon the theory that it referred to oysters or other shellfish. One author suggested 'the place of the oyster,' and another 'the roasting place.' Neither of these is satisfactory. The etymology of the word seems to be Po-nag-ansett, and this may mean "at the neck extending into the bay."

"The early settlers were governed by several important considerations in selecting their homestead farms. Encompassing them were Indians that might suddenly become hostile. Springs of water often determined the location of a dwelling, while brooks and rivers furnished power essential to operate grist and saw-mills. Desirable land could be found only in scattered locations. It was no doubt thought prudent for mutual defence and protection to group their homesteads as completely as possible, but the geographical situation of the town prevented the development of a centre common in most New England communities. Here was an extensive area, divided by rivers that defied all attempts to collect the inhabitants together in a compact village. It was therefore a necessity that the settlers should be scattered in small clusters along the seashore, from whence they could escape from the savage.

"The earliest settlement was on the east side of Acushnet river between its head and Fort Phoenix. Here were the farms of Jenney, Hathaway, Cook, Shaw, Palmer, Cuthbert, and east of Naskatucket brook Lieutenant Jonathan Delano, and still further east, next to the Mattapoisett line, the farm of Samuel Hicks. These families had settled in this region probably before the incorporation of the town.

"So far as known there was no settlement on the west side of the Acushnet river before 1700. In the Ponagansett section the growth was slow, and while some of the settlers came from Portsmouth, a considerable portion came from towns in Massachusetts where they had been harrassed by the local authorities for affiliation with the Quakers, and had been obliged to seek a residence in some more peaceful location. They did not fear the Indian if they could only escape the Puritan.

"Beginning at the head of Clark's cove and extending westerly by Bliss's Corner to the Tucker road is an ancient highway, its western terminus a century ago being known as Slocum's corner, and more recently Macomber's corner. South of this highway are the necks and points comprised in the villages now known as Padanaram, Bakerville and Smith's Neck. When the proprietors of Dartmouth were compelled in 1709 by a court decree to make a complete distribution of all their undivided lands, they employed Benjamin Crane of Dighton to survey and establish the bounds, and his first work was begun in October, 1710. It is proposed to present a brief sketch of the homestead farms around the Aponagansett river, as Crane found them when he first came to Dartmouth.

"The pioneer settler was probably Ralph Earle, by whom the Dartmouth lands were brought to the attention of the Portsmouth people. He probably came to Dartmouth soon after 1657, the date of his purchase of a half share of land from his father-in-law, Francis Sprague. His farm lay on both sides of the Cove road, west of Aponagansett river, and extended beyond the Tucker road. Its south line was at the village of Bakerville, and it comprised over 400 acres.

"On the east side of the Aponagan-

sett river is the peninsula at that date known as Colvin's or Durfee's Neck. With the exception of the northeast corner at Clark's cove that was assigned to Abraham Tucker, and the northwest corner laid out to Nathaniel Howland, the whole of the Padanaram Neck north of Bush street was comprised in the homestead of John Russell; while the location of Earle's house has been lost, the situation of the dwelling of John Russell has been preserved because of its famous associations during the King Philip war. It was located near the shore in the swampy pasture, south of the house of the late Captain Charles H. Gifford, and was defended as a garrison by English soldiers. After the King Philip war Russell built a new house on the hill, in front of the residence of John J. Howland, on Rockland street. He came to Dartmouth in 1663 and not long after Matthew Allen became his neighbor on the south. Allen's homestead lay between Prospect and School streets and also extended across the neck. In 1712 this became the second homestead of Captain John Akin. The extreme end of the neck was owned and occupied by William Durfee, and for the past century and a half has been in the possession of the Ricketson family.

"An interesting tradition has been preserved in relation to the Russell Garrison during the King Philip war. The Russell house had been converted into a fort and was defended by soldiers under Captain Fels of Hingham. Across the river in a southwesterly direction is a point at one time owned by Dr. William A. Gordon, and in recent years by Captain Charles H. Schultz. It is known as "Heath" or "Heathen Neck". The tradition is that an Indian on this neck was indulging in defiant gestures toward the garrison and was killed by a musket ball fired from the Russell house. The distance is nearly half a mile, and this might lead to a doubt as to the validity of the story, but there is some possibility that it is true because in the inventory of the estate of Abraham Sherman taken in 1772 appears this item:

"A gun which is said once killed an Indian across Apponagansett River from ye old castle on Russel's land to Heathen Neck."

"This would be a confirmation of the tradition if it could be shown that firearms of that period had an effective range of that distance.

"On the north side of the Cove road and east of the Slocum road was the homestead of Nathaniel Howland, whose dwelling house was near the

head of Rockland street, in the vicinity of the homestead of the Swenson family. He settled here not far from 1690, but about 1710 had selected a new homestead at the northeast corner of the Slocum road and Allen street. Near the present town house on the road to the Padanaram library until recent years was a small water-mill, on the same site as one operated by Nathaniel Howland before 1710.

"West of the Slocum road and extending nearly to the old town house was the farm of John Sherman. A brook emptying into the head of Apponagansett river divided this farm into two equal sections. The west part was later owned by Philip Sherman, a son of John. The Sherman family came from Portsmouth, Rhode Island, before 1660.

At a session of the court in Plymouth in 1668 the oath of fidelity was taken by Ralph Earl, John Sherman and John Briggs. This formality was required of all persons who came to Plymouth colony if they desired to enjoy the privileges of citizenship.

From the west end of the bridge over the Apponagansett river the Gulf road extends westerly into Bakerville and crosses the east part of the farm owned by John Briggs of Portsmouth. The village of Bakerville begins at the corner where the roads branch, the main highway leading to Russell's Mills. The Bakerville road extends south from this junction to the Holder Brownell corner. In 1710 there were seven long narrow farms extending southeasterly across this neck, from the Pascamansett river on the west to the Apponagansett river on the east.

"Beginning at the corner of the Russell's Mills road the first farm was owned and occupied by Eleazer Smith; the part west of the road in recent years was owned by Benjamin Brownell and that on the east side by William R. Slocum. Between the Smith farm and the line of the Gulf road was the farm conveyed in 1678 by John Briggs to his son John. The part west of the road finally came into the possession of Seth Davis, while the east section has become greatly sub-divided since the opening of the Gulf road, about 1820.

"The farm next south was the tract which John Briggs conveyed to his son Thomas, the west part in modern times was owned and occupied by Sanford Brightman. The east part contained the homesteads of Jireh Reed and of Captain William Penn Briggs. Between the John Briggs farm and Brownell's corner were four farms owned by the sons of John Sherman. The first, owned by Samuel and Sampson Sherman, included the

Ephraim Ellis place, and on the east side of the road the tract owned by Stephen Cornell. Next south was the farm occupied by Daniel Sherman, the north half on the east side of the road became the homestead of Elisha S. Crapo, and was later owned by Edward B. Smith; the south half was the homestead of Joshua Weeks. The section west of the road included the homestead of Ezra and Ensign Baker, together with the old poor farm. The farm next south was laid out to William Sherman, and the next to Peleg Sherman, and the latter finally acquired both. This farm bordered on the south on the road from Russell's Mills to Smith Neck, and the east part included the homestead of Jesse Crapo, the father of Henry H. Crapo.

"About the year 1800 emigration came from Cape Cod to this section. The Bakers from Dennis settled in Bakerville and became numerous and influential, and from this circumstance the village received its name.

"On the south side of the Smith Neck road and including the Holder Brownell farm was the homestead of Judah Smith, and to the south the farm of his brother Gershom, while next south and fronting on the Potomska road was the homestead of Edmund Sherman. West of the last three farms was the homestead of John Lapham, which descended to his sons, John and Nicholas. The farms of Judah and Gershom Smith constituted the homestead of their father, John Smith, as early as 1672, when he was road surveyor of the town.

"In the conveyances before the Revolutionary war Smiths Neck is always designated as Namquid Neck. If a substitute for the original was to be selected it could with equal propriety have been named for Howland, Akin, Slocum or Briggs. But the Indian name was too expressive and picturesque to be discarded, as will appear when its meaning is understood. Its etymology is N-AM-QU-ID and these syllables in their order mean 'The Fishing Rock Place,' hence 'The neck at the Fishing Rocks.' It is doubtful if the English name of the rock itself is any improvement. This great ledge, surmounted by a lighthouse, has received the curious designation The Dumping Rock. Then the original form of the Indian name has been modified to 'Nonquitt' and applied to the seaside village on the east side of the neck. In that form the name has no meaning.

"At the north end of the neck was the farm, largely salt marsh laid out to Nathaniel Howland before 1700 and occupied by his descendants to the present time, and with one ex-

ception all owners have had the first name Nathaniel. The farm next south was first occupied by James Akin, whose dwelling house was taken down last year. This homestead included the land in Bay View village and on the west side of the road extended as far south as the entrance to Nonquitt. On the east side of the road between Bay View and Nonquitt was the homestead of Thomas Getchell, a part of which is the estate of Shore Acres.

"The extreme south end of Namquid Neck is Mischaum Point, laid out to John Russell about 1690. This Indian name means 'The Long Point. The end of the Smith's Neck road is called Salters Point, but 200 years ago this name was written SALT-HOUSE POINT. The southernmost farm at the end of the road which included Salters Point was owned and occupied by Hezekiah Smith. North of Salters Point boundary and on the east side of the road was the homestead of Benjamin Howland, occupied by him about 1690. It included the Round Hill farm and extended northerly on the road a short distance beyond the entrance leading to Round Hill.

"The farm north of the Benjamin Howland homestead extending to the Nonquitt entrance was laid out to Captain John Akin and is the same which he purchased in 1692 from his father-in-law, Thomas Briggs; 20 years later Akin removed to a second homestead, which he purchased from Matthew Allen in Padanaram Neck. The tract east of the John Akin farm now occupied by the village of Nonquitt, as early as 1686 was the homestead of Thomas Briggs.

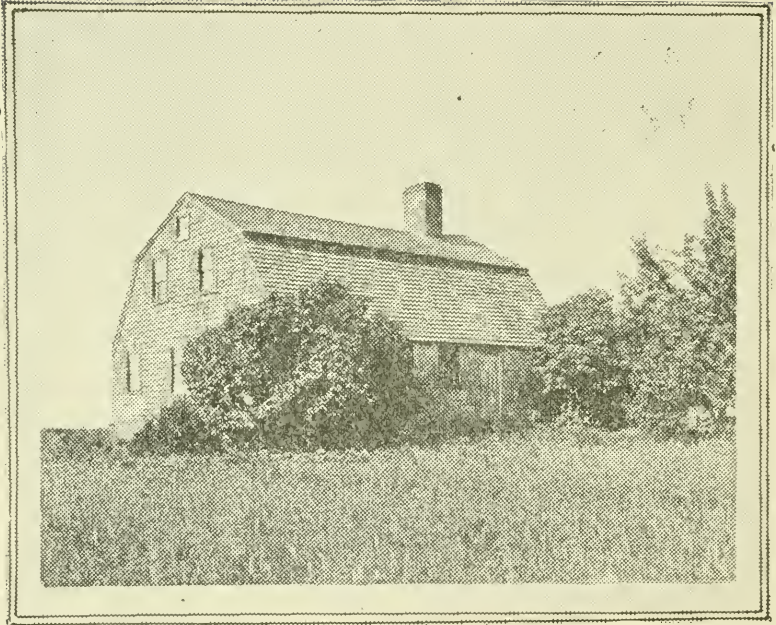
On the west side of the Smiths Neck road opposite the Benjamin Howland homestead was the farm of Hezekiah Smith, a son of John, settled in 1691, and next north was the homestead of his brother, Deliverance. These two farms occupied about the same frontage as the Benjamin Howland homestead. The land next north comprised three narrow tracts that were finally acquired by Benjamin Howland, and after his death became the homestead of Isaac Howland, and in 1839 that of William S. Howland.

The remaining territory extending north of the Friends' meeting house was laid out to Giles Slocum, and later became the homestead of George Smith. This Slocum farm was crossed by the road from Russells Mills known as 'Rocky Dunder.' At the corner was built the Quaker meeting house on a lot conveyed in 1822 by Caleb Anthony to the Dartmouth Meeting.

"In the two centuries since Crane surveyed these Dartmouth farms the

natural landmarks have remained without alteration. Some of the ancient walls and bounds, overgrown with shrubs and vines, may still be discovered. Through the entire period the great proportion of wealth and population has been located near the bay. Then a single schoolmaster and a single meeting house met the requirements of the entire town. Shipbuilding and whaling were just starting on their wonderful career, while no violent or convulsive change has taken place the ancient situation has nearly disappeared. Churches and schoolhouses are within easy reach of all. The old meeting house at Apponegansett is seldom opened.

The names of the early settlers are no longer found in the old locations. All of these thirty farms have been divided into smaller homesteads and on several are large and populous villages containing costly mansions and villas and occupied by prominent people from every section of the land. It is a fascinating study to trace the detailed events of two centuries through all the business, religious and social changes, from the homestead farms of 1710, owned and occupied by New England yeomen, to the present stage of development when Apponegansett has become transformed into important and successful seaside resorts."



THE BARNABAS EARLE HOUSE
BUILT ABOUT 1725 ON THE RALPH EARLE LANDS

Five Johns of Old Dartmouth

By William A. Wing

These are but short "settings down" about five men in Old Dartmouth who bore the Christian name of John, and who, with their descendants, are kith and kin to most of those gathered here.

It was in the "towne of Plimoth" in the "old Colonie" that a poor bound-boy realized the least of his troubles was his plain name John Smith. He being in "grate extremitie, and his master, Edward Doty of the Mayflower, having expended but little upon him, was compelled to fit him out with a "double suit of apparel and each quit the other." So the lad fared forth free to face the world. He became a stalwart seaman, being known as the "boatesman"—and we hear our young master-militant is to go in a "barque" to "fight the Dutch at Manhatoes" (New York). An early beginning of our navy.

But peace came. So there was not the usual indefiniteness about the return of this "Malbrouck" to his wife, Deborah, and little daughter, Hasadyah. John Smith having married a daughter of Arthur and Margaret Howland of Marshfield, he with them later entered into the faith of Friends and paid the penalty for "holding Quaker meetings" and "entertayning Foragne friends," among these the famous Nicholas Upsall, "white with years."

In spite of difficulties John Smith had prospered, for in Plymouth he owned a "house, messuage and garden spot on North street on ye North side," which he exchanged with perhaps pardonable pride, with Edward Doty, Junior (son of his former master), for lands in Dartmouth.

There in Apponegansett he builded his new house on what is known on the old maps as "Smith's Neck," today the south side of Rocky Dunder Road, and became prominent in the affairs of the new settlement, where its highest military office, "Lieftenant," was given him by the government at Plymouth. Being likewise a man of peace, he was chosen to settle certain disputes between John Cooke, "the lad of the Mayflower," and the Old Colony.

Deborah Howland, John Smith's wife, had died, and he had married Ruhamah Kirby (daughter of Richard of Sandwich).

John Smith is a text against "race suicide," for he was the father of

thirteen children, which would possibly have delighted the father of his great-great-great-great-granddaughter, Mrs. Alice Roosevelt Longworth.

A sometime neighbor in Marshfield of Arthur Howland's people was John Russell. Tradition tells that he was a volunteer in an early Indian war. In his new home he stood for government affairs. He was the first to represent Dartmouth as Deputy to the Old Colonial Government at Plymouth, the long and none-too-safe journey along the forest paths and Indian trails being not the least of its responsibilities. It is not strange that the children of old friends and neighbors married. John Russell, Jr., married Mehetable Smith, daughter of John and Ruhamah (Kirby) Smith; and Jonathan Russell, another son of John and Dorothy Russell, married Hasadyah, daughter of John and Deborah (Howland) Smith.

In "Russell's Orchard," on the east bank of the Apponegansett river, a quiet inflow, stood the Russell garrison house, or castle. Here, 'tis said, after King Philip's war, the stronghold being still maintained according to colony orders, were born the twin sons, John and Joseph, of Joseph Russell, son of John Russell, Senior.

Dartmouth was in "dire necessitie" after the Indian war, and John Russell, Senior, and "Lieftenant" John Smith were appointed to distribute the generous gift from Ireland for relief of the distressed. John Russell built on a nearby hillside a new home, and the inventory of its furnishings plaintively bespeaks an early period of reconstruction after an early war. In this home of John Russell, Senior, where later dwelt John Russell, Junior, and his wife, Mehetable Smith, were held early town meetings and schools.

The Russells had ever been foremost in educational matters, even in early Marshfield. Joseph Russell, the father of the twins, in a wordy will left moneys for his granddaughters, Elizabeth, Ruth and Content Russell's "Reading, Riteing and Cyphering," his version of the "three R's," accomplishments rarely adorning the female mind of his day.

The Russell family held large Proprietary rights and purchases in Old Dartmouth. On some of these same lands was built part of New Bedford

of today. Its early beginning on the west bank of the Acushnet river being known as "ye new settlement at ye foot of Joseph Russell's homestead," and Union street (one of the city's principal business thoroughfares) was a sometime cart-path to the water front from the dwelling place of Joseph Russell on the hill. This Joseph Russell was great-grandson of John Russell, Senior, (being the son of his twin-grandson, Joseph). According to ancient lore, Russell being the family name of the Duke of Bedford, it was suggested that the new settlement be called Bedford, and the owner of the lands where much of it had been builded was jovially called the "Duke," the amusing similarity being strengthened by "Duke" Joseph Russell's having married into the Howland family—one of the most substantial standing in Dartmouth—as had the real Duke of Bedford in England. Later on, as there was another Bedford in Massachusetts, this "new towne" was named New Bedford. Could "antient" John Russell (Senior) have rambled about the charming New Bedford of the "thirtys" he would have been amazed at the mansions—built on the Russell lands by his descendants—in contrast to his own simple homestead where the early fathers of Old Dartmouth gathered, making a centre in its early days.

After the Indian war there appeared in Dartmouth John Akin. Some claim him Dutch, others Scotch, and he seems to have combined doughtyness and cannyness. His dwelling place was at Nomquid Neck (now Nonquitt), and later at Colvins Neck (now Padanaram). His position in the community was that of the best type of colonial yeoman.

His first wife was Mary, daughter of Thomas Briggs, a sometime member of Peleg Sanford's troop-of-horse, an early colonial company of cavalry.

This Briggs family much-landed in old Dartmouth were closely connected with that famous Dyer family of Rhode Island. Several of John Akin's many children married Allens—descendants of the first-comer, George Allen of Sandwich.

Captain John Akin had a martial spirit for Deliverance Smith, woefully related to the Meeting of Friends—how he with others were ordered by John Akin to exercise in "war-like posture" with the intention of being pressed into his majesty's service in Canada.

This son of John Smith was not so easily dealt with contrary to his principles. For making a weary journey he stated his woes and views to

the Governor who graciously excused this determined Friend, who returned to his home in Dartmouth delivered from anymore "traying" in the abominated "war-like posture."

If in military matters, John Akin opposed John Smith's son, he was well in accord with him in their township's struggles to maintain the dearly bought liberty of conscience.

Deliverance Smith for refusing to collect taxes to pay a "hireling minister," was shut up in the Bristol gaol which by freak of fate had been built in part with money collected by his father, John Smith. "We are done with the Indians and now are molested by the Quakers!" deplored an eminent divine!

Later in the so-called "Great Controversy" Dartmouth absolutely refused to pay such taxes and appealing to the King their refusal was upheld. Then Captain John Akin was released from the same gaol and allowed to live out his days undisturbed after a year's imprisonment for "conscience sake."

The "golden woof-thread of romance" had been woven into the life of the parents of John Shepherd of Dartmouth.

John Shepherd's mother, Mary Bryce was married in Portsmouth, R. I., to Daniel Shepherd. A more than "twice told tale" had it that she was a daughter of an earl (of Pembroke) enticed by a villainous brother on board a vessel bound to America, which then set sail and bore her away to Newport. Here her forlorn fate fired the gallantry of Daniel Shepherd, who wooed and won her.

Daniel Shepherd was chosen the first school master in old Dartmouth. He was said to be a near relative of that "sweete, gracious, heavenly-minded, soul-ravishing minister," Mr. Thomas Shepherd, as he was ecstatically described. Perhaps Daniel Shepherd cast his wee light of learning as needfully upon his own poor little community as his more famous kinsman.

Thomas Story, while on a visit to Peleg Slocum called at the home of Daniel Shepherd, whose wife was very ill and though they were not Friends "were somewhat convinced of the truth." Mary Bryce Shepherd told Thomas Story that he had comforted her mightily. Later Daniel Shepherd joined the meeting, but there is no mention of his wife, for comfort is not cure.

The Shepherd homestead at Shepherd's Plains where John Shepherd dwelt was not far from that old stone bridge with the two arches go-

ing over the Pascamanset River to the old Friends' Meeting House, at Apponegansett in Dartmouth. Dorcas Wing the wife of John Shepherd was the niece and namesake of Dorcas Dillingham, who married Ralph Earle, leader of those early settlers from Portsmouth, R. I., into Old Dartmouth. From his large holdings came the Shepherd lands.

One of John and Dorcas Shepherd sons, David Shepherd, built his house in the new settlement at the foot of Joseph Russell's homestead, now our old "Water street" and helped to make that ancient street by giving a right of way "before his new dwelling house facing Shepherd's lane."

Close at hand to the southward on this old-time Water street stood the home of John Howland one of the early whaling captains and men of substance in this little new settlement.

Captain John Howland married his neighbor Shepherd's daughter, Reliance and sailed away in a craft bearing her name which proved worthy of that honor. From John Howland's house could be seen the great trees felled to build his daughter Elizabeth's future home on what is now the northwest corner of Union and Bethel streets. He was said to have the most ready-money in town, but it is told that on an expected approach of the British he hid it so

effectually that for a long time he complained of a lean purse until the hidden treasure was revealed up the chimney.

John Howland was important in his connection with the old Bedford bank (on this very site) and was one of those men who helped make old Water Street the centre of the town's financial and commercial activity and from these beginnings New Bedford became a famous city.

In the early days of the new settlement built on the land of the Russells there dwelt by the river side on quaint Water street descendants of these Five Johns of Old Dartmouth. Their ancient homes long since deserted by the Friends and now demolished in the deepening twilight seemed less delapidated and the "mind's eye" might see their former dwellers and gain fancied glimpses of the past. For "all houses wherein men have lived and died are haunted houses."

These were not great lives, but they freely and fearlessly served their township and colony and left names honored where they dwelt. They reared sons and daughters who became fathers and mothers of Old Dartmouth and some who found fame and favor in the great world without bore their blood. They "fought a good fight, they kept the faith."

“ Just men they were, and all their study bent
To worship God aright, and know His works
Not hid; nor those things lost, which might preserve
Freedom and Peace to man.”



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 26

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-sixth Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on 30 September, 1909.

WILLIAM BRADFORD

Edmund Wood

EARLY TRIPPS IN NEW ENGLAND

George H. Tripp

[NOTE.—The "Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches" will be published by the Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson's Book Store.]



GEORGE H. TRIPP

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTY-FIFTH MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD
MASSACHUSETTS

30 SEPTEMBER, 1909

William Bradford

BY
EDMUND WOOD

We have received a most interesting picture by William Bradford. The daughter of the artist, one of our members, and a diligent worker in our museum section, has wished to present to this society a characteristic specimen of his work. It is a cartoon in black and white, but drawn on regular canvas and is a finished study of whalers in the Arctic ice.

It is altogether fitting that it should hang upon these walls, for the artist was a son of Old Dartmouth, who by his acknowledged talent has brought renown to his birthplace and a favorable notoriety to our harbor and its ships and to many scenes along our coast.

William Bradford was born in Fairhaven in 1823. In his early youth he showed some talent in drawing, but quite early became a clerk in a dry goods store in New Bedford. Trade had little attraction for him, and all his leisure moments were occupied with drawing, mostly with a lead pencil. There was nothing brilliant about these early attempts. They were very crude, for he was largely self-taught.

Bradford was born and brought up a Quaker and he married the daughter of Nathan Breed of Lynn, a stalwart leader of that sect in New England and a man of strong opinions.

For eight years after his marriage the artistic leanings were subdued and the young man strove to succeed in trade. But he had not the business faculty, and his nature did not respond to that exercise of his talents and the business failed.

It was scarcely to be expected that from his Quaker ancestry, and subdued surroundings, would be born an artistic soul. But should such a soul be born, it was still less likely that it would be nourished and encouraged to pursue the study and delineation of the beautiful in nature. There was little in the habits or the creed of the Society of Friends auspicious to the growth or development of the fine arts. This most prosaic of sects had little affinity with the practice of an art which, according to their strict tenets was allied with and directly conducive to vanity.

It can well be believed that the

father-in-law in Lynn had little unity with the indulgence of an artistic fancy and little confidence in the making of pictures as a means to support a wife and family.

There is a similar situation described in a story of Benjamin West, the first painter of note which this country produced. Born of strict Quaker ancestry in a small village of Pennsylvania in 1738, he early evinced so decided a talent for painting that his parents called the elders of the meeting together to decide whether it would be possible to allow the pursuit of art by the youngster—without defying the testimony of truth and the penalties of the discipline. The record states that at this conference in the woods of Pennsylvania, one member was moved to considerable eloquence in his attempt to reconcile the alleged vanity of painting with the testimony of the society for plainness of speech, behavior and apparel.

It is remarkable that at that period and in the even primitive conditions light and liberality prevailed, and the meeting was led to see that the pursuit of Truth and the pursuit of beauty are not necessarily antagonistic, for Benjamin West was sent to study at Rome and later in England, where he eventually became the president of the Royal Academy.

Nathan Breed bought a farm for the young couple as his last protest against dabbling with pictures, and besought them to till the soil with healthy industry.

But this, too, failed, and then it seems that the young man was finally allowed to take up drawing as a means of a livelihood. For some time Bradford devoted himself entirely to the sketching of vessels, and for an income he painted a good many portraits of the whaleships, getting \$25 apiece. It was this severe practice of painting the details of a ship's form and rigging for the most critical of clients that afterwards served him in good stead and established his fame as the most accurate delineator of vessels in this country.

Up to this time there had been little attention paid to this department of painting, and a marine artist had not been evolved in America.

Bradford at this time had had no instruction in the use of color, and it was a fortunate event in his career when that roving Dutch artist, Van

Beest, came to this city, and Bradford was associated with him in the same studio. The two men and their artistic methods were radically different. Van Beest was a skilful handler of oil colors. He scorned detail and sought for the general effect; and this he obtained by dash and what might be called a happy knack. Bradford had magnified the importance of details, and believed that his success depended on patient observation and minute accuracy. In the two years they were associated together Bradford received his first real instruction in the handling of a brush, the use of pigments, and in the technique of painting, and gained distinctly in force and breadth from the manner of Van Beest.

After leaving the studio, Bradford began a resolute and systematic study of nature, and for several seasons sketched the whole coast to the north of us. Then came his seven successive summer trips to the coast of Labrador, beginning in 1861. In some of these trips he penetrated beyond the Arctic circle. Clad in the sealskin suit of the Esquimaux, and often in the light of the midnight sun, he depicted scenes of awful grandeur, of desolate, cheerless frost. He struggled with the marvelous color effects of that weird, unnatural light on the ever-changing faces of those drifting mountains of ice.

Scenes which hitherto had only been described by Arctic explorers in halting and insufficient word pictures were studied, and laboriously sketched with benumbed fingers, and later, in the milder climate of his New York studio perpetuated on enduring canvas.

Most of the sketches were of the floating field of ice and of icebergs, in endless variety of fantastic shapes. When the light was reflected directly on their face they were of a dazzling white, but the portions which were in shade are shown as blue or green or purple, fading into delicate tints of gray, and shot with rays of pink and saffron.

Now came quite a large measure of success to the struggling, persevering artist, and when Lockwood of New York paid \$10,000 for that best-known painting, "Sealers Crushed Among the Icebergs," then even the incredulous Quaker father-in-law was inclined to admit that there might be something in making pictures.

It is related of a rather shrewd member of the Society of Friends in England, who many years ago was waited on by a committee of elders to remonstrate with him because of his extravagant purchase of a picture, that he disavowed the protest and

quieted all conscientious scruples by proving to his brethren that he had made an excellent investment.

There was a welcome recognition, too, when the great poet of the society, Whittier, paid an eloquent tribute to his friend the Quaker artist, dedicating to him the poem "Amy Wentworth." Whittier, in his introduction to the poem, says:

Something it has—a flavor of the Sea
And the Sea's freedom which reminds
of thee.
A song for oars to chime with, such as
might
Be sung by tired sea-painters, who at
night
Look from their hemlock camps, by
quiet cove
Or beach, moon lighted, on the waves
they love.
So hast thou looked, when level sunset
lay
On the calm bosom of some eastern bay,
And all the spray moist rocks and
waves that rolled
Up the white sand-slopes flashed with
ruddy gold.

After his last Arctic trip came the visit to England. His portfolios were filled with his sketches—but nobody wanted to look at them. London is not rash or impetuous. But at last when his money was exhausted, came the first influential caller. The next day he received the Princess Louise, the Duke of Argyle and Lord Dufferin, and soon many of the prominent nobility of England. His pictures at once became the vogue when the queen purchased his "Steamer Panther Among Icebergs in Melville Bay." Bradford received \$150,000 for his pictures sold during the English visit. He had won fame in his own country and established himself in the front rank of living artists. But now after years of struggle with debts—for his Arctic expeditions had been very expensive—he received an ample pecuniary reward.

He was elected an associate member of the Royal Society—and an associate of the National Academy of New York.

His pencil was never idle for any long period until his sudden death in 1892.

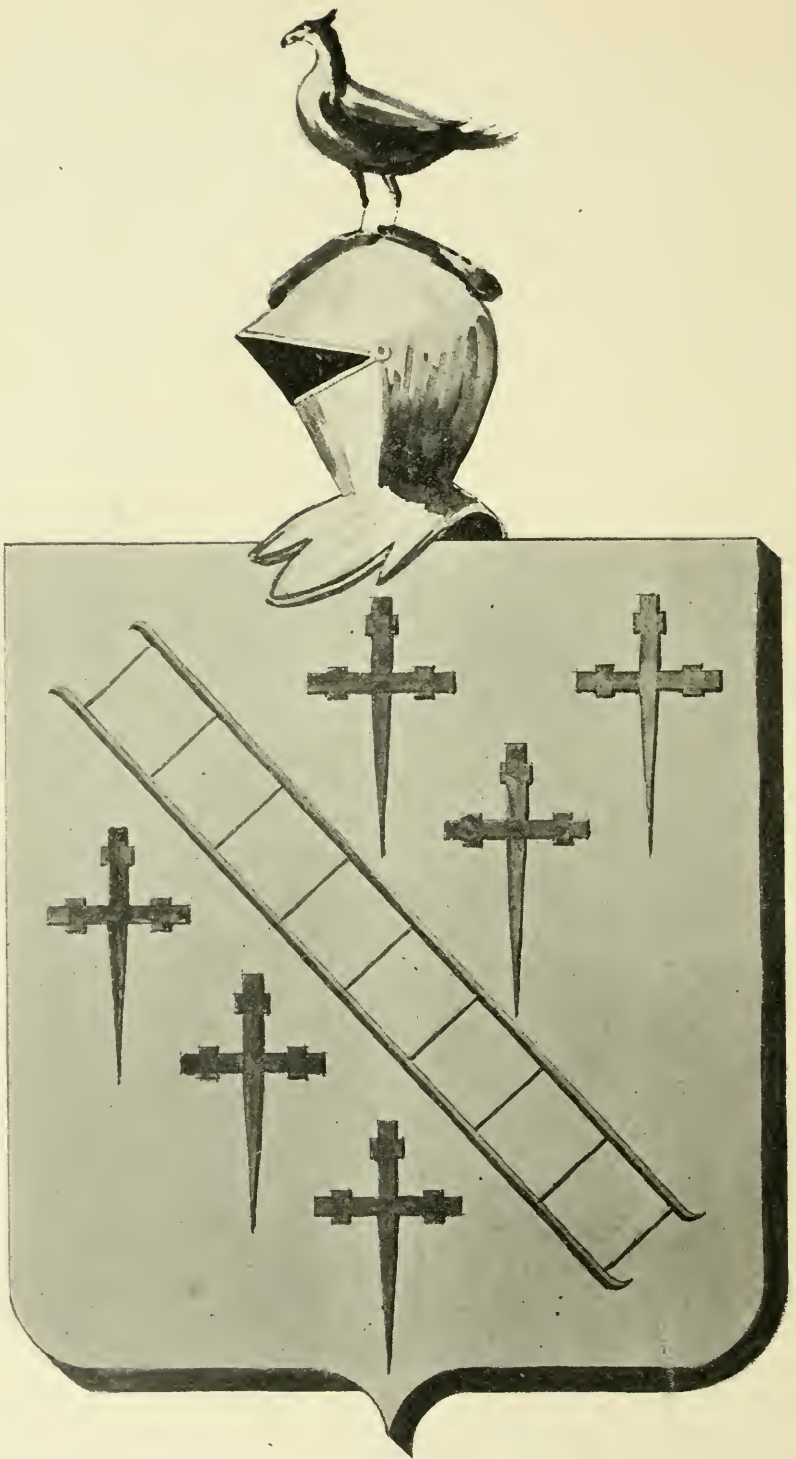
Opinions probably differ as to the comparative rank that Bradford holds. He belonged to a school which no longer flourishes and is unpopular with the art critics of the present day. There was little of the impressionist about Bradford. He knew a vessel to its smallest detail. He probably drew into his pictures more than he could see, because he knew it was there. But his detail is not finicky and the natural grandeur of the subjects he selected are handled with a breadth of treatment and an artistic

feeling which secures animation and impressiveness.

The accuracy of his observation and drawing are best seen in his studies in black and white. To the excellence of these there is no dissenting voice. A contemporary artist in his comment says: "I am not sure that Bradford's excellent drawings will not outlive even his work in color."

We have in this review confined ourselves to Bradford the artist, and have said nothing of Bradford as a man. His exemplary life, not common

in those of an artistic temperament, his genial, winning and affable manner, his unusual powers of conversation, his hospitality and above all his cheerful and joyous enthusiasm, compose the charming background to the picture of his artistic struggle and his artistic fame. The respect and the high honor which we accord to him as an artist, we can in the largest measure bestow upon his character as a man. His life and his work sheds glory upon the town of Old Dartmouth which produced him.



COAT OF ARMS OF THE TRIPP FAMILY

Early Tripps in New England

BY

GEORGE H. TRIPP

The study of family histories, or technically, genealogical research, has been the pursuit of the few rather than the many until the various patriotic societies and other similar institutions have appealed to the pride of a certain class of Americans who have desired to link themselves with a distinguished past, possibly as a relief for a somewhat commonplace present.

Besides these seekers for reflected glory from distinguished ancestry there has been an increasing number of eager students who have felt a natural pride in tracing their ancestry from the present as far into the past as verified records would justify. There has been among some an indifference to record hunting, some possibly taking the ground that in families, as with potatoes, the best part is underground, while others take a contrary view and, as someone has expressed it, are afraid to climb too far in the family tree unless they find some of their ancestors hanging on the branches.

But it seems a perfectly legitimate and proper subject for a short paper before the Old Dartmouth Historical society to trace the history of the family which numerically stood second in the directory of 1880, being surpassed only by the Smith family, with 108 names, while in the directory of 1908 there are 186 names, being surpassed in this instance by the Smiths, who are led by the Sylvias and Silvas, who figure largest in the number of names in the latest directory.

The name Tripp has been given numerous derivations. One speaks of Tripp or Trippner or Trippenmaker as a maker of short gowns. Another derivation more pleasing to the pride of the owners of the names is as follows:

"Tradition says of Lord Howard's fifth son at the siege of Boulogne that Henry V. asked how they took the town and castle. Howard answered, 'I tripped up the walls.' Said his majesty, 'Tripp shall be thy name, and no longer Howard,' and honored him with a scaling ladder for a coat of arms."

The Tripps, probably a branch of the same family, lived in Kent England, and trace their line as far back as the Norman conquest,

the name being found in Doomsday Book in a title of land. In 1231, Nicholas Trippe gave his estate in County Kent to Elham Church. There was a Tripp mentioned who was a governor of Calais about 1500, and a Thomas Trippe is mentioned by James, the Duke of York, afterwards King James II., in his autobiography, as aiding him to escape from St. James palace after the beheading of Charles the First.

There seems to have been two landings of representatives of the family in this country. The first John Tripp, living in Portsmouth, R. I., in 1638, and a Colonel Henry Trippe, who came to Maryland in 1663. He was born in Canterbury, England, 1632; he had fought in Flanders under the Prince of Orange, and brought to the provinces three of his troopers.

The principal interest, however, of this society would naturally be confined to the descendants of John Tripp. It is supposed that he came over from England as an apprentice to Holden; the Age of Chivalry had passed, and so the Tripps of this country had to make other uses of the scaling ladder in their coat of arms, so John Tripp, as a carpenter, could fairly use the same armorial design.

John Tripp was born in 1610, was a carpenter by trade, married Mary Paine, daughter of Anthony; in 1693 was appointed administrator for the inhabitants of the island of Aquidneck, and during his busy life occupied many positions of dignity and importance. In 1639 he signed a compact with 28 others, who declared:

"We, whose names are underwritten, do acknowledge ourselves the legal subjects of his majesty King Charles, and in honor do hereby bind ourselves into a civil body politic, unto his laws according to matters of Justice."

He was a deputy, corresponding to our present day representative, for 13 years between 1648 and 1672. In 1655 he was a commissioner, and in the same year he was made a freeman. He was a member of the governor's council at least five years between 1648 and 1675. In 1655 he deeded to his son Peleg a quarter section of land in Dartmouth formerly bought of John Alden.

An old record shows the following finding of a commission in 1666:

"Whereas, Mary Tripp, wife of John Tripp, Sr., some 25 years ago, bought of Richard Searle for a pint of wine, three acres of land, the said Richard Searle living then in Portsmouth, she being then unmarried, about which time Searle removed, but left no deed to Mary, now therefrom said sale is confirmed by commissioners"

He had 10 children, and his sons likewise had many children. They were pioneers in a new land and race suicide was unheard of.

John's children were:

John, born in 1640, died 1719; married Susanna Anthony.

Peleg, born 1642, died 1713; married Anne. He was constable, surveyor of highways, member of the town council and a deputy.

Joseph, born in 1644; married Mehitable Fish. He was a freeman, member of the court of trials, deputy, and a selectman of Dartmouth.

Mary, born 1646, died 1716; married Gersham Wordel and Jonathan Gotchell.

Elizabeth, born 1648, died 1670; married Zuriel Hall.

Alice, born 1650; married William Hall.

Isabel, born 1651, died 1716; married Samson Sherman.

Abiel, born 1653, died 1684; married Deliverance Hall.

Martha, born 1658, died 1717; married Samuel Sherman.

James, born 1656, died 1730; married Mercy Lawton and Lydia —, and Elizabeth Cudworth.

The Hon. John Tripp was one of the proprietors of Portsmouth, R. I., and he was representative to various courts. He was a member of the governor's council in 1648, 1670, 1673, 1674 and 1675.

From this man, prominent in early political affairs of Rhode Island, descended a very numerous progeny, who, first moving into Dartmouth, then into other sections of New England, were able in the first United States census of 1790 to establish the following record:

Of heads of families names in this first census, in Massachusetts there were 61 Tripps; in Rhode Island 28, Connecticut 4, Maryland 3, North Carolina 7, New Hampshire 2, New York 40, Pennsylvania 6, Vermont 2, South Carolina 2, Maine 4.

Mentioned in the first part of the paper is the present predominance of Tripps in the New Bedford directory, while the last Westport and Dartmouth directory shows nine names in Dartmouth and 83 in Westport. Such a large family, of course, by marriage

soon became allied with practically every old family in Portsmouth and Old Dartmouth. The first generation united with members of the following families: Anthony, Sisson, Fish, Wordell, Getchell, Hall, Sherman, Lawton and Cudworth.

The first migration to Dartmouth occurred very early in the history of the Tripp family in America. In 1665 John Alden deeded to John Tripp, Sr., land undivided in Dartmouth, which later Tripp divided among his sons, Peleg, Joseph and James. The Tripp farms were in the section of Dartmouth, now Westport, east of Devoll's pond, while Peleg had a farm at the south end of Sawdy Pond.

The following were prominent in town affairs in Dartmouth:

In 1689 James Tripp was appointed ensign.

In 1672-1673 Peleg Tripp was appointed surveyor.

In 1686 Joseph Tripp had taken oath of fidelity.

In 1687 and 1692 he was a selectman.

In 1688 James Tripp was a selectman, also in 1699.

In 1717-1723 John Tripp was town clerk.

In 1685 Joseph Tripp was representative to Plymouth.

In 1672 Daniel Wilcox deeded to John Tripp 114 acres of land.

James Tripp, in company with Benjamin Waite and George Lawton, established the mills between Westport Factory and the Head of Westport.

When the sons of John came to Dartmouth they settled in the region occupied by the homesteads of Portsmouth people, mainly in the west edge of the town, in the part now in Westport. Peleg Tripp owned a large farm at the south end of Sawdy pond, in the region that was Dartmouth until it was annexed to Tiverton, and then, in 1861, returned to Westport. This farm was owned in 1718-1773 in the family of Philip Tabor, the Baptist preacher. In recent years it has been owned by Weston Tripp and his descendants.

Ebenezer Tripp's homestead lay along the south side of the Adamsville road, from Central Village west of the junction of Sodom road. Ebenezer Tripp owned tracts on the east side of the latter road, now its southern terminus.

North of Central Village, about two miles, is a locality called Kirby's corner. A road extends from this place northwest towards Devoll's pond. This is called the Charlotty White road. South of Kirby's corner, on sides of the main highway and extending

down to the Noquchoke river, was a group of farms owned by Tripps, the homesteads being on the east side of the highway. The north was laid out by Joseph Tripp and the south by James.

On the west side of the road the land was owned by James, Abiel, Peleg, Joseph, James, John and Peleg Tripp.

Of some of this land the present owners are Tripps. So numerous have been the Tripp residents in this locality that the region south of Kirby's corner has been known as Tripptown.

The atlas of Bristol county in 1871 discloses the fact that the residents of Westport were as follows:

C. Tripp, Adamsville road.

R. P. Tripp, Sodom road.

Weston Tripp, south end Sowdy pond.

Seven other families of the same name south of Kirby's corner were in occupation of land laid out to descendants of John Tripp soon after 1700.

As we could expect from the customs of the time, some peculiar wills are to be found from members of this second generation of Tripps in America. Some extracts are worthy of record.

John second willed: "To son Benjamin a Bible which he hath already To son Othniel biggest pewter basin at death of wife. To son Lot biggest pewter platter at death of wife. To daughter Susanna Potter, wife of Thomas, my bell metal skillet. To daughter Mary Potter my brass kettle. To son John great chest, spit and dripping pan. To wife of Susanna rest of movables." The inventory of his estate showed 9 pounds 14 shillings, viz., apparel five pounds, chest, table, three chairs, three bedsteads, etc.

Joseph's will read: "To wife Mehitable, 5 pounds per year and her

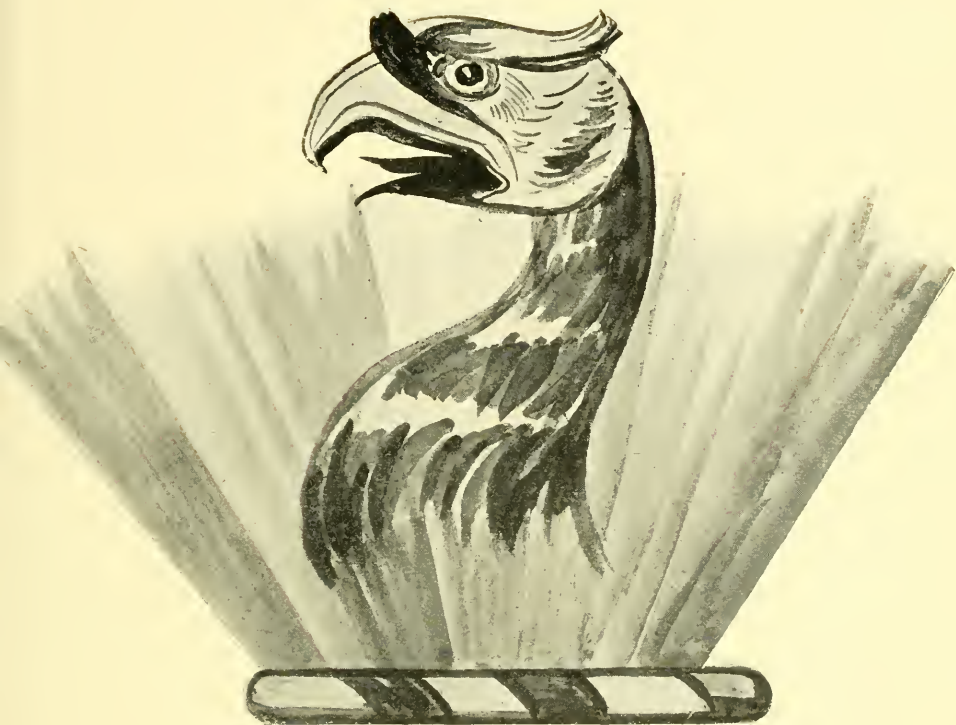
diet and house room for life, with most of the movables in the dwelling house. To daughter, Alice Sherman, brass chafing dish. To daughter, Mehitable Sherman, a Dutch pewter pot or flagon. To daughter, Mary Wait, 10 shillings."

The will of Abiel provided: "To son Abiel all real and personal estate at death of testator's wife, and at age of 16, he to have a cow and 10 sheep, which are to be improved until he is of age. To son at age, a silver cup, set of silver buttons; pair of silver buttons for breeches, chest marked with brass nails with letters I. T. and a feather bed."

The will of James, who was the plutocrat of the original family, made the following bequests: "To wife Elizabeth, feather bed, use of five cows and horse, use of housing, profit of half orchard, negro boy Tobey, firewood, £5 yearly and use of all household goods while widow. To son John, great Bible, ivory-headed cane and great silver spoon. To daughter Elizabeth Mitchell, son Robert and James, 5 shillings each. To son Francis, certain land, etc. To son Stephen, 100 pounds, paid by brother John, and negro boy Tobey, when his mother dies, and a feather bed. To son Israel, half of 100-acre lot. To daughter Isabel Tripp, a feather bed, good cow and £10." The inventory of the estate showed £860, viz., apparel, £11; two canes, Bible, negro boy, £100, five swine, poultry, £4 18 shillings, eight cows, heifer, pair of oxen, pair of steers, three yearlings, two calves, real estate, £500.

In closing this brief sketch, which has been confined almost entirely to the first settlers, the only excuse I can offer for writing is that I consider any attempt to enlist the legitimate interest of the people of today in the people of their own related past is worth while.





TRIPP FAMILY CREST



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 27

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-sixth Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on 29 December, 1909.

THE OLD MEN OF FAIRHAVEN

Job C. Tripp

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTY-SIXTH MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

29 DECEMBER, 1909

The Old Dartmouth Historical society held its twenty-sixth quarterly meeting on Wednesday evening. Two interesting papers were read before a gathering of the members, one being by Job C. Tripp on "The Old Men of Fairhaven," and the other a Bourne prize essay by Miss Irene Belanger on "Some Events in the History of New Bedford as Revealed in the Collection of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society." Miss Belanger's paper had been awarded a prize in the competition.

President Edmund Wood, in opening the meeting, called attention to some recent valuable accessions to the society's collection. The following memorial tablets have been placed in position by the entrance door:

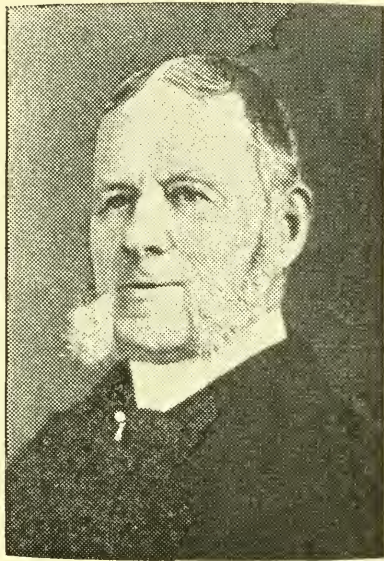
Peleg Slocum
1654-1733
"An Honest Publick Friend"
His Wife
Mary Holder
"A Daughter of Xopher Holder"

Henry Howland
Died 1671
"An Original Purchaser"

Stephen Willcox
Died 1736
His Wife
Susannah Briggs
1672-1719

Eliezer Slocum
1664-1727
His Wife
Elephel Fitz Gerald
Died 1748

Benjamin Crane
Surveyor
for
Dartmouth Proprietors
1710-1721



JOB CARVER TRIPP

The Old Men of Fairhaven

BY

JOB C. TRIPP

Twenty years after 1620 and within the life time of the Pilgrim Fathers the township of Dartmouth was marked out as a most desirable place for settlement, and a deed was obtained from the two sachems Massasoit and Wamsutta for all the land included now in the city of New Bedford, and the towns of Dartmouth, Westport, Fairhaven, and Acushnet. In consideration of which there was paid to the Indians thirty yards of cloth, eight moose skins, fifteen axes, fifteen hoes, fifteen pairs of breeches, eight blankets, two kettles, one cloak, eight pairs stockings, eight pair of shoes, one iron pot and two English pounds in wampum. It must have been over 250 years ago, when John Cooke, the last surviving Pilgrim on the Mayflower and the first white man to settle in our town, came to what is now the locality of Oxford, in Fairhaven. He was undoubtedly our first old man; a man of great ability, strictly honest and trustworthy, and a Christian of the Baptist persuasion, having left Plymouth on account of his then heretical notions, which found no fellowship among the Pilgrim fathers, although no deed given by the Pilgrim fathers within the township of Dartmouth was valid unless countersigned by John Cooke, their agent here. John Cooke was the ancestor of many families in our town. Fairhaven, when set off from the town of New Bedford, in 1812, included the town of Acushnet, the latter town having been set off from Fairhaven as an independent township many years later. In speaking of the old men of Fairhaven, I allude to those living in the present township, placing them in two classes: first, those I knew of and saw when a boy of 10 or 12; and secondly, those whom I knew when I was a young man in business; and with those lives I was more or less contemporary. The most of these men were good citizens, and faithful in their callings, the larger part being descendants of the Pilgrim Fathers. Many of them connected with the various trades or occupations enumerated were prominent in the civic, religious and business life of the town.

I commence with some of the oldest men whom I have seen when the business of the town was wholly mari-

time, giving names, occupations, and age at death.

Master mariners—Noah Stoddard, 94; Silas Alden, 78; John Bunker, 72; Lemuel C. Wood, 78; Alden D. Stoddard, 83; James Merrihew, 82; Thomas Bennett, 75; George Hitch, 80;? Sylvanus Allen, 81;? Atkins Adams, 67.

Most of the shipmasters were able men, and successful in their calling. Most of their life being spent on ship-board, a little of the commanding and autocratic spirit was shown on shore. It was said that Noah Stoddard's attitude at home or on the street was that of a stern man, not to be trifled with. Boys on the street stopped their noisy play and stood in awe as he passed by. Atkins Adams was always a finely dressed and imposing figure, with aristocratic bearing, on our streets. He with others did not approve in that day of the laboring man's efforts to reduce the hours of labor from the custom at that time of working from sunrise to sunset, to the 10-hour system which was afterwards adopted. He expressed the thought that the workmen were rather too independent and saucy, but he was a fine man and prominent as a leading citizen. Thomas Bennett, in his day, was a prominent shipmaster in the merchant service between this country and Russia.

I am informed that Captain Charles Stoddard was a noted shipmaster of a passenger ship running between this country and Europe, before the adoption of steam passenger service. In a great gale off the south side of Long Island, on his return from Europe with a large number of passengers, he met with shipwreck. Finding that his ship was leaking, and sure to sink, his quick sense of danger led him to summon his officers and crew to the quarterdeck, where, with speaking-trumpet in his hand, he ordered the boats manned and filled with passengers, all of whom were saved. When urged by passengers, officers and crew to save his life, he made answer through his speaking trumpet, 'I am captain of this ship, and you must obey my orders; as for me, I shall stand by the ship.' The next morning after the storm, when the divers came down from New York they found the sunken ship with Cap-

tain Stoddard standing at his post with speaking trumpet clutched so tightly by his fingers that it was with difficulty removed.

I speak of these incidents simply to show you what kind of stuff some of these men were made of.

Grocers and Traders—Bartholomew Taber, 81; Marlboro Bradford, 76; Enoch S. Jenney, 89.

Merchants—Levi Jenney, 70; Samuel Borden, 88; Joseph Tripp, 92; Warren Delano, 86.

Joseph Tripp was one of our first citizens and noted as merchant, state senator and gentleman.

Samuel Borden was for many years one of our wealthiest men and an important director in the Merchants bank of this city.

Warren Delano, a descendant of Philippe Delanoye, of France, was for many years one of our most prominent merchants.

Farmers—George Willcox, 98; Seth Alden, 71; Nathaniel Delano, 72; Joseph Smith, 78; Amaziah Delano, 88.

George Willcox was always a hard working man. Every year he planted his garden and took care of it. On the last day of his life, when he died at 98, he hoed his garden and ate his dinner at 12 o'clock; then, retiring to the lounge, as usual, he soon fell asleep, and never woke again.

Shipwrights—Abener Pease, 85; Isaac Wood, 80; Jesse Paine, 70.?

Coopers—Jeremiah Pease, 80; Kelley S. Eldredge, 89; Salathiel Eldredge, 83; Gilbert Tripp, 80.

Shoemakers—Dennis McCarthy, 73; Ebenzer Tripp, 64.

Dennis McCarthy, Irishman and Catholic, who came over from Ireland, was a man of more than ordinary intelligence. He joined the Methodist church, where as a boy I also attended and often heard his gentle voice touched with poetic thought as he spoke in the prayer meeting. Many years afterwards he became a convert to the Swedenborgian faith, and many times have I seen the coach and span of Mary Rodman of this city drive up to his little cobbler shop, on Water street in our town, where no doubt she found congenial company in their discussion on spiritual themes.

Ebenzer Tripp was of most excellent character, but was both deaf and dumb. He was constant in his attendance at the Congregational church, and when questioned as to his reason for going when he was unable to hear what was said, he replied that he liked to watch the expression on the minister's face during his delivery of the sermon, and somehow he felt that the inspiration and spirit of the speaker was imparted to him. He felt in his heart what

he failed to hear in his ears. In the same spirit he fellowshipped with the other members of the church.

Caulker—Jabez Sherman, 80.

H. H. Rogers informed me last year that one day when a boy he was walking over the mill bridge on his way to the high school, now and then throwing a stone into the mill pond, when he met Mr. Sherman, who said: 'Young man, whose boy art thou?' when young Rogers replied, 'I am Roland Rogers's boy.' Mr. Sherman then said: 'Roland Rogers's boy ought to know better than to throw stones into the mill pond, for thee will fill it.' A most remarkable prophecy from a man unconscious of the future, as any one will observe as he looks upon Cushman park.

Rope Maker—Albert G. Liscomb, 70.

Baker—Jonathan Buttrick, 77.

Rigger—James Hammond, 74.

Sail maker—Hardy E. Hitch, 83.

Town clerk—Ebenezer Akin, Sr., 85.?

I now refer to the second class of old men who were active when I was a young man in business.

Master mariners—Lemuel Tripp, 81; Caleb Church, 85; Phinneas E. Terry, 71; John S. Taber, 80; Ebenzer Pierce, 84; Alexander Winsor, 80; Thomas Stoddard, 80; Jabez Delano, 74; James S. Robinson, 87; James V. Cox, 71; Charles S. Taber, 82; Joseph Taber; Charles Bryant; James Tripp, 2d, 80; Peleg Gifford, 84; Ellery T. John Charry, 79; Gorham B. Howes, 71; Benjamin Ellis, 78; Thomas W. Taber, 85; John Church, 78; William H. Whitfield, 81; Isaiah West, 87; Ira Lakey; George H. Taber, 93.

The many incidents relating to these men are too numerous to mention in this paper. Lemuel Tripp, one of our leading citizens, was director in the Fairhaven bank, deacon of the Congregational church, and well to do. He told me that he never gave his note or hired a dollar in all his life. Phinneas E. Terry, the favorite captain of Cornelius Vanderbilt on his New York and Galveston steamship line, expected his passengers as well as his crew to obey orders. Stopping at one of the southern ports to take on passengers, he noticed the next day that some of these southern men were gambling on the quarter deck. He ordered them to desist as no gambling was allowed on the ship. They obeyed, but the next day, in another part of the ship, the same gang were found at the same business. When Captain Terry approached, the men, all of whom were armed, quietly took their cards and threw them into the sea, to the great amazement and wrath of the gamblers; but there was

no more gambling. Then William Washburn, a favorite captain of Gibbs and Jenney, who sailed during the Civil war on a right whale voyage to Hudson bay. The ship was frozen-in by Sept. 15; Eskimos came and built their icehouses around the ship. Captain Washburn found them to be good men, and thoroughly honest. Finally the sun ceased to rise; the weather, 60 to 70 degrees below zero, was very trying, when the Eskimos chief proposed a hunting trip to the interior of northern Canada; the captain furnishing a boat crew and food, the Eskimo the sledges, with 40 dogs to a sled. They were gone about a week, and returned with nine moose oxen and 200 salmon trout. The coming season the ship, filled with oil and bone, returned; the oil selling at one dollar per gallon and the bone at one dollar and fifty cents per pound.

Captain Alexander Winsor, in the merchant service, was the favorite captain of Grinnell, Minturn & Co., and had the finest ship in the American service; which was afterward sold in a foreign port, "Flying Cloud".

William H. Whitfield, the captain who rescued Nakahama Mungero and his five companions from a lone rock in a China sea. This young Japanese was one of my schoolmates in Fairhaven, graduating in five years ahead of all the American boys. He finally returned to Japan, where he was quite as important a factor in opening the ports of Japan to the world as Commodore Perry and his warship. No fairy tale or Arabian Nights story could ever equal his experiences.

And then Ira Lakey, the jeweler in Fairhaven, who with many log books studied up the habits and the homes of the whales, and afterwards went as captain of a ship and proceeded to fill her with oil.

Captain Isaiah West, who on his voyage for sperm whaling in the Indian ocean puts into Zanzibar for recruits, and became acquainted with some of the black Mahomedan merchants, whom he found strictly honest, trustworthy and very religious. It was here that he lost his anchor in a typhoon, compelling him to obtain another one to replace the lost one. The merchant who sold the anchor refused to take pay, saying he could find the captain's anchor in the harbor, and besides it was the command of the Koran that the Mahomedan must treat the stranger in distress as he himself would like to be treated were he in distress in the stranger's country.

It was largely through Captain Charles Bryant in his interviews with Senator Charles Sumner that the senate of the United States was prevailed upon to purchase Alaska from the

Russian government. His whaling experiences in Bering sea, his acquaintance with the Alaska Indians, his experience as custodian of the fur seal fishery and his account of the fisheries and wonderful scenery in Alaska, are of the greatest interest.

Merchants—Nathan Church, 74; William P. Jenney, 79; Charles W. White, 79; Francis Stoddard, 66; Phineas Terry, 87; Isaiah F. Terry, 91; Warren Delano, Jr., 88; Nathaniel S. Higgins, 86; Weston Howland, 85; Johnathan Cowen, 72; William L. B. Gibbs, 81; Charles S. Taber, 82; Roland Fish, 89; Furman R. Whitwell, 68; Philemon E. Fuller, 81; Ezekiel R. Sawin, 79; Wilson Pope, 84; Lewis S. Judd, 70; Nathaniel Church, 66.

Nathan Church, our wealthiest citizen, had three good characteristics: He always paid his labor every Saturday; he never spoke ill of any one; he was always polite to the townspeople in every walk in life.

Warren Delano, Jr., for a great many years was the trusted manager of the commercial house of Russell & Co., Shanghai, China.

Weston Howland, a citizen for so many years of both this city and Fairhaven, was noted as the discoverer in the successful manufacture of petroleum oil.

Grocers and Traders—Rufus Allen, 81; Samuel H. Eldred, 87; Noah Stoddard, 77; Seth S. Swift, 77; Tucker Damon, Jr., 84; Hervey Tripp, 80.

Carpenters—Amos T. Pierce, 72; Loring Dexter, 78; Frederick T. Pierce, 94; Bethuel Gifford, 87; Arnold G. Tripp, 87.

Coopers—William W. Allen, 89; John C. Pease, 80; Pardon Tripp, 87; Nathan Lawton, 81; Charles H. Tripp, 84; Charles Eldredge, 88; John M. Howland, 91; Welcome J. Lawton, 79; Kelley S. Eldredge, 80; Hiram Tripp, 84; Francis J. Delano, 86.

Blacksmiths—Luther Cole, 79; Tucker Damon, 82; John Howard, 76; Phineas Merrihew, 80; Isaac W. Babbitt, 93.

Shipwrights—Reuben Fish, 85; Elbridge G. Morton, 74; Albert Gifford, 79; Daniel J. Lewis, 72; Ebenezer Bryden, 76; Oliver Brightman.

Farmers—Lemuel S. Akin, 76; William F. Terry, 88; John P. Ellis, 73; William P. Sullings, 81; Manuel Rose, 80; Sylvanus E. Studley, 87; Henry Akin, 76; Charles F. Morton, 81; Samuel Dunn, 81; George R. Dean, 79; Seth Alden, 84; Johnathan E. Cowen.

Physicians—George Attwood, 72; Charles N. Thayer, 79.

Treasurers and Cashiers—Charles Drew, 84; Reuben Nye, 89.

Riggers—William Waterson, 88; William T. Hoeg, 73.

Machinists—Henry J. Mantius, 86; Russell Hathaway, 81.

Painters—Bartholomew Taber, 80; William Washburn, 84; Alexander Tripp, 79.

Teachers—Martin L. Eldredge, 78; Frederick Jenney, 82.

Manufacturers—Edward A. Dana, 78; Cyrus D. Hunt, 79.

Ministers—Rev. Henry J. Fox, 70; Rev. Frederick Upham, 91.

Martin L. Eldredge will be remembered as the successful commander and teacher of the state schoolship Massachusetts, which for several years was anchored in our harbor. Reuben Fish will be remembered as a most successful ship builder, some of the finest ships owned in New Bedford and Fairhaven were the products of his skill.

Seth A. Mitchell, road builder, 88; George A. Briggs, civil engineer, 84; Nathaniel S. Taber, sail maker, 87; Ira Gerrish, cabinet maker, 86; Walter D. Swan, pump maker, 84; Joshua Delano, boat builder, 80; James Lawrence, teamster, 75; Robert Bennett, clerk, 75; Francis W. Tappan, lawyer, 87; John H. Howland, selectman, 76; Alfred Nye, justice, 78; William Bradford, artist, 70; Thomas S. Putman, deputy sheriff, 82; Eben Akin, Jr., town clerk, 87; James Bennett, railroad conductor, 75; James C. Mara, dentist, 80; Samuel Jenkins, gardener, 93; Harvey Caswell, block maker, 84; Frederick Williams, cooper, 82; John Chase, blacksmith, 93; Cyrus G. Lawrence, cooper, 94.

Some of these men were great sticklers for their rights. The selectmen gave James Wing permission to dam up the old mill pond in order that he might obtain his supply of ice from this place. I well recollect a great northeast storm with a down-pour of rain that completely flooded the land around the pond. Two of the abutters, Oliver Brightman and James Lawrence, already alluded to, were up bright and early in the morning and proceeded with a gang of

men to destroy the dam. Word got quickly around the town. I was one of the first to arrive on the scene, when soon came the selectmen, who in peremptory tone ordered them to desist in their attempt to defy the action of the constituted authorities of the town. The two men replied that they had squatters rights and they were going to maintain them. They kept at work until the whole dam gave way, the great body of water rapidly flowing into the Acushnet river. It was a great sight and great fun for the boys. Suit at law was immediately brought by the selectmen against both Lawrence and Brightman, the two latter being defended by Thomas D. Elliot, Esq., who told me afterwards that he gained the case for these men and also a decree from higher authorities that this waterway must remain open and undisturbed to the sea. The town was mulcted in the sum of \$3300.

Of course there were many other old men besides those I have enumerated, mostly farmers who were beyond my reach. I note the fact that among all the occupations given the healthiest were those of house carpenters and coopers.

Of course nothing has been said about the old women, of whom there are always more in number than the old men. There are more widows than widowers in our town. A life insurance risk on a woman is better than one on a man.

Fairhaven 70 years ago, with its lack of good streets and sidewalks, its sale of liquors at the grocery stores and public bar, its lack of shade trees and its inadequate school system, was a vastly different town than the town of today. But later on some of the men whom I have named did much afterwards in tree-planting, grading, flagging and curbing some of our streets and improving our school system, until our former townsman, H. H. Rogers, completed the work as it stands today.

OLD DARTMOUTH

HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 28

Being the proceedings of the Annual Meeting of the Old Dartmouth
Historical Society, held in their Building, New Bedford, Mass., on
March 30, 1910.

REPORT OF THE DIRECTORS

William A. Wing

REPORT OF THE TREASURER

William A. Mackie

REPORT OF THE MUSEUM SECTION

Annie Seabury Wood

REPORT OF THE HISTORICAL RESEARCH
SECTION

Henry B. Worth

REPORT OF THE EDUCATIONAL SECTION

Elizabeth Watson

REPORT OF THE PUBLICATION SECTION

William A. Wing

REPORT OF THE PHOTOGRAPH SECTION

William A. Wing

[NOTE.—The "Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches" will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson's Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
ANNUAL MEETING
OF THE
OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY
IN THE
BUILDING OF THE SOCIETY
ON
MARCH 30, 1910

The following officers were elected:

President—Edmund Wood.

Vice Presidents—George H. Tripp,
Henry B. Worth.

Treasurer—William A. Mackie.

Secretary—William A. Wing.

Directors for three years—William
W. Crapo, Walton Ricketson, Edward
L. Macomber.

President Wood, who presided at the meeting, announced that the members had gathered for the seventh annual meeting. "While this has not been a spectacular year in the society's history," he said, "we all believe it has been a year of growth and development. Good work has been done, meetings regularly held, and research work of value, relating to the history of the locality,

has been developed by the papers read at the meetings.

The society is indebted to the entertainment committee, which has inaugurated several entertainments, and has not only provided instructive evenings, but has also raised revenue and has money in the treasury.

Referring to the gifts made to the society, President Wood said that many valuable articles were drifting into its possession, for which the members desired to express gratitude. He also dwelt upon the satisfaction which the public should feel that the treasure-house of the society afforded a chance to give a proper housing and exposure to these things.

Report of the Directors

BY

WILLIAM A. WING

Another twelfth-month has passed in the activities of our society, expressed by the various reports of this evening.

We are justly proud that the Old Dartmouth Historical Society holds a recognized and unique place among historical associations.

During the last year the secretary has spent his spare time as librarian of the Rhode Island Historical Society, established in 1822. That organization is practically an historical library. The dignity of age and its methods resulting from long establishment and experience have made the past year one which will be, I am sure, productive of value to this society. Visits when possible to other societies and also from their representatives have been helpful. For the spirit of co-operation is especially necessary in this work as an aid against retrogression.

In Memoriam.

Wilhelmina Crapo Clifford
(a life member).
Annie Russell Holmes.
John Henry Howland.
Adeline J. James.

David Kinghorn.
Joseph Frank Knowles.
Thomas Henry Knowles.
Winthrop P. Knowles.
Elizabeth Perry Paige.
Henry Huttleston Rogers
(a life member).
William Ervin Sargent.
Winfred T. Taft.

We realize the great loss to the community and to this society caused by the death of Henry H. Rogers, to whose generosity we owe this beautiful home, so well adapted to our needs. It is a fitting memorial to the donor and to his ancestors, who were among the earliest and most prominent in Old Dartmouth.

Each member will help this institution, so valuable and much needed in our city and vicinity, by the regular payment of annual dues. This can always be regulated by consulting your last membership card, which is in itself a receipt and memorandum.

By thrift, co-operation, and attention to detail grew from humble beginnings our Old Dartmouth to a great and flourishing community, and so with your help may its namesake, our Old Dartmouth Historical Society.

Report of the Treasurer

BY

WILLIAM A. MACKIE

William A. Mackie treasurer in account with Old Dartmouth Historical society from March 29, 1909 to March 30, 1910:

Receipts.

Balance March 29, 1909.....	\$383.02
To W. A. Wing, secretary, for dues	623.00
To W. A. Wing, secretary, for admissions	71.25
To W. A. Wing, secretary, for publications	17.10
To W. A. Wing, secretary, for life members	50.00
To Merchants National bank, dividend	39.00
To Mechanics National bank, dividend	105.00
To Commonwealth of Massachusetts, rebate of tax.....	50.56

\$1,338.93

Payments.

By N. B. Institution for Savings, life members.....	\$50.00
By museum.....	55.75
By salaries.....	150.00
By labor.....	286.88
By repairs and improvements.....	63.77
By current expenses.....	555.58
Balance March 30, 1910.....	176.95
	<u>\$1,338.93</u>

Report of the Museum Section

BY

ANNIE SEABURY WOOD

Through the kindness of its many friends much has been done during the year now ended to increase the value and interest of the museum.

A beautiful old desk, belonging to Daniel Ricketson, Sr., was given to the society, by his great-grandchildren, Arthur, Anna and Walton Ricketson. Daniel Ricketson, son of John Ricketson, was born in Dartmouth in 1745 and died in New Bedford in 1824. The mahogany of which the desk is made was brought by him from Santo Domingo in a ship of which he was master. It is a most finished piece of workmanship, and we value it not only for its own beauty, but because it was the dearly prized possession of a family whose members have been, from the organization of the society, its staunch supporters and generous benefactors. We count ourselves fortunate, too, in coming into possession of an exceptionally fine figurehead from the old New Bedford whaleship Bartholomew Gosnold. A long story might be told about the ship, its voyages and its owners, and about the adventures of the figurehead after the ship was destroyed. Sufficient here to say, however, that it has most fittingly found a home with us at last.

The surveyor's outfit of Henry Howland Crapo, born 1804, died 1869, has been presented to the society. Its history is an interesting one. In 1829 Henry Howland Crapo was teaching in the High school at the Head of Westport. He was ambitious to be a land surveyor and had prepared himself, but he had no compass and no means to purchase one. His only alternative was to make one. Using the tools in the village blacksmith shop he constructed a compass and tripod and used them afterwards in many surveys of land within the territory of Old Dartmouth.

A short time ago, William F. Havemeyer of New York presented to the society an oil painting by William Bradford, which is considered one of the strongest of the artist's pictures. The scene is off the northern coast of Greenland and the name of the picture is 'The Ice Dwellers Watching the Invaders.' The ship is the Panther and was hired by William Bradford for this expedition.

Dr. Hayes, the explorer, was a member of the party, and it is interesting at this time to note that an uncle of 'Capt. Bob' Bartlett, who is to lecture under the auspices of this society on Friday night, was in command of the ship.

The Horace Smith loan collection has added greatly to the interest of the Alaskan room and to the Japanese and Chinese exhibit which has been arranged in the old directors' room.

Only a beginning has been made in this work, but we feel sure it is the nucleus of a worthy exhibit in the future. Notable among the many other acquisitions is a group of models of Provincetown whaleships given by Abbott P. Smith; a photograph of Warren Delano given by Mrs. Delano-Forbes; the trimming for a parka or Alaskan coat, a most wonderful and artistic piece of work made of tiny pieces of deer hide and brought down from the far north by David H. Jarvis; a working sketch in water color painted in 1880 by Dodge McKnight for the drop curtain of Liberty Hall, given by William L. Sayer; and a pair of whale's teeth, the largest ever brought into New Bedford, taken from a whale killed by Captain George Winslow of Bark Desdemona.

Nathan C. Hathaway is constantly adding new treasures to his case of ivories, and it is safe to say that Mr. Hathaway's case, the case of jaggling wheels and the case of miscellaneous articles made on shipboard form a collection of ivories which is most valuable and unique and one which it would be impossible to duplicate.

The entertainment committee has presented several interesting talks and lectures during the winter; one by Clifford W. Ashley on a 'Short Voyage on a Whaleship,' one by Elizabeth Watson on Old Dartmouth, illustrated with stereopticon views shown by J. Arnold Wright; one by John Colby Abbott on 'Colonial Dressing in America,' and to conclude the season a lecture will be given on Friday night, April 1st, by Captain Bartlett of the Roosevelt. We trust he will be given a rousing welcome to New Bedford.

Report of the Historical Research Section

BY

HENRY B. WORTH

While the activities of this society are directed especially to historical events of ancient Dartmouth, yet the circle of its investigation may properly include persons and places in which Dartmouth men have been particularly concerned. Along the southern boundary of Buzzards bay is a chain of islands constituting one of the towns of Dukes county to which the foregoing principle has a peculiar application, and this will plainly appear when the ownership of the islands is considered. Purchased originally by Thomas Mayhew in 1641 they remained in the possession of his family for nearly half a century. Before his death they were conveyed to purchasers who were never associated with Marthas Vineyard but whose names are illustrious in the colonial history of Dartmouth.

Penikese was transferred in 1686 to Daniel Wilcox and soon after to Peleg Slocum by whose descendants it was owned for over a century.

Cuttyhunk was purchased in 1674 by Peleg Sanford, Peleg Smith, Ralph Earle and Thomas Ward, who were well known in the affairs of Newport, and they conveyed the island to Peleg Slocum, in whose family it was held until in 1869 Otis Slocum conveyed it to the Cuttyhunk club. At one time it was called Sanford's Island after one of its owners.

Nashawena was sold to the same four men, and among the subsequent owners were Slocums, Wrightingtons and Howlands, and in 1698 it was called Slocum's island. In 1860 the entire island was acquired by Captain Edward Merrill.

Pasque was purchased by Daniel Wilcox and by him conveyed in 1696 to Abraham Tucker family until 1866 when it was secured by the Pasque Island club. For several generations it was well known as Tucker's island.

Naushon and the small dependencies nearby were purchased by the Winthrops and later by the Bowdoins who founded the college in the state of Maine, and it was held by them until 1843 when a part interest was purchased by William W. Swain of New Bedford and the entire island was later owned by John M. Forbes.

So it clearly appears that the history of the land-owners of Dartmouth would not be complete without a consideration of the Elizabeth islands. At a time when there is such keen inter-

est in Indian place names and their meanings, it is opportune to consider the designations assigned to these islands by the red men.

There has been considerable liberty in changing names in this locality. The body of water which Gosnold called a sound was designated in 1686 by Governor Mayhew as 'Monument Bay,' the name probably being put another form of 'Manomet.' Later it was renamed 'Buzzards Bay,' but why or by whom has not been explained. Gosnold named the westernmost island 'Elizabeth's Island,' and during the following century this name was appropriated to the entire group but the author of this change has not been discovered. The Indian group name met a singular fate, which will now be explained.

While these islands were still a part of the New York colony, in 1679, the authorities at Plymouth obtained the testimony of an Indian named 'Old Hope' which contained some important statements. He says the collective group name when the English came to this region, was 'Nashanow.' This name is derived from a well known Algonquin word meaning 'between' and is the basis of such names as Shawmut and Nashua. It alludes to the fact that this chain of islands is between the bay and the sound. The first liberty assumed by the English with this appropriate name was to abandon it altogether and substitute Elizabeth as the group name. Then they constructed two variations of the Indian word, one, Naushon they applied to the largest island, and Nashawena to the second in size.

The Nashanow islands are fifteen in number and according to Old Hope the name of the largest was Kattamucke, a name found in numerous locations occupied by the Algonquin nation. Its derivation is 'Kehtamaug' and means 'the chief or principal fishing place.' In 1734, in one deed, it was designated as 'Catamuk, the great island or Tarpolin Cove Island.' The name Naushon was adopted after 1753 when the island was purchased by the Bowdoins.

Between Naushon and the mainland are two islands, the west Uncatena and the east Nanomessett.

Uncatena also spelled Uncatincet and Onkatonka and paraphrased by modern fishermen 'Uncle Timmy', was stated by Old Hope to be 'aneck of

land or little island belonging to the great island called Kattamucke.' The derivation seems to be 'Uhque-kat-am-est,' which means 'at the extremity of the greatest fishing-place,' exactly the definition given by Old Hope.

Nanomeset is the island across the narrow passage from 'Woods Hole. Possibly its location is the origin of its name. The probable derivation is 'Nanah-am-esset' and means 'the little fishing-place at the Strait.'

Wepeckets, three in number, are situated in the bay southwest from Woods Hole. Dr. Trumbull stated that 'Wepu' signified 'narrow.' If this is the derivation the name means 'at the Narrows,' referring to the strait at Woods Hole.

Nonohansett in 1688 was described as an island near Tarpolin Cove. The derivation of the name is: 'Munahansett' and means 'at the little island.'

Pasque is found also in the following forms: Pesketenneis and Peshchamesset; the word from which it is derived is the basis of the names Pascamensett, Pasket, Pascoag and Passaic. The meaning is 'to burst asunder or to divide,' but how this applies to Pasque is not clear. To render the name appropriate the island must divide something into two parts; thus Pascoag divides the river into two branches. The exact meaning of the name under consideration is still problematical.

Nashawena is merely a variation of the original group name in another form, the earliest on record is Asnawana.

Cuttyhunk is the name of the westernmost of the group, and is an abbreviation of Poheuttohunkkoh, which means 'to dig up.' The difficulty is to comprehend the local signification of the term. Dr. Trumbull suggested that the definition should be 'cultivated,' but Gosnold found the

island not only barren and sterile but 'uncoupled and disinhabited.' Some of the English sojourners dug up sassafras and carried it away to Europe where it was of considerable value, and the name of the island may refer to this circumstance. But it must be admitted that no satisfactory reason has yet been given for this designation.

On the north side of the island is an enclosure called 'the Pond.' The beach separating this pond from Buzzards bay was formerly called 'Copicut,' which means 'enclosed.' At the west end of the island is a small pond with a little rocky island in the centre where Gosnold's exploring party camped for twenty-two days in May, 1602, and where the monument is now located. The name of this island is 'Quack' which means 'Rock-land.' At the east side of the island is a long narrow neck probably once named 'Canapitset' but this name is now restricted to the strait separating Cuttyhunk from Nashawena. A meaning suggested is 'a sitting on like a bird on a rest,' which may refer to the fact that sea fowl resorted to this point as a resting place.

North of Cuttyhunk is the island called Penikese where Professor Agassiz established a summer school, and now is the location of the leper colony. Other forms of the name are Painochiset, and Puanakesset. A colloquial abbreviation is 'Pune.' The meaning has been suggested 'at the falling or sloping land,' but this is no more distinctive of this island than others, and the meaning of the name is still in doubt.

The principal names of this group have been arranged in rhyme as follows: Naushon, Nonamesset, Onkatonka and Wepecket, Nashawena, Pesquinasse, Cuttyhunk and Penequesse.

Report of the Publication Section

BY

WILLIAM A. WING

Old Dartmouth in contrast to those who dwell within its ancient boundaries has known many sojourners, those "pilgrims and strangers who could tarry but a night." Divers were their calls and diverse their comments!

Perhaps the most enthusiastic was John Brereton of the Gosnold expedition in 1602. "We stood a while like men ravished at the beautie and delicacie of this sweet life; for besides divers cleere Lakes of fresh water—Medowes very large, full of greene grass, even the most woody places doe grow so distinct and apart, one tree from another uupon greene grassie ground, somewhat higher than the Planes, as if nature would show herself above her power artificiael."

Doughty Benjamin Church in his reminiscences of King Philip's War in 1675 graphically states "Appointing the Ruins of John Cooke's House, for the place to meet followed the (Indians') Track until they came near entering a miery Swamp, was told they had discovered an abundance of Indians. Calling one Mr. Dellano (Jonathan Delano) who was acquainted with the ground and the Indian language, were soon among the thickest of the Indians and perceived them gathering Hurtle Berries. An Indian woman told him if they went that way (towards Scouticut Neck) they would all be killed."

In 1703-4 Thomas Story, an early English Friend of "good birth and education," wrote of his visits. "We lodged (by invitation) with Peleg Slocum, where we were easy and well and next day being the first of the week, went to the meeting at Dartmouth, which was large and the blessed truth was over all to the glory of his great name. Had an appointed meeting at the house of one Thomas Hadaway (Hathaway) at a village called Cushnet, north of Dartmouth. He was ensign to a company of militia, but both he and his wife (Hezbibeth) were ready to admit of a meeting as at some other times before.

This is not strange as the wife of Thomas Hathaway was Hepzebeth, daughter of the great Mary Starbuck, at whose home in Nantucket was held the first Friends' meeting by John Richardson, Peleg Slocum and others.

The gentle John Woolman, whose Journal President Eliot has placed on

that small and much discussed shelf-made visits in 1747 and 1769 here, but gives but little detail regarding them. He writes in 1760: "Was at meetings in Dartmouth. From there sailed for Nantucket with Anne Gamet and Mercy Rodman of those parts and several other Friends."

Major John Andre of romantic memory, tells of the British raid in 1778 in rather partisan terms: "We had a few men wounded by people lurking in the swamps and behind stone fences. The Rebels (Americans) carried from Bedford 4 pieces of brass cannon from which they fired a shot or two as they retired on the Boston Road. Three or four men of the enemy (Americans) were found bey-oneted, one an officer. They had fired at the advance party and were not alert enough to get off."

Elias Hicks in 1793 writes: "Attended the monthly meeting at Apponegansett, alias Dartmouth, which proved a hard and painful session, things being much out of order with Friends there, most of the young people and some of those that were older were very raw and ungovernable so that the meeting was much interrupted by an almost continual going in and out, although frequently reproved for it"

Elias Hicks's teachings were somewhat at variance with that meeting, which may account somewhat for the uncomplimentary description. However, "Rode to New Bedford in company with our beloved Friend Thomas Rotch, and stayed at his house, where had a cordial reception and kind entertainment from him and his beloved wife (Charity Rodman), who appeared to be hopeful and young Friends.

The next day we attended their monthly meeting, which proved a very comfortable and edifying season. This monthly meeting was but newly settled and Friends appeared desirous of improvement and there were a number of prominent young Friends in the place.

About 1805-06 John James Audubon took passage to New York on the New Bedford Brig Hope (belonging to Isaac Howland & Son) bound for Nantes. The captain had recently been married, and when the vessel reached the vicinity of New Bedford, Audubon writes: "Leaks were discovered which necessitated a week's de-

lay to repair, for (Audobon avers) the captain had holes bored in the vessel's sides below the water line to gain an excuse to spend a few more days with his bride." We regret that as yet, owing to a lack of certain custom house accounts the name of the captain is not certain.

Audubon says he did not mind the delay, but enjoyed himself extremely rowing about the beautiful harbor.

In after years he knew New Bedford very well and numbered among

his friends here James Arnold, Joseph Grinnell, William T. Russell, and Charles W. Morgan.

These brief extracts of travellers' impressions during two centuries, now almost forgotten footnotes in the history of Old Dartmouth, are but suggestions of what we would preserve by our publication section. Anything in reminiscence, diary, letter or document that may throw a gleam of light upon a hitherto unseen or dimmed bit of Old Dartmouth's history.

Report of the Educational Section

BY

ELIZABETH WATSON

The object of the education section for the past year has been the same as reported at the last annual meeting—the education and entertainment of the school children of Old Dartmouth. From time to time, as it seems practicable, classes of school children and their teachers are invited to the rooms of the society, where the various collections are shown and all possible information given.

Owing to circumstances not many schools have as yet had the opportunity to visit us; but we hope during the spring that much more will be accomplished.

In January the children and teachers of the Westport schools

spent a morning at the rooms, and later over a hundred of the Dartmouth scholars came with their teachers. Both occasions were mutually satisfactory and interesting to the visitors and the committee.

By invitation of the committee, Miss Irene Belanger, of the last graduating class of the High school, read at the December meeting of the society, her Bourne prize essay. It was on local history, and was suggested by a visit to the historical rooms. It was one of the many gratifying results of the efforts of this committee to make the historical collection of value and interest to the younger generation.

Report of the Photograph Section

BY

WILLIAM A. WING

In 1704 John Russell, one of the "Russell Twins," married Rebecca Ricketson in "Friends Way." Their ancient certificate signed by them and the witnesses, early settlers and founders of the Society of Friends in Old Dartmouth, was tucked away for considerably over a century in an antique pocketbook in one of the old-time homesteads. Afterwards it was borrowed by one whom it interested so much it was not returned for years, then later it was given a descendant, who had a photograph made. John and Rebecca Russell's son Daniel wedded in 1740 Edith Howland. Their certificate contained the signatures of the ancestors of many of our members, but most blank places available were utilized for "casting accmpts." It was torn and crumbled and would have been burned as waste paper but was rescued just in time, and has now been photographed.

Elizabeth Russell, the daughter of

John and Rebecca, married Abraham Tucker, Jr. Their son, James Tucker, married in 1741 Ruth Tucker. Their marriage certificate is that of the third generation from John and Rebecca Russell, perhaps an unequalled instance of such papers, one generation after another. On each one has John Russell signed, once as the young bridegroom, in later years that as the father of the groom, and again as the grandfather of his oldest daughter's son. A photograph of this one was made after some urgent solicitation. It is only such that kept this interesting manuscript from being sent to descendants living in San Francisco just before the fire. Its probable fate is too apparent.

Thus after various vicissitudes our photograph section has preserved permanently for the future generations these three ancient documents of so much meaning in the history of Old Dartmouth.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

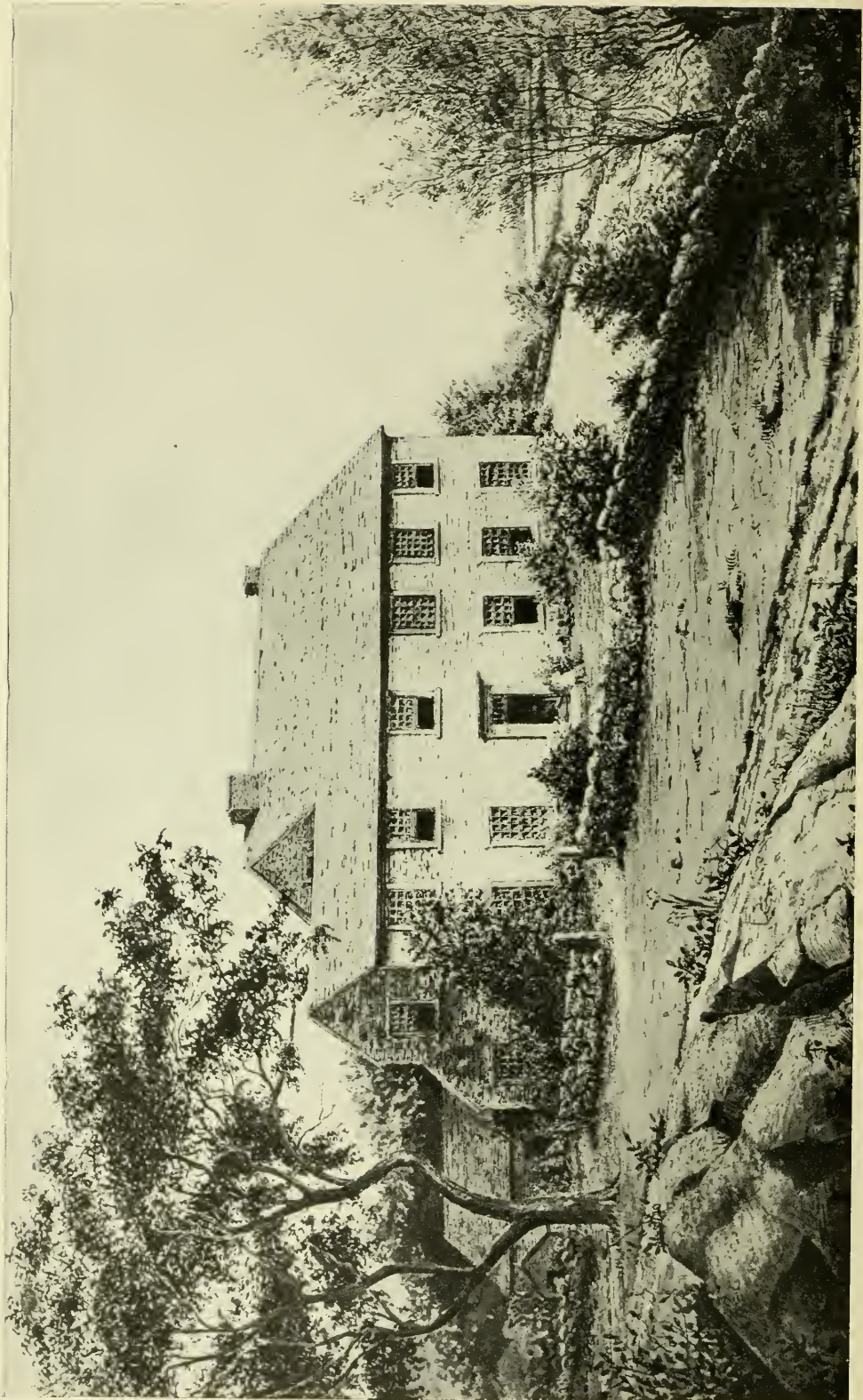
No. 29

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-eighth Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on June 30, 1910.

THE SLOCUM HOUSE AT BARNEY'S JOY

By Henry Howland Crapo

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]



PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTY-EIGHTH MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

JUNE 30, 1910

The Old Dartmouth Historical Society met in their building Thursday evening and the members listened to one of the most interesting papers of the year, read by Henry H. Crapo, and having as its title "The Slocum House at Barney's Joy."

President Edmund Wood, in referring to the outdoor meetings formerly held by the society, said: "These field meetings were interesting, in so far as they were held on the site of some building with historical associations, or with some of the branches of the original settlement of Old Dartmouth.

Since we have come into possession of this building, the society has grown proud, and we have been perfectly satisfied to meet among our own household gods. There is a question as to whether this is entirely wise, and the president would suggest that it might be well to have a

regular meeting outside of our own building. An added enthusiasm is gained by any body meeting with the incentive which surrounds being present on the scene of interesting events, and the opportunity of getting acquainted which accompanies the breaking of bread with each other, even if it is from a picnic basket.

Within a short time, two delegations from other historical societies have visited us. Being as yet a youthful organization, we have not exhausted the places within our own territory, while the older societies have exhausted the treasures near at home.

The members of the Lynn Historical Society who recently visited this city were much impressed with the fact that the Old Dartmouth Historical Society had accomplished so much within so short an existence."

The Slocum House at Barney's Joy

BY

HENRY HOWLAND CRAPO

Whence came "Old Gyles Slocum," an early settler of Portsmouth on the Island of "Acquidneck" I know not. Somebody has hazarded the guess that he "came over" from Somersetshire in 1638. The tradition that he was a son of Anthony Slocum of Taunton I am well satisfied is incorrect. Anthony Slocum, like Ralph Russell, are unverified myths in connection with old Dartmouth. There is no evidence that either of them ever settled in Dartmouth, even for a short period, or that they had aught to do with the establishment of the iron forge at Russells Mills. On the other hand we have definite information about both of these men and their connections with the iron industry of Taunton in 1652 and subsequently. I rather regret that the thrill which, as a child, I often experienced in crossing the stone arched bridge near the old Apponagansett meeting house was unjustified. I had been told that tradition had it that Anthony Slocum, an ancestor of mine, was there tomahawked by the Indians as he was crossing the bridge. Not only am I now convinced that he was no ancestor of mine, and that it is extremely improbable that the old bridge, or any bridge, existed at the time when Anthony Slocum could have been in Dartmouth, but a still more convincing, not to say conclusive, consideration is that this same Anthony Slocum was lordling it as a Count Palatine in Albemarle County, North Carolina, some thirty years after his supposed residence in Dartmouth.

In 1670 Anthony Slocum petitioned the court presided over by the Honorable Peter Carteret, Esquire, governor and commander in chief of Carolina for the return of his hat which he had lost, perhaps, on the voyage from New England to his new home. It was ordered by the court that "he have his hatt delivered by ye fisherman at Roanok, he paying the fee." In 1679 Anthony Slocum appears as an "Esquire," a member of the Palatine Court for the County of Albemarle, and he remained a mem-

ber of this court until at least as late as 1684. In 1680 "Anthony Slocumb, Esqr. one of the Lds Proprs Deputies aged ninety years or thereabouts," made a deposition in regard to some "rotten tobacco."

His will dated in 1688, and probated in 1689, making him almost a centenarian, establishes the fact, apparently beyond question, that he was the same Anthony Slocum who was surveyor of highways in Taunton as late as 1662, since it provides for certain grandchildren by the name of Gilbert concerning whom Anthony had previously written a letter, still preserved, to his "brother-in-law" William Harvey of Taunton. His will is a lengthy document reciting his family relations and devising his property to his children by name, and it is certainly strange indeed that if he had a son Giles in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, he should not even have mentioned him. Moreover, the dates relating to Anthony Slocum and Giles Slocum would not indicate that they were father and son. If they were of kin they were more probably brothers.

Giles Slocum, of Portsmouth, at all events, is the unquestioned progenitor of the Slocums of old Dartmouth. His name appears many times in the records of Portsmouth, where he was certainly living in 1648, and probably earlier, and died in 1682. He and his wife Joan had nine children from two of whom, Peleg the sixth child, and Eliezer the ninth, I descend. Old Giles and his wife were early members of the Society of Friends, and Giles evinced that association of piety and good business sense, common among Friends. He became an extensive land owner in Rhode Island and New Jersey, and purchased three-quarters of an original share in the Dartmouth purchase. By his will, in which he describes himself as "Gyles Slocum now of the Towne of Portsmouth in Road Island and ye King's Providence Plantation of New England in America, sinnar," he devises to his son Peleg one-half of a share and to his son Eliezer one-quarter of a share of "the land lying in Dart-

mouth," and after making provision for his wife and children and grandchildren gives "unto my loving friends the people of God called Quakers foure pounds lawful moneys of New England."

Peleg Slocum had probably been in Dartmouth before his father's death. He took up his father's interest and "sat down" on the neck of land at the confluence of Paskamansett River with Buzzards Bay which has since been known as Slocums Neck. His mansion house stood near the home of Paul Barker and after its demolition was long known as "the old chimney place." Of Peleg Slocum, that "honest publick Friend," and his wife Mary Holder, our secretary has given a most interesting sketch in the third publication of this Society.

Eliezer was ten years younger than his brother Peleg, and the baby of the family. He was born in 1664. As a boy he grew up in his father's home in Portsmouth. The older brothers and sisters had married and left the homestead. Then came to the household a maiden ycleped Elephel Fitzgerald, the daughter, so the story goes, of The Fitzgerald, Earl of Kildare. It is a pretty story so we may as well believe it. This story explains the presence of this blossom from so stately a tree in the rough home of a Quaker pioneer of Rhode Island in the following fashion.

Once upon a time, which, since nobody can dispute us, we might as well say was the year 1670, an English army officer fell in love with a fair Geraldine. The Geraldines as a race had no love for the English, remembering how Lord Thomas, the son of the great earl, known as "Silken Thomas," with his five uncles on February 3rd, 1536, were hung at Tyburn as traitors of the deepest dye because of their fierce resentment of the English domination of Erin. Queen Elizabeth, to be sure, afterwards, repealed the attainder and restored the title and family estates, but the Fitzgeralds, descendants of kings (like most Irishmen), never forgave. And so the earl for the time being, acting the part of "heavy father," forbade the marriage. He probably stamped around the stage thumping his cane. They always do. Whereupon, quite in accord with the conventions of such tales, the young people eloped. They crossed the Atlantic to America, bringing with them a young sister of the bride, our Lady Elephel.

Perhaps the earl, in the manner of Lord Ullin, stood on the shore of the Emerald Isle, and "sore dismayed, through storm and shade his child he

did discover" as she embarked to cross the raging ocean.

"Come back! Come back!" he may have cried

Across the stormy water,
"And I'll forgo my Irish pride,
My daughter! Oh! my daughter!"

The Ullin girl only tried to cross a ferry with her Highland chief, if you remember, yet of the noble father's piercing cries, Tom Campbell says:

"'Twas vain. The loud waves lashed the shore,

Return or aid preventing,
The waters wild went o'er his child
And he was left lamenting."

Fortunately my grandmother Elephel and her sister set forth in more favorable weather, and although she may, perhaps, have left her noble sire lamenting, the waters of the Atlantic did not go "o'er her," and she made a safe landing on this side.

In what manner our little Irish lady was separated from her sister, and came to find a home in the simple household of Giles Slocum, in Portsmouth the tradition sayeth not. "Irish maids" were not commonly employed in those early days, and even in later times "Irish maids" were seldom earls' daughters. None the less it is probable that the Lady Elephel did in fact serve in a "domestic capacity" in the household of the old people whose daughters had all married and left the home.

That the youthful Eliezer should fall in love with the stranger maiden was, of course, a foregone conclusion. That the Quaker parents should be scandalized at the thought of an alliance so unequivocally "out of meeting," the little lady, doubtless being a Romanist, was equally to be foreseen. The young people were sternly chided and forbidden to foregather. There are stories of this Portsmouth courtship which have found their way down through more than two centuries that hint of the incarceration of the maiden in the smoke house,—not at the time, let us hope, in operation for the curing of hams or herrings,—and of the daring Quaker Romeo scaling the roof by night and prating down the chimney of love and plans to hoodwink the old folks.

Possibly he did not say,

"She speaks!

Ah! speak again, bright angel! for
thou art
As glorious as this night, being o'er
my head,
As is a winged messenger of heaven
Unto the white upturned wondering
eyes
Of mortals, that fall back to gaze on
him.
When he bestrides the lazy-pacing
clouds,
And sails upon the bosom of the air!"

Probably he did not use those precise words, yet doubtless he felt them in much the same way as did the inspired Montague. Indeed such glowing panegyrics of the free vault of the heavens might have proved a bit irritating to the fair one imprisoned in her sepulchral and ashy dungeon. And yet if she did not say, "Eliezer, Oh! Wherefore art thou, Eliezer Slocum, the Quaker!" her sentiments were unquestionably identical with those of the fair Capulet. Eliezer appears to have inherited a more practical turn of mind than the lovesick Montague,—since he crawled down the chimney and rescued the maiden. Just how he managed it is not explained. The door was manifestly locked. Perhaps he boosted her up the chimney. At all events these Portsmouth lovers succeeded in arranging matters far more satisfactorily than did their prototypes of Verona. And so they were married before they were twenty and came to Dartmouth and lived happily ever afterwards.

The quarter share which Eliezer derived from old Giles he took up near his brother Peleg, farther down the Neck at a place called "Barne's Joy." He and Elephel were living there, it would seem, prior to 1684. In 1694 Eliezer and his brother Peleg are named as Proprietors of Dartmouth in the confirmatory deed of Governor Bradford. Eliezer's share would have amounted to something like four hundred acres. The title to his homestead farm, however, was not confirmed to him until November 11th, 1710, by the "committee appointed by her Majesty's Justices of ye Quarter Sessions," William Manchester, Samuel Hammond and Benjamin Crane. The farm in the layout is described as the farm on which "the said Eliezer is now living." It contained two hundred and sixty-nine acres. It is described as being "on ye west side of Paskama,sett river on ye eastward side of Barness Joy." It seems that in addition to the rights Eliezer derived from his father he was entitled by purchase to sixty acres in the right of Edward Doty and nine acres in the right of William Bradford, old Plymouth worthies.

In what year he built the mansion house I know not. It seems probable that it was built about 1700. Subsequently not long before Eliezer's death in 1727 he built "a new addition," an ell to the west of the main structure. By what means Eliezer acquired so ample a store of worldly goods is not readily comprehended. It is evident, however, that among the very simple Friends of his acquaintance he was considered re-

markably "well to do." His house was a "mansion." He doubtless had a few silver spoons, possibly a silver tankard, and he had cash. When he died in 1727 his estate was appraised at £5790, 18s, 11d, of which £665 was personal, and this is said to have been exclusive of the gifts he made to his children before his death. This is a large sum for those days. It may be that this appraisal was in "old tenor," a somewhat inflated currency in Massachusetts prior to 1737, yet, even so, it still indicates a marvellous accumulation of wealth for a "yeoman." I regret to say that one of the learned historians of this Society is inclined to believe that my honored ancestor, Peleg Slocum, that conspicuously "honest publick Friend," was not only a farmer, but a merchant "on the wrong side of the law," in fact a smuggler, and that his famous "shalop" was not always used for errands of "religious concernment," but in a very profitable contraband trade. His inventory certainly indicates that he was somewhat mysteriously a "trader." His brother Eliezer very likely may have joined in these mercantile enterprises. Indeed there has always clung about the old farm at Barney's Joy a flavor of slaves and smuggling.

The Lady Elephel, whose hard labor and frugality had doubtless contributed to this store of wealth, comparing herself with her neighbors, may have been justified in feeling that she was "well set up." Yet there was one crisis in her life when her plain home and country fare must have seemed humble indeed in her eyes. It was all a wonderful romance, the coming of that sister who took her from her father's castle and leaving her with Giles Slocum went away to New Amsterdam with her English husband, prospered and became a lady of high fashion and degree. So remarkable in the annals of Slocums Neck is the entry of this great lady in her coach and four, with postillions maybe, that unto this day the tale is told by the great-great-grandchildren of the "Neckers." The progress of the coach through the sandy roads was probably sufficiently slow and majestic to permit of all the neighbors getting a glimpse of the great personage in her silks and flounces, with bepowdered hair, and, I fondly trust, patches upon her fair cheeks, and jewels in her ears. When the ponderous coach bumped down the narrow lane and drew up before the door of the Barney's Joy house, the excitement of its inmates must have been intense. As the Lady Elephel, in her severely demure garb, welcomed her gorgeous sister to her simple home, and they "fell

into each other's arms" (at least I hope they did), I wonder did their thoughts hie back to Kildare and their fathers' castle in the green isle of their birth? The little granddaughter, Ann Slocum, who afterwards married Job Almy and was the grandmother of my great grandmother, Anne Almy Chase Slocum, may have stood entranced by the doorstep as the gloriously bedecked creature entered and was escorted to the "great low room."

Eliezer Slocum died on the "11th day of the first month, called March, in the 13th year of his majestie's King George his reign 1726-7." By his will he gave to his beloved wife Elephel 20 pounds per annum, and all his household goods and furniture, and "one mare which she commonly rides together with her furniture," and two cows "which shall be kept at the proper cost and charge of my executors"; also an Indian girl named Dorcas, and various other items, and then provides as follows, viz.:

"Item. I give and bequeath to Elephel, my beloved wife, the great low room in my dwelling house, with the two bedrooms belonging, together with the chamber over it and the bedrooms belonging thereto, and the garet, and also what part of the new addition she shall choose and one half of the cellar during her natural life." The floor plan of the old house which our secretary has in his possession enables one to understand this very liberal provision for the widow.

His farm he divides into three parts, giving the northerly part of about 100 acres to his son Eliezer, "where his dwelling house stands." This tract in more modern times has been known as the "Henry Allen farm." It was there doubtless that little Ann was born, and there married Job Almy. To his son Ebenezer he gave "that southerly part of my homestead farm on which my dwelling house now stands." This of course refers to the old house. The "middle part" between the northerly and southerly parts, together with stock and money and gear he gave to both sons to be equally divided. Naturally Ebenezer took the southerly portion of this middle part.

There is a rather quaintly phrased section of this will of Eliezer Slocum which I cannot refrain from quoting. After giving to Benjamin Slocum, a grandson, £100 and a salt marsh and a fresh meadow, the will proceeds, "And whereas, Maribah Slocum, the widow of my son Benjamin, being with child, if the same prove a male child, I then give and bequeath to the same male child (as yet not born) a tract of land lying near John Ker-

by's with a dwelling house and orchard thereon, and also a tract of land lying in Aarons Countrey, so called, and also one tract of land lying on the side and joining Coaksett river, and also two acres of meadow lying near Guinney Island, and also two acres of cedar swamp in Quanpoge Swamp, he the said male child paying unto his brother Benjamin £250. But if the child which is not yet born should prove a female child all the inheritance I have here given to it, being a male child, shall be given to Benjamin Slocum, the said Benjamin paying his sister £50 when she becomes 18 years of age." He also gives £200 for the "bringing up" of these two grandchildren.

You may be interested to know that "it" proved to be a male child. His name was John. He married Martha Tillinghast and became a highly respected and prosperous citizen of Newport, Rhode Island, leaving many descendants.

The widow Elephel lived with her son Ebenezer in the homestead for twenty-one years after her husband's death, dying in 1748 and disposing by her will of beds and silver spoons, brass kettles and hand-irons, not forgetting that male grandchild John and his brother Benjamin, and giving the residue of her estate, which was considerable for a widow, to her eldest daughter Meribah Ricketson, wife of William. A year or two later Ebenezer desiring to remove back to Portsmouth, perhaps to be nearer the "meetings," his wife Bathsheba (Hull) joining, conveyed his farm at Barney's Joy of 220 acres to his cousin Peleg Slocum, the father of Williams Slocum, my great grandfather. The date of the deed is March 20th, 1750. The consideration is two thousand pounds. This seems an amazing price to pay for a farm on Slocum's Neck. It is also to be wondered how Peleg Slocum who was but twenty-three years of age was able to put up the price. To be sure he was one of three sons of his father Peleg, who was one of four sons of his father Peleg, that "honest publick friend," whose estate in acres had been considerable, and whose profits from his mysterious "trading" had been large, and yet, even so, two thousand pounds was a "terrible sight of money" in those days.

No doubt the farm at Barney's Joy was an immensely profitable one. The ground had been cleared and cultivated for nearly three-quarters of a century. The fish at the mouth of the Paskamansett were plentiful. They were caught in great quantities, landed at Deep Water Point, and placed thickly on the soil. It was a case of what is now called "intensified fer-

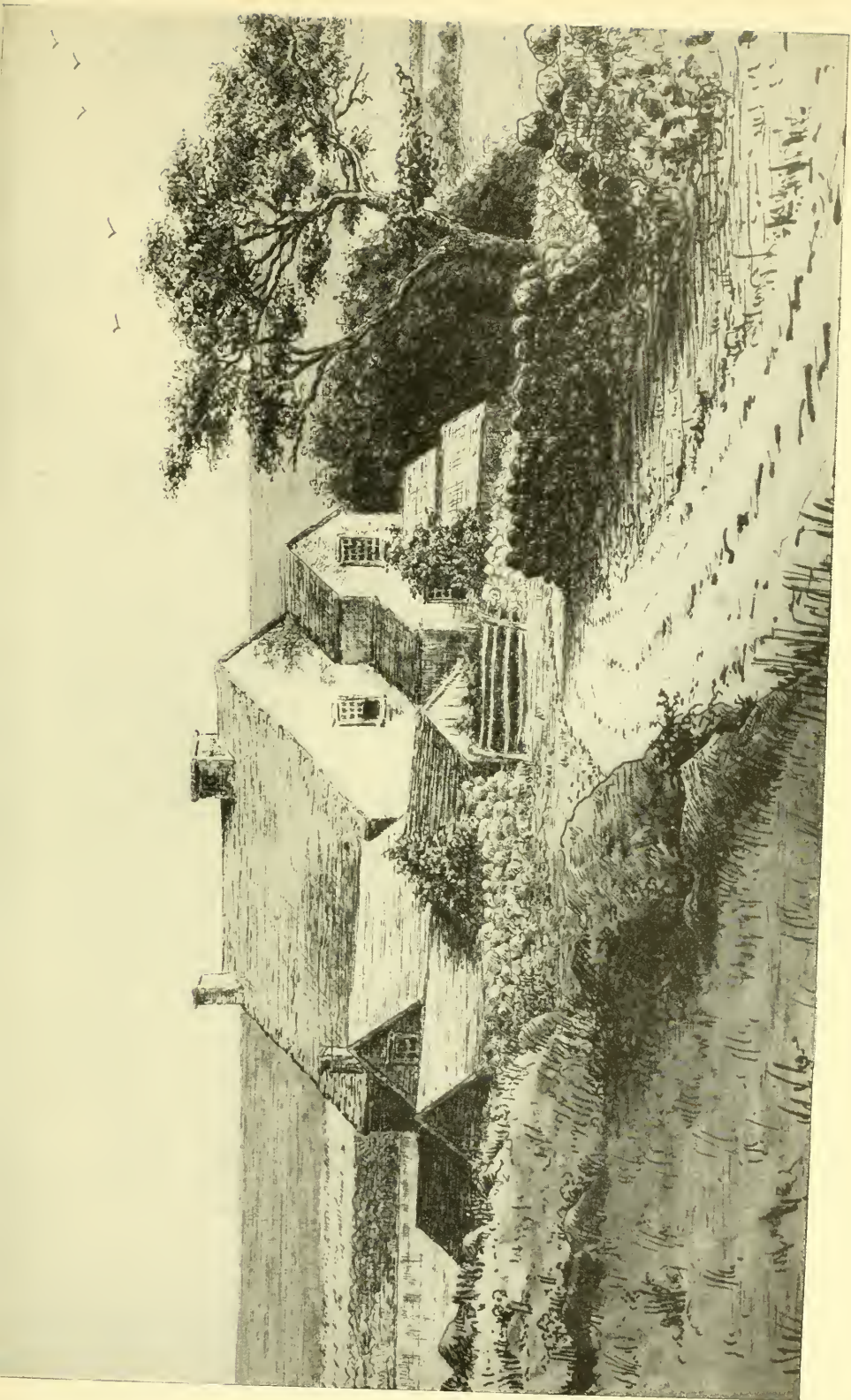
tilization." The crops were doubtless many times as abundant as the cleverest Portuguese of today could raise. Then, too, the Island of Cuttyhunk, at one time known as Slocum's Island, afforded good grazing for the cattle in summer. The cattle were taken over in boats each spring, and in the autumn brought home and the increase sold. Yet admitting the advantages of this farm of two hundred acres, much of which, after all, was ledge, salt marsh, and sand, it is difficult to understand how Peleg Slocum had the courage to pay two thousand pounds for it in the year 1750. Its present value is predicated solely upon its exceptional scenic beauty. It has been a favorite place of sojourn of Robert Swain Gifford, the artist, who has produced its autumn glories on many a canvas. It is not to be supposed, however, that Peleg Slocum purchased the farm for esthetic reasons. He demonstrated, at all events, that he knew what he was about, since he prospered abundantly and lived for many years on the old place keeping up its traditions of opulence.

It was in the old mansion house on this farm that the first president of this society, William Wallace Crapo, was born, in 1830. He remembers the old house well and his grandfather's family who dwelt there. It was substantially the same without doubt at the time when he recalls it as it was when the marvelous coach drew up before it and the two noble Fitzgeralds were reunited. It was a picturesque and pleasing structure well set. A sheltered meadow sloped downward from its southern front to the salt pond and the winding inlets of the river. From the windows one looked out over the meadow, where beneath a huge willow tree was the family coach, to the white sands of Deep Water Point and the long stretch of Allen's Beach, and, beyond, to the waters of Buzzards Bay as they merge with the ocean. The main portion of the house was of two stories with an ample garret above, the gables facing east and west. The front door, plain in design yet with a certain dignity, was at what was the west end of the southern front of the original structure, but after the "new addition" in 1720 it was about a third of the way along the main facade with two windows to the west

and three to the east. The entrance hall was small with a narrow winding stairway leading to the big chamber above, and the "bedrooms belonging thereto," the large stack chimney, behind, taking up far more room than the hall. To the right as one entered was "the great low room" from which led two chambers. To the left was a good-sized room which in later days was called the "parlor."

Behind the "great low room" was a still larger room, the kitchen and living room, the most interesting of the apartments. The logs in the long fireplace were always burning, since here all the family cooking was done on the coals and by pots hung to the cranes, and in the brick oven by the side. Above the fireplace was a panel some six feet by four, hewn from a single board, which today is almost the only relic of the structure which has been preserved. On this panel hung the musket and the powder horns ready to be seized at alarm. On the west side of the room was a huge meal chest. In the northwest corner stood a black oak high clock with Chinese lacquer panels which now stands in Mr. Crapo's house in New Bedford. This clock was buried in the barn meadow with the silver and valuables packed in its ample case, when the British man-of-war Nimrod was cruising along the shore in the War of 1812. In the northeast corner was an ample pantry closet which must have held many dainties during its long service. Off from the living room was another good-sized bedroom. Behind was the covered stoop with the cheese press. Behind this there were several low shed-like additions which gave a feeling of considerable size to the whole structure.

After the death of Williams Slocum, my great grandfather, the place fell into the possession of a descendant who was far from carrying on the traditions of prosperity of the family, and the place quickly fell into decay. It was almost a ruin in 1887 when I visited it and made the little etching which our secretary has. In 1900 the house was torn down and now only the cellar remains to mark the spot where Eliezer Slocum, the Quaker, and the Lady Elephel lived their lives of love and happiness two centuries ago.



ILLUSTRATIONS.

The rear view of the house is reproduced from a sketch on copper made by Henry H. Crapo in 1887 directly from the structure. The front view is reproduced from a drawing made by Mr. Crapo from data afforded by a water-color sketch of William A. Wall, painted 1865-1870, and from photographs taken shortly before the demolition of the house.

“This old New England-born romance.”

Holmes.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 30

Being the proceedings of the Twenty-ninth Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on September 22, 1910.

ABRAHAM AND ZERVIAH (RICKETSON) SMITH
AND THEIR NINETEEN CHILDREN

By Rebecca Williams Hawes

[NOTE.—The "Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches" will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson's Book Store.]



ABRAHAM SMITH



ZERVIAH RICKETSON SMITH

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

TWENTY-NINTH MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD
MASSACHUSETTS

SEPTEMBER 22, 1910

President Edmund Wood, in presiding said:

"We have met tonight for our regular quarterly meeting. The period since our last meeting has been a quiet one for this society.

This quiet almost seems to be accented by the bustle which surrounds us.

New Bedford is passing through a period of great industrial activity. The face of the city seems to change over night. Every issue of our newspapers tell of the starting of some new industry, or the expansion of some present one. The older citizen bewails the passing of the ancient landmarks, and regrets the fragrant orchards and green fields of his youth, now crowded with tall and monotonous tenement houses. And the city is growing in wealth, and the evidences of it and our multiplying population almost equals the guesses and predictions of our most sanguine boomers.

The character of this population is changing more rapidly than we can realize. The New Bedford of today is all that many of our citizens remember, and is all that some of them think worth remembering. They cry out, 'Better the years 1909 and 1910 in New Bedford's history than a cycle of Old Dartmouth.'

Some of us here tonight are all day long in the midst of this ex-

citing bustle and restless activity. We are participating in New Bedford's growth and have a lively faith in its continued advancement. We have had our shoulder to the wheel all day, striving even to accelerate the pace of building expansion. The present absorbs us, and our absorption is intense.

When we enter the atmosphere of this building we almost experience a shock. But it is a healthy shock. It takes us a few moments to readjust the focus, to put on our distance lenses and distinguish things that are not directly before our noses. Gradually as we breathe longer the quiet atmosphere of this place our perspective changes and we are able to project the crowding foreground of our vision and discern again the serene and beautiful background of New Bedford life.

We are not disloyal to the glory of the advancing present; but we shall be better citizens tomorrow because of this lapse tonight into the past, and because of the correcter vision we thus gain of the proportions of our picture and the relative values of the things we are striving after."

Miss Hawes had on view an interesting exhibit of relics of the Family of Abraham and Zerviah (Ricketson) Smith.

Abraham and Zerviah (Ricketson) Smith and their Nineteen Children.

(A TYPICAL NEW ENGLAND FAMILY)

BY

REBECCA WILLIAMS HAWES

I—ANCESTRAL

Fore-Word.

A few years ago, I was introduced to a genealogist who was collecting records of the Ricketson family of Dartmouth, as "one who knew more about Abraham and Zerviah Ricketson and their nineteen children than any other person living." I was able to furnish her, then, with many data of value, and later agreed, at the request of this Society, to gather all material I could in connection with this typical New England family for publication in its records.

Of the nineteen children, four died in infancy; of the fifteen living to maturity, I have seen and distinctly remember twelve, including the oldest and the youngest. My final decision as to the broad scope of this paper was determined after reading an address given in Boston at the 65th anniversary of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, by Charles K. Bolton, treasurer of that society, on "The New Genealogy." That address should be read before this and every other genealogical society in our land. It is a plea for developing genealogy as a science,—not a dead, dry record of names and dates, or, at best, including mere data of military and political service and distinction. He says:

The present genealogy is weak in that it does not closely ally itself with other fields of serious research. If it is to receive honor from the historian, the anthropologist or the sociologist, it must contribute something to the sciences into which these men delve. For any true science does contribute to every other true science, but, in so far as it contributes merely to vanity and self satisfaction it is unworthy to rank as science."

And he appeals for a genealogy that shall include and record details of family traits, habits, development, education, heredity, modes of living, etc., that shall make it no longer a dead thing, but alive with human and scientific interest. He further says:

"Has any genealogist ever taken the average size of his ancestral families and then examined those children where the family group exceeds the normal to see whether the group tendency is toward genius or degeneracy? Shall we not some day find a great grandson who will take more pride in the fact that his log cabin ancestor owned a copy of *Paradise Lost*, than that he fought at *Louisburg*? There is a theory deduced from the *English Dictionary of National Biography* that the oldest child has a much greater likelihood of a distinguished career than its brothers and sisters; next to him in importance comes the youngest child."

It is said that the family of Abraham and Zerviah Smith is the largest one ever born in Dartmouth. Surely, here is a group of abnormal size with which to make an experiment along the lines suggested. To make this record of more value to the descendants, I have gone back to its Mayflower-Pilgrim beginning, introducing it by details of the Pilgrim colony and its founders, quoted from the noble address of Dr. Eliot at the dedication of the Pilgrim monument at Provincetown, on August 5, 1910.

From President Eliot's Address.

"In July, 1623, the number of Pilgrims who had reached America was, in all, about 233, but at the close of that year there were living at Plymouth, including the children and

servants, not more than 183 of these immigrants who had suffered for conscience sake. It is an inspiring instance of immense moral and material results being brought about by a small group of devoted men and women whose leading motives were spiritual and religious. These first comers put their opinions and ideas into practice with marvellous consistency. Their works were humble, their lives simple and obscure, their worldly success but small, their fears many and pressing, and their vision of the future limited and dim; but they were inspired by a love of freedom, and they wanted all sorts of freedom—of thought, of the press, of labor, of trade, of education and of worship. They were genuine pioneers of liberty, and the history of the world since the anchor of the Mayflower was dropped in Cape Cod harbor demonstrates that the fruits and issues of their pioneering are the most prodigious in all history. It does not matter that there were but 41 men to take part in the first proceedings. It was a small beginning, but who can comprehend or describe the immensity of the outcome. One of their first declarations was 'We are knit together in a body, in a most strict and sacred bond and covenant of the Lord, of the violation whereof we make great conscience, and by virtue whereof we do hold ourselves straightly tied to all care of each others good, and of the whole by every one, and so mutually.' The Pilgrims were pioneers in the practice of industrial and financial co-operation. For seven years, all profits and benefits got by trade, fishing or any other means, remained in common stock, and from this common stock all were to have meat, drink, wearing apparel and all provisions. At the end of the seven years the capital and profits, viz.—the houses, lands, goods and chattels, were divided equally between the 'adventurers'—those who furnished money, and the 'planters' or workers. One share each was allotted to women, children above sixteen and servants. At the end of seven years every planter was to own the house and garden occupied by him. During the seven years every planter was to work four days in each week for the colony and two for himself and his family. No hereditary titles or privileges ever existed among them. All the able-bodied men brought over by the Mayflower, the Fortune and the Anne worked hard with their hands, and all men bore arms as a matter of course. The assignment of quarters in the Mayflower and Speedwell, at the sailing of the Pilgrims from Southampton, illustrates the demo-

cratic practices of the colonists. To prevent any suspicion of favoritism, some of the leaders went in the narrow quarters of the sixty-ton Speedwell, a vessel only one-third the size of the Mayflower,—yet no community ever recognized its leaders more frankly or followed them better. The original company of adventurers and planters was never a well-conducted, prosperous commercial organization, and in two generations they found themselves making part of the new Royal Province of Massachusetts and under the rule of a royal governor. We have great difficulty in realizing that the original Pilgrims had no vision at all of the ultimate triumph, on a prodigious scale, of the social and governmental principles in support of which they left home and country and struggled all their lives to establish new homes and a new social order on the edge of an unexplored wilderness. We honor them, largely, because of their sacrifices, dangers and labors, so bravely endured, without any knowledge of the issues of their endurance and devotion."

How different is this record from that described by a historian of Plymouth, who says: "How striking is the contrast between the voyages of Carver and of Winthrop. The Plymouth colonists, hunted and imprisoned like felons, and glad to escape by artifice and stealth into Holland, finally embarked for America, unknown, unhonored and unsung. The Massachusetts Bay colonists set out in a grand array, filling a fleet of eleven ships, the admiral of the fleet, in the *Arabella*, carrying 52 seamen and twenty pieces of ordnance. As they sailed by the fort at Yarmouth, England, they were saluted by its royal guns as 'adventurers' whose enterprise, under the broad seal of the king, would reflect honor and renown on the British empire."

Another fine tribute, lately published, says: "If we have modified some of their theological notions, we have not found ourselves able profitably to dispense with the finer qualities of the Pilgrim character. We cannot do without their inexorable sense of justice, of the equality of every man with every other, of the little vital difference there is in the sight of God between the best of us and the most hardened criminal. If we are to realize the loftiest ideals as a nation or as individuals, we cannot far depart from the established ways of our forefathers; we must conserve the Pilgrim tradition; we must keep alive the memories of the Pilgrims, not alone in monuments of granite, but in our daily performance as living men."

Quakers.

The Pilgrims of the Mayflower were followed by Quaker Pilgrims from England, who left the first settlement at Plymouth and settled at Duxbury. From there, Arthur and Henry Howland, brothers of John of the Mayflower, who was not a Quaker, moved to Dartmouth and were among the first founders of the faith which became the ruling power in the first settlement at Apponagansett and others adjoining. There the first Friends' meeting house was built in 1698-1699. While still a resident of Marshfield, near Duxbury, Arthur Howland was brought many times before the Plymouth court and fined for holding Quaker meetings in his house, etc. The History of Bristol County says, "The same causes that sent to our shores the Pilgrim pioneers impelled the persecuted Quakers to seek shelter here." Ellis's History of New Bedford says: "It is well established that, notwithstanding the attitude of the Quakers in military affairs, they were, as a people, loyal, in their sympathies, to the cause of freedom, and there are several cases on record where they rendered military service. Whatever may be said of them in regard to their relations to the bearing of arms, it must be admitted that they exercised a healthy and benign influence in times of peace, and that their societies, scattered throughout the land, were wellsprings of pure and enlightened thought. They fostered and encouraged education and lent their political influence in modifying many of the cruel punishments meted out to the criminal classes. Their societies were the unswerving friends of the slave. The records of Dartmouth Monthly Meeting mention a number of cases where some of the members were rebuked and others disowned for abusing Indians and beating their slaves!"

It is from two members of this original band of Quaker-Pilgrim stock that we have the record which I have prepared for their descendants and this society—a duty and a privilege which I gratefully appreciate. Starting at Plymouth Rock, I have followed the "trail" west, via San Francisco, to the Hawaiian Islands, and have set down nothing that I have not verified by copies of all records and my own personal knowledge. These two men were John Smith and William Ricketson.

First John Smith of Dartmouth—Born in England in 1618; it is not recorded when he arrived in Plymouth, but when about eleven years old he became apprenticed to Edward Dotey of the Mayflower for full term of ten years.

1633. Plymouth Court, Winslow, Governor.

The record says:

"That whereas John Smith, being in a great extremite formerly, and to be freed of the same, bound himself as an apprentice to Edward Dotey for the term of ten years,—upon the petition of said John Smith, the court took the matter into hearing; and finding the said Edward had disbursed but little for him, freed said John Smith from his covenant of ten years, and bound him to make up the term he had already served the said Edward for the full term of five years, and to the end thereof; the said Edward to give him double apparel, and so be free of each other."

He then became a "boatman" or able seaman. On June 5, 1651, he was admitted as a "freeman of Plymouth," and the same day was sworn on the grand jury; 1652, chosen on coroner's jury; 1653, January, sailed on expedition to "fight at Manhattoes" but, as peace was declared, he soon returned to his family.

He had married, Jan. 4, 1648, Deborah, daughter of Arthur Howland of Marshfield, entered into their faith of Friends or Quakers, and, with them, paid the penalty for "holding Quaker meetings" and "entertayning foreign Friends." Arthur Howland removed to Dartmouth from Marshfield, also his brother Henry; they were brothers of John Howland of the Mayflower, and were both English Quakers, coming in the "James" in 1623.

In spite of difficulties, John Smith prospered, and was assigned "a house, messuage and garden spot on ye north side of North street, Plymouth, which he exchanged with Edward Doty, Jr., son of his former master, for lands in Apponeganset, Dartmouth." I have copy of Plymouth record of this deed, dated Oct. 6, 1665, and he probably took possession then. He was already recorded as having an "interest" in Apponegansett in 1663, and his final holdings equaled "1,200 acres or more." The corporate existence of Dartmouth dates from 1664. There were 34 whole "shares" originally divided into three "divisions" of 800-500-500 acres each, "and had lots of land left." The land sold to John Smith by Edward Doty was "two seavenths, or two parts of seaven, of a whole share, with all and singular the woods, waters, meadow lands, immunities, appurtenances and proffits whatsoever." On this land he built his home on what is known on the old maps as "Smith's Neck, lying south of Rock-a-dunder Road." Why this locality still holds his name is

apparent from the fact that the title to nearly all that strip of land, for most of the time since 1665, has been held in the name of Smith.

The Old Homestead Hill meadow burial place dates from Jan. 17, 1692, the day of the burial of John Smith. His will, of which I have a copy, was probated at Taunton, Jan. 26th, 1694. In this burial place are laid seven successive generations of his descendants, and one of the eighth generation is now in possession.

He married, 2nd, Ruhamah Kirby, and was the father of thirteen children. There are no records of any public service by him in Dartmouth before 1672, when he was appointed surveyor of highways. Meanwhile, he had built his home, cleared his farm and cultivated it, and had endured all the privations and dangers of a pioneer, the perils of savage warfare and persecution for "conscience sake." On March 4, 1663, he was appointed "Lieutenant" of a company raised for protection against the Indians. The record of Plymouth court on this date says he was the first man to receive a military commission, and also a civil commission from the governor and court in and for the township of Plymouth. He was on duty when the Indian war broke out in Dartmouth, June, 1665. He was later among those appointed to distribute funds raised for relief of sufferers after the Indian war.

Drake's History says: "They (the Indians) burnt nearly thirty houses in Dartmouth, killing many people after a barbarous manner." Increase Mather's account says: "Dartmouth did they burn with fire and barbarously murdered both men and women," and gives harrowing details of torture and scalping. Ellis's History says: "Those who escaped the tomahawk and scalping knife fled to the garrisons for protection." The inhabitants of Apponagansett probably took refuge in the Russell garrison about a mile above the mouth of the river; the cellars are still clearly defined, indicating that the house was about twenty feet square, with an "ell" on the south about ten feet square. Dartmouth was not called upon for soldiers by the Plymouth authorities during King Philip's war, because of the maintenance of the garrisons by the settlers, and for several years after peace had been declared, the town was exempted from taxation.

The practical organization of the township of Dartmouth dates from its first town meeting, May 22, 1674. After its destruction in 1675 and the return of the settlers to their farms, John Smith was appointed, 1675, "viewer of fences" to establish bound-

daries. At a town meeting held June 20th, 1678, the first that finds record after the attack, the term of release from taxation, three years, having expired, John Smith, John Russell and Peleg Shearman were chosen as "raters." This record is on the second page of the oldest original records of Dartmouth now in existence. The functions of the town were fully resumed in 1679, and a full list of officials was chosen. The township seems now to have settled into a permanent organization, and its steady development is seen from the existing records. At a town meeting in 1684, John Smith and twelve others "took the oath of fidelity, or freeman's oath." He was then 66 years old, and no other public record of him is found before his death in 1692. In his will, dated June 5th, 1691, only six months before his death, John Smith appoints his wife and his oldest son, Deliverance, as executors. This son took the freeman's oath at the same time as his father, in 1684, and appears to have been his successor as head of the family. John Smith having, according to his will "given and conveyed" portions of his land to his five daughters, added for each "one cow and two ewe sheep"—all stock remaining to be "managed and maintained" for his wife by their sons Judah and Gershom Smith. The homestead and all "movables" were given to said wife for her life, and these two sons evidently remained there, or near, until her death. Then the will divided all "undevise'd" lands among his six sons, with ten acres to an orphan grandson. He remained firm in the Quaker faith, rendering it faithful service, and all his children and grandchildren were equally loyal to it.

Smith Family.

(2) Gershom Smith, 2nd son of John Smith, born ——. Married Rebecca Ripley, June 6, 1695. Died April 3, 1718.

I find few records of this ancestor, and he only survived his father sixteen years. He lived on land at Smith's Neck, inherited by him, but the final survey was not made until 1710, when the "propriators" of Dartmouth were compelled by a court decree "to make a complete distribution of all lands." The portion at the end of the "point" was given to oldest son Hezekiah; north of this were farms of Gershom and Judah; the records say "these were parts of the homestead of their father, John Smith, as early as 1672, when he was surveyor of the town." Gershom evidently was a faithful "Friend," but did not live to bear such testimony to his faith as

his brothers who outlived him and entered upon their struggle against "Church and State" after the Indian war, before the Revolution, true descendants of the men of whom it was said, "They did not fear the Indian, if they could only escape the Puritan."

(3) Jonathan Smith, son of Gershom and Rebecca Ripley, was born May 15, 1706. Married Phebe Russell.

(4) Jonathan, Jr., born April 18, 1727. Married Sylvia, daughter of Barnabas and Rebekah Howland, March 11, 1748. I have certified copy of marriage certificate signed in Friends' meeting by 32 relatives and friends. He was a blacksmith, and the first of the family, I find, who lived in New Bedford. There is a record of his house, a low one-story building, built and occupied at the "North End," on N. Second street, about 1772. His shop stood near Jonathan, Jr., was born in Apponagansett, and probably served his apprenticeship in the "Bloomery" established by Jas. and Henry Leonard and Ralph Leonard at Raynham, or at the branch of Captain Jas. Leonard at the site of N. Easton village, which was opened in 1723 and became well known later as the Elisha Leonard forge. The latter, before 1771, built a forge on land deeded to him in 1765. It is claimed that here steel was first made in this country, also that firearms were made here before and during the Revolution. At Furnace Village in a forge started in 1751, owned by Samuel Leonard and others of Taunton, cannon were made for the army of the Revolution. Jonathan Smith, Jr., was a skilled workman in this branch of his trade, and from him was transmitted to his son Abraham the exceptional mechanical gifts which have been inherited by several generations of his descendants.

Jonathan, Jr., died Oct. 27th, 1792, aged 65.

Sylvia Howland, his wife, died —, 1822, aged 90.

(5) Abraham Smith, son of Jonathan, Jr., and Sylvia Smith, the subject of this record, born March 20, 1747, died March 24, 1826, aged 79 years. Married Zerviah Ricketson, Oct. 6, 1769. They had 19 children, the largest family ever raised in Dartmouth.

I add here records of two other sons of John (1)—as being illustrative of the history of their generation.

(1) John, (2) Deliverance Smith, oldest son of John, was executor of his father's will and evidently his successor as head of the family. There

is record of land "surveyed and set off" to him by Her Majesty's commissioners, 5 mo. 25, 1711. This was in addition to that inherited from his father which included the homestead now in possession of the 8th generation; the record says there were "two divisions, 1600 acres, with allowance for swamps and afterwards more lands." There are nineteen items of record in the proceeding of the Dartmouth town meeting concerning Deliverance Smith, in regard to his services in surveying, town matters, and building of Apponegansett meeting house. The longest one records his imprisonment in Bristol County jail, because he could not, for conscience sake, assess the sum of £60 annexed to the queen's tax, for the support of a hireling ministry. "Friends, having sympathized with him in his sufferings, do appoint his brother Judah Smith and Benj. Howland to procure a hand to manage said Delv. Smith's business whilst he is a prisoner on acct' of trouble and Friends, and to engage him his wages, and the Monthly meeting to reimburse the same." A later entry records the payment of this money. A local historian says, "By a freak of fate, he was committed to a jail which had been built in part with money collected by his father, John Smith."

He was a steadfast and consistent member of the Quaker faith of his parents and grandparents, and in his generation bore frequent "testimony" to his religious belief. In 1709 he was impressed for military service in Canada, refused and was taken with others before Governor Dudley and discharged. He had ten children, whose descendants are well represented in the Tucker and Crapo families of the county. He died June 20, 1729, and was buried in the Old Homestead hill burial place at Smith's Neck.

Eliashub Smith, (2), 4th son of John. (1) born.

A share of Dartmouth lands given June 20, 1684, to Henry Tucker of Milton, "to build a grist mill" was inherited by his son Abm. who sold "land and all mill interests" to Eliashub Smith, son of John Smith; deed dated May 4, 1707. The records say, "he was a young man, and from that time the place was called 'Smith's Mills,' and it still retains the name." "He married Dinah Allen in Friends' meeting, June 24, 1704. His steady habits and the Society of Friends helped him to prosperity in his business for 60 years, and, having become aged, he turned the mills over to his son, Joseph, having faithfully served his day and generation."

Ricketson Family.

(1) William Ricketson came to Dartmouth from Portsmouth, R. I., in 1684. Records, recently printed, prove that he resided and operated a mill in Portsmouth in the years 1682-1683, and his deeds of the Dartmouth farm are dated 1684; his house, still standing, was built by him personally and probably in that year. This house is fully described in papers published by this Society; and a picture of it is hung in this building; one competent historian calls it "a magnificent house, a palace for those days; the workmanship and material of the chimney and the mantelpiece (which is now a valued possession of this Society) proclaim the builder a master in his trade." He established a saw mill on the Westport river near by, where he doubtless prepared the material for his house.

He married Elizabeth, daughter of Adam Mott of Rhode Island, and died March 1, 1691. She survived him many years and married again.

(2) Jonathan, son of William and Elizabeth, died Oct. 16, 1768, aged 80 years, 7 months. Married Abigail Howland, who died Jan. 15, 1769.

(3) John, son of Jonathan and Abigail, died May 8, 1794, aged 74. Married Phebe Russell, who died Nov. 3, 1770.

(4) Zerviah, daughter of John and Phebe Russell, born Jan. 21, 1751, died Dec. 29, 1817.

"I have enjoyed through life the advantage of being, in the true sense, 'well born.' My parents were good and wise, honorable and honored, sound in body and mind."

Frances Power Cobbe.

Abraham Smith.

Abraham Smith, born March 30, 1747, died March 24, 1826.

Zerviah Ricketson, born Jan. 21, 1751, died Dec. 29, 1817.

Married Oct. 6, 1769, and had 19 children:

1. Asa, born May 24, 1770; married Oct. 18, 1792; died Feb. 24, 1849.

2. Elihu, born Aug. 9, 1771; married March 10, 1801; died Oct. 3, 1825.

3. Obed, born Nov. 22, 1772; married May 14, 1797; died April 17, 1831.

4. Phebe, born Oct. 27, 1773; married Oct. 18, 1795; died June 2, 1855.

5. Sylvia, born Dec. 5, 1774; died October, 1775.

6. Stephen, born Oct. 25, 1776; married Sept. 21, 1814; died April 23, 1854.

7. Rufus, born Feb. 23, 1778; died July 20, 1779.

8. Mary, born July 9, 1779; married Feb. 28, 1805; died June 26, 1855.

9. Judith, born April 4, 1781; died July 17, 1786.

10. Thomas, born Jan. 30, 1783; died Jan. 5, 1785.

11. Zerviah, born May 28, 1784; married June 17, 1808; died Dec. 5, 1857.

12. Abigail, born May 1, 1786; married May 4, 1826; died March 9, 1863.

13. Abraham, Jr., born Jan. 3, 1788; died Dec. 24, 1811.

14. Rebecca, born June 5, 1789; married Feb. 18, 1808; died Dec. 26, 1873.

15. Sarah, born Sept. 30, 1790; died May 26, 1877.

16. Isaac, born July 26, 1792; married Jan. 6, 1837; died July 31, 1860.

17. Elizabeth, born Dec. 27, 1793; married Jan. 21, 1825; died April 7, 1881.

18. Deborah, born Feb. 12, 1796; married Nov. 1, 1821; died May 1, 1879.

19. Lydia, born Sept. 2, 1797; married Dec. 5, 1821; died Jan. 1, 1872.

Of these four daughters and three sons left children.

Abraham Smith served his apprenticeship in his father's blacksmith shop and married when 22 years old. About 1770, he built and occupied a house on North Water street and a shop on north side of Centre street, a few rods east of North Water street, in sight of the present building of Old Dartmouth Society. In the rooms of this Society hangs a picture of this forge, painted from memory by Wm. A. Wall in 1815. This shop was burned in the destruction of the town by the British in 1778 and rebuilt on the same spot. According to the old city maps, he acquired title to this land in 1770. In 1772 he held the title to land on North Second street, north of Mill street, where his father, Jonathan, Jr., lived, and had built a home; and again in 1773 he bought land on Middle street, near Water street, and, in 1796, land for wharf at foot of that street, now covered by the bridge to Fairhaven. There his last home was built. He was known from the first as a skilled workman, and "forging," in those days, included all the highest grades of iron work, muskets, tools, as well as the heavier chains, anchors and fixtures for the shipyards, then beginning to turn out the largest vessels of those days. His was the largest forge of the growing town, and in time he trained there his own six sons and thirteen apprentices, sons

of friends and neighbors. He soon became a ship owner, and at the beginning of the Revolution his name appears among "owners of vessels ordered not to leave the colony" (as privateers), but this restriction was revoked by orders issued by General Washington, in 1775. In that year he gave bonds, as part owner, for brig *Kezia* "bound on a whaling voyage." Although a firm and consistent Quaker, he promptly joined those who definitely resisted the policies of Great Britain and the Massachusetts "loyalists" before the Revolution, and was chosen on a town committee appointed July 18, 1774, to obtain "the sense of the meeting on the public situation." This committee reported that they were "grieved at the necessity of doing anything unfriendly to Great Britain, but resolved not to purchase goods made in Great Britain or Ireland, or any foreign teas, etc." As a further result of this meeting, a committee was appointed to attend the 1st County congress, held at Taunton, Sept. 26, 1774, and on Jan. 7th, 1775, in town meeting, according to the advice of this congress, a committee of correspondence of twenty-one persons was appointed, and Abraham Smith was among the number. At this first congress in Taunton, delegates were chosen to the First Provincial congress to be convened at Worcester, Oct. 5, 1774. In spite of great opposition, two later Provincial congresses were held, with John Hancock as president. At the time of the first congress, in Worcester, a convention of blacksmiths was held there by 43 members of the craft. They resolved "not to do any blacksmith work for the tories" and requested "all artificers to call meetings of their crafts and adopt like measures." Committees of the later congresses advised the raising of a continental army and reported the number of militia available, stores of ammunition, etc., then held at Concord, but a "great lack of fire-arms," and sent out a call for "artificers of Massachusetts" to come to Boston and manufacture them for the troops of which Washington took command in 1775. At this time Abraham Smith, with several apprentices, was working hard to support his family of five small children. Until I discovered this "call," printed in a small local history of Worcester county, none of his descendants ever knew why he suddenly left his home, "located" near Boston, and began making the needed weapons. It was a personal call to him, which he followed, much to the surprise and distress of his relatives and his fellow members in the Friends meeting. It

is not known how long he remained there, but the record of the Dartmouth meeting, dated 8 mo. 26, 1776, of which I have a certified copy, says: "We are informed that Abraham Smith hath been assisting or fitting warlike implements, also paid money toward building a fort, and hath been Laboured with by friends and Rather Justified s'd conduct—therefore we appoint our friends Caleb Russell, John Williams, William Mosher and Joseph Tucker, Jr., to Labour further with s'd Smith, and make report next mo. meeting." At said meeting, 9 mo. 16, 1776, the record says, "The greater part of the Committee, appointed to labour with Abm. Smith, Report that they have Discharged themselves in that matter, and s'd Smith Justified his conduct therein; therefore Samuel Smith is appointed to Draw a Testimony against him and bring to next mo. meeting, Caleb Russell is appointed to Inform him thereof and Report to next mo. meeting." The record of meeting, 12 mo., 1776, says: "The clerk reports he hath Read the testimony against Abraham Smith, as ordered Last mo. meeting,— s'd paper is as followeth:

"Whereas Abraham Smith having made Profession with us, and under the care of this meeting, But has so far Departed from the way of Truth and the Testimony thereof as to be found in joining with, & measurably supporting of war, or preparation for the same, particularly the s'd Smith hath paid money toward building of a fort, & also in fitting some warlike Implements,—and having been Tenderly Laboured with by friends to Desist from and Condemn s'd conduct—but our Labour therein not obtaining the Desired Effect, But he still Justifying the same, this meeting, therefore, being concerned for the maintaining our Testimony, against all outward wars & fighting, and preparation for the same, do give this forth as a testimony against him, hereby disowning him, the s'd A. Smith from being a member of our society, & from under the care of this meeting, until by unfeigned Repentance & Return from the Error of his ways, he shall be Restored to the way of truth.

"Given forth & signed on behalf of our mo. meeting held in Dartmouth, 21st 10 mo. 1776.

"William Anthony, Jr., Clerk."

There is no record of his having "repented," but his name is later recorded as a member of the meeting. On his return from his loyal work in Boston, he continued his trade and fulfilled many duties as a good citizen. In June, 1778, he was one of

the signers to a petition to the general court, asking for the division of the town, also for better military protection, representing that "the harbor on Acushnet river is the only one between Cape Cod & North Carolina in control of Americans, and there are 50 vessels there that need protection." As a consequence, Col. Crafts was ordered to New Bedford with 50 men and 4 field pieces, in orders of Col. Edward Pope. A few months later the town was burned by the British, and all wharves and shipping burned. With his forge destroyed, his business ruined, and with a family of six children to support (the oldest was then ten years old), he was obliged to apply for an "apportionment" "from the sum of £1,200 allowed by the Commonwealth to the sufferers at New Bedford." I find on record that my great, great grandfather, Samuel Hawes of Acushnet, whose property escaped destruction, was one of those appointed to distribute this money. Gradually re-establishing his business, during the re-building of the town, he again prospered, and in 1796 was appointed one of the first fire wardens, holding the office six years. During the next ten years he was an indomitable worker, and then gave up the forge to his remaining sons, who in turn left it in other hands, and all finally left New Bedford to seek their fortunes elsewhere. In 1806 he was appointed the second postmaster of New Bedford, and held the office for 20 years, in the homestead on Middle street, built in 1794.

(4). Zerviah Ricketson, daughter of John and Phebe, was born Jan. 21, 1751, and died Dec. 29, 1817. She married Abraham Smith, Oct. 6, 1763, when 18 years old, and was the mother of his nineteen children. She was a woman of such marked personality and character that numberless reminiscences of her have been recalled and preserved by her contemporaries and her children, and I find it difficult to set down those handed down to me so as to give an adequate picture of her which her descendants may long "delight to honor." Reared in the strictest Quaker faith, she remained, like her husband, a firm "Friend," retaining, as he did, the "plain dress and plain speech" of the sect. All of their grown children became members of the New Bedford meeting, and even a few who married "out of meeting," of whom my grandmother was one, always retained the familiar dress and speech.

Her married life of 48 years began in the trying days before the Revolution, and when her husband left her for his patriotic labors in Boston,

in 1776, she was only 25 years old and the mother of five children, one having died in infancy in 1774. She was all her life, first and last, the "House Mother," fully answering to the words of the motto I have chosen, "Good and wise, strong in body and mind," and was exactly of the contemporaneous type described in these words by Harriet Beecher Stowe in one of her pictures of New England life:

"She was one of the much admired class who, in the speech of New England, have 'faculty'—a gift which among that shrewd people commands more esteem than beauty, riches, learning or any other worldly endowment. 'Faculty' is Yankee for 'savoir faire' and the opposite virtue to shiftlessness. To her who has faculty, nothing shall be impossible; she who hath faculty is never in a hurry, never behind-hand, with time enough in the afternoons to hem muslin capstrings, and read the latest book."

As the eldest daughters became old enough to watch the young children, she formed a daily habit of retiring, after the noon day dinner, to a quiet room in the attic, for an hour's rest. Here was her rocking chair and a table to which all the books and local and foreign papers that came into the house eventually found their way. For half an hour she enjoyed these, then laid her head against the high-backed chair and slept for another half hour. One of her daughters told me, "She was never disturbed there, no matter what happened to the baby or the rest of the household; at the end of the hour she appeared again, took up her duties, and was always the last to go to bed."

She was very systematic in the training of her children and the care of her home, which was always simply furnished, scrupulously neat and very home-like, in spite of what would now seem a rather bare look. My great grandmother Tallman, a contemporary, said of her, "She was considered by all to be the smartest woman in New Bedford. She was a beautiful needlewoman and trained her daughters well in this accomplishment," and they knit all the stockings in the family. My grandmother said, "when young, I could knit a man's sock in a day and evening, in addition to my other work." I have pieces of linen used in the early days of the old homestead, and of the wedding sheets of the oldest daughter, married in 1795, but I do not know whether this or any other weaving was done there, though I think they spun their own yarn, and every one of them was an expert

knitter to the end of their days, even those who became blind.

She continued active in all household duties until her death in her 67th year, as the result of a fall. While carrying a pail into the cellar, she fell on the stone steps, striking on her head and side and cutting her face with the glass of her spectacles. In a few days lockjaw developed, and after a week of agony she was released from life. I have a pathetic letter written by her daughter Lydia, giving all details of this tragedy. Three unmarried daughters and one son were with her, three married ones were living near, and kind neighbors faithfully watched her, though several fainted from the strain. Her husband never left her side, and for some time after her death was in a half-paralyzed state. The letter says: "She was in so good health when attacked that she resisted the disease a long time, and it is considered the worst case on record here." She was conscious at times, and said, "This has been a pleasant house always and a good home, but I am resigned to leave it." The letter adds: "It was a cruel end to a long and useful life."

The house on Middle street, built by Abraham Smith in 1794, was a typical New England home, until his death there in 1826. From my childhood I have eagerly listened to stories of the life there recounted by his children and my mother, his granddaughter. As late as 1881, in my own home in New Jersey, where she died, aged 87, their daughter Elizabeth (No. 17), the last to marry from the old home, repeated many details that I had heard from my mother.

The house was of wood, two and a half stories, standing on the street, with a meadow in the rear. The eastern end overlooked the present Water street, beyond which the grass sloped to the water's edge with an unobstructed view of Fairhaven. A cart track led down to the wharf belonging to Abraham Smith at the foot of Mill street, and the children went swimming and fishing there. Until the bridge was built in 1796, there were no buildings south on the shore side of Water street as far as Centre street and the wharf in front of the present building of Old Dartmouth Historical Society. The blacksmith shop on Centre street was plainly seen, and the workers there were summoned to their meals by a horn. At times some of the apprentices whose homes were beyond the town formed part of the family. Over this large household the capable mother ruled well. It was the universal testimony of her contemporaries that she was "the smartest woman that ever lived

in New Bedford." My grandmother, Mary Tallman Hawes, said, "Though she always had a baby in her arms, none of the others were ever seen ragged or dirty, and the house was always orderly and the food good and plentiful." One of the daughters told of her mother's habit of tucking the baby under her arm, between daylight and dark each day, and, with a soft cloth, wiping off the inside window panes; the outside was well polished by the older daughters, who were as systematically and thoroughly trained in household duties as were their brothers at the forge. All had every advantage of "schooling" that was possible at that day. My grandmother, Rebecca (No. 14), drew for me a pleasant verbal picture of herself and five others being made ready for school by an elder sister: "We were all strong healthy children, with fair skins and round heads with hair cut closely. Quaker fashion; some of us, who were inclined to curls, greatly resented being so closely cropped. Each one, boy or girl, after being washed and brushed, went to a pile of clean sleeveless aprons, called 'tyers,' with strings at back of neck and waist; they were of three sizes, well made of strong blue and white or brown and white cotton. I remember choosing my size, tying the top strings, wiggling my head through, and then 'backing up' to my sister for the lower strings to be tied. These were worn over strong colored garments, woolen in winter, and were taken off when we were made ready for supper at night. The babies were always dressed in white until old enough to walk, and the girls, as they grew up, made all these little dresses and white dresses for themselves, in addition to other house work; as long as I can remember, we had strong Indian women to do the washing and heavy work; the rule was that we could have as many white dresses as we would make and iron."

My mother, of the next generation, remembered going daily to the home-stead and seeing five of these aunts busy with the ironing, with twenty of these lawn dresses hung up in the pleasant kitchen, the result of their morning's work. They were made severely plain, low neck, short sleeves, with narrow, short skirts, beautifully made and of fine imported lawn. I have no account of the clothing of the sons but know that it was strong and good, of a Quaker plainness. During their minority they did all the outside work of the household under their mother's direction, as faithfully as that of the forge with their father. It is no exaggeration to say that it was a wonderful family, strong, hand-

some, good tempered and happy descendants of good New England stock. I personally remember 12 of them, including the oldest and youngest, and from my childhood saw much of them for fifty years. They were full of strong family feeling and always proud of their parents and of each other, a trait inherited by the next generation. The highest praise they could bestow upon any of the descendants of any generation, was to say they were "Smithy," and this meant an inheritance of the virtues, traits and capabilities of Abraham and Zer-viah Smith.

As the children outgrew the simple schools available, Abraham Smith gradually established an evening school in his own home. After supper, all who were old enough to sit up after sun-down were gathered around a big table where they were joined by the apprentices. Abraham Smith had a strong thirst for learning, and studied for and with his children, sending to Cambridge for books on astronomy and higher mathematics, and owned the first Algebra ever brought to New Bedford. Already an expert and skilled workman, he trained his apprentices, including the six sons, as far as he could lead them in physics and mathematics. He insisted on the daughters studying navigation and astronomy, saying: "It will stretch their brains." No other home in the town possessed so many good books. I have inherited leather bound volumes of old English poets from which all were required to read aloud in turn at the evening lessons, and every newspaper, foreign or local, that could be had was read and re-read by both parents and children. It was this training of "an open mind" that led all the sons in succession to make their homes elsewhere.

When the post office was established in this house (1806), it became an historical spot. There were still two sons and seven daughters living there, the youngest nine years old. It is of these young girls that Daniel Ricketson gives us a glimpse in his "New Bedford of the Past." Describing the home, still standing, of his father, Joseph Ricketson, on Union street at the end of Seventh street, with its high posts at the gateway shaded by tall syringas and fine trees, he adds an account of an old fashioned tea party in the pleasant Quaker home, and says, "By four o'clock the company has assembled, the great sofa as well as the chairs are filled. On the former I remember to have seen some half dozen or more sisters, cousins of my father, all dressed in their neat white Quaker gowns, and of marked

beauty. Somewhat later came the husbands of some of them—quite a number, however, were still unmarried." The supper in the "keeping room," which he further describes, was often returned in kind by the hospitable Zer-viah, when the daughters waited on the guests, and the entertainment of the capable hostess did not suffer in comparison, although the details were simpler.

Of all the furniture of the old home, I know of but one piece that has been preserved, a chair with broad seat, low rounded back and curved mahogany arms, which now stands in my own home, inherited from a daughter who took it away at her marriage, and dated by her "1789."

Of the two sons left at home in 1806, the oldest went to New York in 1810 and the other was lost at sea in 1811. Two daughters married in 1808, leaving five daughters with the parents for many years. The house was always a centre of interest for young people, and the establishment of the post office there brought "all the rest of the town," (as some one said of it) to its open door. The entire outfit of the post office was located in a small back room and it was said, "When the mail arrived, on the stage, the postmaster would call out the names of those for whom he had letters, and, if present, they would claim their mail. This was before the advent of envelope or stamp and postage was generally paid by the recipient." The same writer says: "I well remember the old postmaster, Abraham Smith, who was a tall man, advanced in years, with his large iron-bowed spectacles and green flannel cap." He was extremely neat in person and exact in all the details of his office, wrote a handsome, round, "Quaker" hand, as it was called, and I have several long monthly records of mails, copies of deeds, etc., with his signature. My mother, as a child, loved to "haunt" this room on her daily visits to the house, and began very early to enjoy the foreign papers and books of many kinds to be found nowhere else in the town. The ship's mails, too, were of special interest, including the always pathetic collection of letters, never claimed, from sailors who never returned. In 1814, on the appointment of my grandfather, John Hawes, as Collector, the custom house was established in the southwest room of this house adjoining the post office, and for twelve years all the principal business interests of the town centered there. Merchants, captains, sailors, foreigners, mechanics of every trade, and even the vagrants, sought business advice or help from these two good, practi-

cal, upright men, who entertained a firm friendship the rest of their lives. My mother (who afterward married his son) has thus described the Collector: "He was very different looking from the old postmaster in his Quaker garb, and I remember him well as he drove up to the door in his yellow colored chaise from Acushnet, a stout-built, comfortable looking personage, dressed in bottle green broadcloth and buff vest, ruffled shirt and a beaver hat."

Among his papers I found, four years ago, all the receipted quarterly bills for the "rent" of Custom house for 10 years, 1814-24, which read, "Rec'd of John Hawes in full for rent of office for the Quarter ending 4th inst. \$9.00. Abraham Smith." And yet, during that time, New Bedford was one of the busiest sea ports on the coast!

The sad and sudden death of Zer-viah Smith in 1817 was the first heavy shadow to fall upon this good old home, and her husband never entirely recovered from the shock, though he survived her nine years and had the faithful care of his two remaining daughters. The death of his friend the collector in 1824, and the removal

of the custom house elsewhere, was another shock to him. He gradually gave up his post office duties to his oldest son Asa (who had returned to New Bedford) and later to his son-in-law, Richard Williams, who succeeded him in office. His grandchildren remembered him, at the last, as a gentle, cheerful old man, sitting by the fire, "life's duty done" and waiting for the end, which came March 24, 1826.

The home passed into other hands, was surrounded by larger buildings and finally used for business purposes; but instead of sinking, as some of the neighboring buildings did, to the shabbiness of a dilapidated tenement house, it was its rare good fortune to be included in the site acquired by the city for the pleasant Bridge Park of the present day. The thousands of travelers who cross by trolley the fine bridge from Fairhaven, pass over the old wharf and lane, through the beautiful grass and between the flower beds that mark the exact site of this home built 116 years ago, and so long filled with the best type of the New England life of its day,—a fitting and beautiful and lasting monument, for which their descendants should be sincerely grateful.

II—"THE NINETEEN"

Asa Smith.

No. 1. Oldest child of Abraham and Zerviah Smith was born May 24th, 1770. Died Feb. 24th, 1849, aged 79. Married Oct. 18, 1792 (1) Meribah Russell, daughter of Seth and Mary Russell. Died 1795. Married 1815, (2) Abby Haviland of New York, who died in 1818.

Asa Smith, after serving his apprenticeship with his father until 1791 and marrying in 1792, remained in New Bedford and was interested in business with his father-in-law, Seth Russell, and his son-in-law, George Tyson. In 1815 he went to New York, receiving certificate of removal to the New York Monthly Meeting, and the same year married (2nd) Abby Haviland, of an old Quaker family of New York. She died in 1818. He returned to New Bedford in 1822 and became assistant postmaster for the two last years of his father's life. As the oldest son, he held the deed in 1st burying ground on Second street. His only child, Mary, married George Tyson, of Baltimore, Md., in 1822 and died in 1824, leaving an orphan daughter who remained with him the rest of his life. These two, after living at different times in the families of his brothers and sisters in Buffalo and Syracuse, finally settled in the home of his sister, Zerviah Smith Sawdey, who went to Conneaut, Ohio, in 1808. He died there in 1849, aged 79 years, after a rather uneventful life. I remember him well, both in Buffalo and on the Ohio farm where I visited in my childhood; a handsome, hale old man, retaining his Quaker speech, although disowned by the New Bedford meeting on leaving it twenty-five years before.

His granddaughter, Mary Tyson, married before his death, David Sawdey, adopted son of Zerviah Smith Sawdey. He died soon after and she then married Amos Giltner, a farmer of German stock, and with him began an overland journey to Denver. They were among the pioneer settlers of that city, where her two sons were born and her husband died. The history of her western journey, and later experiences in the mines, is the most striking which I find in the records of the later generations. They crossed the continent in a "prairie schooner," driving their cattle and "watching out" for Indians, as did her Quaker Dartmouth ancestors 175 years before. For many years, after the postal service was established, she sent occasional interesting letters to relatives in the east, but I have not been able to

find any of them. Her sons provided her with a simple, comfortable home in Denver, and then led the roving life of miners and prospectors but were never very successful. In 1893, when she was 78 years old, a relative visited her in Denver, and returned with much interesting history. She lived alone in a small wooden house, (a great contrast to the beautiful home of Seth Russell in New Bedford where she was born) and was one of the "first citizens" of the city, known by every one and universally respected. She told how, at the first civic celebration of the city, she put up a tent back of her house, and served there a supper such as she had cooked on the plains, with the utensils she had carefully preserved. I think she also had the original wagon and much of its outfit. It was one of the most interesting exhibits of the occasion and was repeated in later years. She was very intelligent and gave a thrilling account of her journey; one item was of her making biscuits of flour and the water of the soda springs in the alkali region of Colorado, and she used the same water for the "soda biscuits" of her suppers in the tent.

When Charles Kingsley, of England, and his daughter Rose made a second visit to this country and went to Denver, he visited her and, at his request, was given a prairie supper. He pronounced her "the smartest and most interesting woman he had seen in America," and she showed, with pride, many letters from Mr. Kingsley and his daughter, after their return to England. Her sons were in Cripple Creek in 1893, and she spoke well of them. She died in 1895; when in Cripple Creek in 1904, I tried to find some trace of them, without success. The "trail" of this first of the nineteen children vanishes in the Rocky Mountains, near Pike's Peak!

Elihu Smith.

No. 2. Elihu Smith, second son of Abraham and Zerviah Smith. Born Aug. 9, 1771. Died Oct. 3, 1825, aged 44. Married (1) Mary Slocum of New Bedford, March 10, 1801. Married (2) Catherine Farrington, Nov. 10, 1814.

She was of an old Quaker New York family, and I remember her and her home in Catherine street, New York, when I was very young, but she had then been a widow many years.

Elihu Smith served his apprenticeship with his father at the "Forge," as it was called, until of age in 1792, and seems to have remained in New

Bedford some years, where he married, and his first four children were born there. He had seven children, four by his first wife and three by the second. The oldest died in infancy; the others I have known personally. Two sons and one daughter married; none of these are living, but they have many descendants, of three generations, still living in New York. Elihu Smith received a certificate of removal for "himself and family" from the New Bedford to the New York Monthly Meeting August, 1810, in which year he removed to New York. He was the first of Abraham Smith's sons to settle there, and was followed, in time, by all the others, to whom he was a helpful "elder brother." He made several voyages to Europe as captain in the merchant service, and was prosperous, but none of his descendants have any record of his business interests. His grandson is in possession of a handsome gold watch purchased in London and used by him more than one hundred years ago. Although he and his wife kept firmly to the Quaker faith and a comparatively quiet and simple life, their New York home was a handsome and dignified one and impressed me much as a child, and I think I was rather afraid of "Aunt Catherine," a stately woman in Quaker dress, who was very deaf.

My mother told me that Elihu was a personal friend of Robert Fulton and interested in some of his projects; like many of Abraham Smith's sons, he had a strong leaning towards mechanics, which may account for this association. He died in 1825, aged only 44 years; his children were all quite young, which may be the reason that so little is known of him by his descendants.

His oldest son died in infancy. His second son, John T. S. (Slocum) Smith (he always wrote it in full to distinguish himself from others of the name) was a worthy representative of his generation. He was born in New Bedford, Nov. 2, 1805, and died in New York, aged — years. I remember him best in the last years of his life, a handsome, intelligent, vigorous old gentleman with snow-white hair and full beard. When he visited my mother, a somewhat younger cousin, I always enjoyed hearing them recall the old days, and to me they seemed very "Smithy" representatives of our New England Quaker stock. His son, Dr. Thomas Franklin Smith, sends me this data: "He received a simple common school education, and married when quite young a daughter of Thomas Franklin, of New York; later formed a partnership with his brother-in-law,

Morris Franklin, and carried on a brokerage business under the firm name of Franklin & Smith. When this was dissolved, he became an expert accountant for several years. He was always very much interested in the study of chemistry and was constantly experimenting with chemicals and making chemical analyses. At last there came a time, while he was attending to the books of the pioneers of homeopathic physicians in New York, Drs. John F. Gray and A. Gerald Hull,—that they suggested he should go into the manufacture of homeopathic medicines, as there were none to be procured at that time except those that were imported from Germany by Mr. William Kadde, a German bookseller. Upon the urgent and repeated requests of these two physicians, he finally decided to follow their advice, and in the 1843-1844 he opened a pharmacy in the basement of a private house at No. 512 Broadway, between Broome and Spring streets; his stock in trade consisted of about fifty vials of medicine which he had prepared himself and which were arranged along on the wainscoting of the room; that was the beginning of his 'Smith's Homeopathic Pharmacy' which was continued by his son, Dr. Henry M. Smith, and is now conducted by the latter's son, Carroll Dunham Smith. John T. S. Smith was the first person to manufacture homeopathic medicine in this country, and afterward received a diploma from the New York Homeopathic Medical college, as a doctor of medicine."

Two of his sons became homeopathic physicians; the oldest, Henry Mitchell Smith, who continued his pharmacy, stood high in his profession and was secretary of the commission for the erection of the fine Hahnemann monument in Washington. He died March, 1901, and left three sons and one daughter, Mrs. Gertrude Smith Tabor of Helena, Montana. The sons remained in New York, all married there. One died in 1909, leaving no children. Henry Smith's widow lives in New York with his eldest son, Carroll, who has three children. The third son, Julian Pierce, has one son, Haviland Smith. These are of the fifth generation from Abraham Smith.

Dr. Thomas Franklin Smith, younger son of John T. S., is a practicing homeopathic physician in New York and has been for twenty years treasurer of the American Institute of Homeopathy. He has five children living, and four grandchildren of the fifth generation.

Elizabeth Mitchell Smith, daughter of Elihu and Mary Slocum Smith,

was born in New Bedford, Feb. 13, 1806, and married Richard Mott, a brother of James Mott, whose wife was the celebrated Quaker preacher, Lucretia Mott. They lived at one time in Buffalo, N. Y., afterwards in Rochester, N. Y., and finally settled in Toledo, Ohio, where she died of consumption, in ———, and was buried in Rochester. She left two daughters, Mary and Anna C. The oldest died ———, of consumption; the other outlived her father, who was a representative citizen for many years. He served two terms in the United States senate and was well known as the "Quaker member from Ohio." His Quaker principles made him a firm friend of all the anti-slavery reformers of that day, and he stood next to Charles Sumner when he was struck down in the Senate chamber by Senator Brooks, and was the first to assist him. He was a successful, upright business man and founder and president of the Savings Bank & Trust Co. of Toledo. His daughter, Anna Caroline Mott, granddaughter of Elihu, presided over his beautiful home as long as he lived. He was active in mind and body to the end and left to his daughter a large fortune which she used wisely and well, and at her death in 1902 left a will distributing it according to his wishes, including many of her Smith relatives. She never married, and with her ended that line of Elihu Smith's descendants.

Caroline, Jane and Maria Smith, younger daughters of Elihu, all died unmarried, the latter in 1896. She made her home in the family of her brother, Thomas Smith, and remained a member of the New York Monthly Meeting.

Thomas T. Smith, youngest son of Elihu Smith and Catherine Farrington, was born July 5, 1820. He married Sarah B. Cromwell, June 10, 1848, a member of an old Quaker family of Brooklyn, and both remained members of the Society of Friends, and their children, William, Alice and Percy, were reared in that faith.

Thomas T. Smith died August 4th, 1883. His three children are still living, also four grandchildren and one great grandchild.

Obed Smith.

No. 3. Third son of Abraham and Zerviah, born Nov. 2, 1772, died April 7, 1831, aged 59.

Married May 14, 1797, Mary Thorn of New York, and they had eleven children. Four sons, Stephen, Abraham, Robert Fulton and Fulton died young; another son, Edward L., was lost at sea in the wreck of the packet

ship Albion, off Kinsdale, Ireland, April 22nd, 1821, aged 18 years. The youngest child, Amelia, died unmarried in 1845, aged 22 years.

Obed Smith, like his brother Elihu, was for a time interested in foreign trade in New York. I do not find the date of his going there, but it was probably before his marriage there in 1797, and he lived there until his death 34 years after. On March 27, 1819, he was appointed port warden of the city of New York, and held the office for twelve years. He was also a personal friend of Robert Fulton, two of his infant sons bearing that name in succession. He was always an active, intelligent citizen, but no records of his later years have been preserved by his descendants.

The two oldest surviving sons went to live in Buffalo, N. Y., where many Smith relatives had already settled.

(1) Archibald Minthorne Cook Smith, married Beulah, granddaughter of General Grainger, a Revolutionary officer, and they had six children. He was for many years secretary of the Etna Insurance Co. at Buffalo, and was killed while on duty at a fire. There are now living three children, and several grandchildren and great grandchildren of Archibald Smith.

(2) William Cook Smith, married his cousin Hannah Smith; they had no children but adopted a niece who died childless, and their line is extinct.

(3) Ann Burke Dodge Smith, twin sister of Archibald, married John Rudderow of Jersey City. She survived him many years and lived to be 90 years old. She left three daughters and several grandchildren and great grandchildren.

Phebe Smith.

No. 4. First daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Oct. 27, 1773. Died June 2, 1855, aged 82. Married Russell Davis, Oct. 8, 1795. They had no children.

As the oldest daughter, and the mother's first helper in the household, it is safe to say she was greatly missed when she married at 22 and went to a home of her own, leaving eleven brothers and sisters at home. This is the largest number I find in the family at one time.

April 26, 1817, a removal certificate was given to Russell Davis and family to Sandwich, Mass., from New Bedford. December, 1820, another removal certificate was given her by the same. She returned January, 1832. She removed again March, 1836, and again returned to New Bedford, May, 1848, after the death of her husband in 1846. Although I must have seen her in my childhood, I only remem-

ber her distinctly when she was nearly eighty years old.

Russell Davis was the son of James and Patience Russell, grandson of Joseph Russell and cousin of Wm. T. Russell. The History of Barnstable County says: "The Friends had no approved minister before Russell Davis. About 1819 he moved from New Bedford to South Yarmouth; having a remarkable gift in the ministry, in discerning and addressing the 'states' of individuals and meetings. With but little human learning, and regarded as inferior in manner and appearance, he was often enabled, both in public and private, to reveal to individuals their thoughts and spiritual conditions, to their own astonishment. He became a true seer and such was the general confidence in his declarations as being from the true source of authorized ministry, that the attendance of the Yarmouth meeting grew, in his day, to its greatest number."

Most of his life, after 1820, was passed in this ministry. I have no record of his personality, except this, in Daniel Ricketson's book: "William Wall says, Russell Davis frequently, after stating a proposition and saying 'It is so,' adds, 'It is so because it is so, —and because it is so, it is so.'"

He died in South Yarmouth in 1847, aged 75. Phebe Smith Davis died in South Yarmouth in 1855, aged 82, and her line is now extinct.

Sylvia Smith.

No. 5. Born Dec. 5, 1774, died October, 1775, aged 10 months.

Stephen Smith.

No. 6. Fourth son of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Oct. 25, 1776, died April 23, 1854 (78). Married (1) Sarah J. Alsop, Sept. 21, 1814. Married (2) Rosanna Baker, November, 1838, the adopted daughter of General Philip Van Courtlandt. By his second wife he had one daughter.

Stephen served a faithful apprenticeship to his father until he was of age, in 1797. His daughter, now the only surviving granddaughter of Abraham and Zerviah, sends me many items of his life. Always having a great desire for learning, after leaving school for his trade at twelve years old, he afterward, in addition to obtaining a good English education, studied French with refugees from the French revolution then living in New Bedford and Nantucket, reciting to them in the evening. His French books, during the day time, laid in a glass-covered frame by his forge, and he kept up his studies while at his work. The day of his majority he said to his father, "I have served thee faithfully, but I shall never be a blacksmith, and I wish to see what I

can do." It was afterward written, truthfully, of him, "When he went to try his fortunes in New York, his only capital was an unexceptional character for integrity and a degree of intelligence not often attained by young men of that age, even with the best opportunities; he always sought after knowledge with the utmost perseverance and determination."

The older brothers had married and still lived in New Bedford and the youngest of the nineteen was only a few months old when Stephen went to New York, in 1797. Times were hard, and, like hundreds of others, he could find no place. Nothing daunted, he went into the counting room of Minturn & Chapman, at that time one of the largest shipping houses in the city, and asked the consent of the proprietors to stay there a while and work for nothing. He soon became so useful that he was promoted to a position of great responsibility, and became an inmate of the household of Benjamin G. Minturn, senior proprietor of the establishment. In this position he is said to have "enjoyed intimate social relations with, and the most perfect confidence of, many of the first business men of New York city." He was handsome and well developed physically, and in spite of his plain Quaker dress and speech, had a natural ease and grace in his bearing, unusual at that time. He was soon sent to Europe in charge of important interests in England and France, by the Rotches and others, his good knowledge of the French language being of special value to them. On his return, his old employers, Minturn & Chapman, sent him as supercargo of one of their ships to India, and in this capacity he was engaged for several years. One of his younger sisters who, as a child, visited him and the older brothers then settled in New York, told me in her old age, "He was handsome and good. I remember well how he was made much of by French officers and merchants he had met abroad, who were visiting New York, to whom he showed much attention. I recall, especially, a trip to Little Falls, near Paterson, N. J., in a stage with four horses; his party was made up of these gentlemen, but I, the only child, was his special guest,—it was a great event for me." At one time when in Portsmouth, England, his eagerness for information led him so frequently into public offices, the government storehouses and dock yards, and his enquiries were so many and curious that he became an object of suspicion, was seized as a French spy and thrown into prison; his references to the American consul and prominent

merchants, however, secured his immediate release. He was also in England during the bread riots of 1808.

After accumulating some property, he embarked with others on a venture of a cargo of "India goods" for the Mediterranean, going himself as supercargo, as well as joint owner. Owing to the rapacity of the "great European robber," Napoleon, this undertaking proved a failure. He had no sooner anchored his vessel in the Bay of Naples than it was seized, under the famous Berlin and Milan decrees, the vessel and cargo confiscated, and the officers arrested and marched off to Boulogne. Vessel and cargo proved an entire loss. The owners, after many years, received dividends from the "spoliation claims," amounting in his case to less than twenty dollars for the loss of \$10,000.

Giving up foreign business after this, he commenced the manufacture of salt from sea water at South Yarmouth, Mass., where the windmill and salt covers stood for many years. The business there, at first very profitable, was rendered of little or no value by a reduction of the duty on foreign salt. He then turned his attention to the "Salines" of central New York state, in 1812, and during a residence of several years at Syracuse, N. Y., married, in 1814, and again in 1838. He later obtained a charter from the New York legislature for a company for the manufacture of salt by solar evaporation. Returning to New Bedford, he interested Wm. Rotch, Jr., Samuel Rodman, Samuel Arnold and others in the project. They sent him to Syracuse in 1821, (with "unlimited credit on New York city") where he built vats and established the Onandaga Solar Salt Co., "according to his own judgment." This was the beginning of a strong and prosperous business, still a leading one at Syracuse. For more than thirty years he was an "honorable and honored" citizen. Forming a life-long friendship with all the well known Quaker abolitionists of central New York,—Gerrit Smith, Myron Holley, Samuel J. May, and, through them with William Lloyd Garrison, Lucretia Mott and others, he early "espoused the cause of the slave" and his home became a noted station on the "underground railway" between the south and Canada. He had built a handsome stone house, still standing, on Lafayette Square, Syracuse, one of the finest then in the city, in the style of those built in New Bedford about that time. I remember visiting there when young, and being taken to the basement and shown the rooms where fugitives were sheltered and the supplies of warm clothing kept in readi-

ness, made by his family and friends. I also remember being a little disappointed that there were no "sufferers" there at the time, but many hundreds were helped and protected and sent safely over the border, furnished with funds to establish themselves "in freedom." He was well known, and almost revered, by the colored people of Syracuse, and until his death was called "Uncle Stephen" by them all. His was a home of boundless hospitality; he was very clannish and fond of his kin, and a widowed and unmarried sister were long members of his family. It was always the stopping place for all relatives passing east or west, first by canal and then by the first railroad in New York state. He became blind several years before his death, but his declining years were peaceful, calm and cheerful. His death was a public loss, and in the memorial words of his friend and fellow worker, Mr. May, "His unswerving integrity and irreproachable morals have rendered him proverbial for honor and rectitude, while his unpretending and kindly manners have endeared him to all. Showing no signs of dread or fear, he has passed on."

Rufus Smith.

No. 7. Fifth son of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Feb. 23, 1778, died July 20, 1779, aged 17 months.

Mary Smith.

No. 8. Third daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born July 9, 1779, died June 26, 1855, aged 76. Married Daniel W. Taber Feb. 28, 1805. They had five children. Daniel Taber was a merchant from Portland, Maine. He failed in business there and a few months after their marriage, Mary Taber received removal certificate to the Falmouth monthly meeting. In an old family letter from New Bedford, without date, I find: "Daniel Taber has gone to New York to go Second Mate with Elihu (his brother-in-law) to Cape of Good Hope and India." His family seemed to have moved back and forth from Falmouth to New Bedford, and he may have been absent on this and other voyages until his death in 1822, aged 44.

Mary Taber removed again June, 1816; a certificate from Falmouth to her and two children was given July, 1822, and again when she removed to Buffalo, N. Y., Aug. 1835. In 1830, her oldest child, Phebe Davis Taber, married Charles Howland of New Bedford, and after her death the next child, Elizabeth Smith Taber, became Charles Howland's second wife. Another daughter, Zerviah, aged 4 years, died in April, 1814.

Mary Taber, her third daughter,

Mary Russell Taber, and her only son, William Daniel Taber, moved to Buffalo in 1835 with Elizabeth and Charles Howland, and all remained members of one family through life. By this time there was quite a colony of New Bedford Smith descendants in that city, headed by Isaac S. Smith, No. 16, who settled there in 1822, and including Archibald Smith and William Smith, sons of Obed Smith, No. 3, and their families. A year later they were joined by my parents (my mother was a daughter of Rebecca, No. 14), and still later by the daughter of Elihu Smith, No. 2, with her husband, Richard Mott, and two daughters. All these families formed a center of the New England element which strongly influenced the growth and development of the city. I remember well the Thanksgiving dinners and family teas of those days, when sometimes as many as thirty of our "kin" were gathered together. All the elder ones kept alive the customs and speech of Friends.

Mary Smith Taber was a fine representative of her generation whom I remember well. As head of the family, she passed a long and useful life, dying in Buffalo, aged 78 years.

Elizabeth and Charles Howland had four children, Theodore, Charles Jr., Marcus and Anna, wife of Wm. R. Bramhall of Washington, D. C., still living but without children. The widow and children of Charles, Jr., are also still living in Windsor, Canada, opposite Detroit, Michigan. Theodore died unmarried, also Marcus, who was for many years in the U. S. Quartermaster's department.

Mary Taber and her daughter, Mrs. Howland, were widely known and valued in Buffalo, were among the founders of the orphan asylum and always "forward in good works." Mrs. Howland was, later, a valuable worker in the Buffalo branch of the sanitary commission during the Civil war, both in word and deed. She died in Washington, D. C.

Mary Russell Taber kept for many years the first private school in Buffalo, and was my first teacher. She died unmarried.

Wm. Daniel Taber died in Buffalo, 1904, unmarried.

Judith Smith.

No. 9. Fourth daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born April 4, 1781. Died July 17, 1786, aged five years.

Thomas Smith.

No. 10. Fifth son of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Jan. 30, 1783. Died Jan. 5, 1785, aged 2 years.

Zerviah Smith.

No. 11. Fifth daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born May 28,

1784. Died Dec. 2, 1847, aged 63 years. Married David Sawdey, June 17, 1808. They had no children. She was the third daughter to leave the home, a younger sister having married a few months before. She was then 22 years old, and after being disowned by the New Bedford meeting for "marrying out of meeting," she and her young husband removed immediately to New Hartford, Oneida Co., N. Y., and later to a farm near Conneaut, Ohio, which is now within the state line of Pennsylvania. Here they successfully carried on a large farm, and she and her husband were valuable pioneers in what was then almost a wilderness. She was always, from her girlhood, considered one of "the smartest of the girls," and in her isolated life developed a strong character. She was the first of her family to settle in the Far West, as it was then called. After her brothers and other relatives settled in Buffalo, comparatively near her, they made her frequent visits, and I remember going there when young, by steamer to Conneaut, and then in a big wagon drawn by fine horses of their own raising. This was the first time I had ever seen a flock of sheep, and they had many. I remember her as a large, handsome, fair woman, then nearly sixty years old, in Quaker dress, active in her dairy and housework, and with very cheerful, attractive ways. She was quoted as authority on many things by her neighbors, which she attributed to her "good Yankee-Quaker training." In middle life, she and her husband adopted an orphan boy who was given to them by his dying mother whom they had befriended. Before Zerviah's death, her brother Asa (No. 1) came to make his home with her. His granddaughter later married this adopted son, David, Jr., who died soon after. David Sawdey, Sr., married a second time and had one son of the same name, now a lawyer in Erie, Pa.

Zerviah Smith died in 1847 and her line is now extinct.

Abigail Smith.

No. 12. Sixth daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born May 1, 1786. Died Dec. 5, 1863, aged 77 years. Married Robert Wing of Yarmouth, May 4, 1826. They had no children.

She was the last of the married daughters to leave the home, where she was the head of the family after the sad death of her mother in 1817, caring faithfully for her father in his declining years. Two months after his death, when forty years old, she married Robert Wing, then a widower with one daughter, and went to his home in South Yarmouth, where he

was a boat builder. He was a "Friend" and she carried with her a certificate of removal to the Sandwich meeting of which he was a member. She made frequent visits to New Bedford and was a favorite sister with the younger ones of her family whom she "mothered" so long. She was bright and witty, very capable in her home, famous as a cook, and an authority among her neighbors. I recall a story told of her in cholera times. When riding alone in a chaise on a lonely road on the Cape, she was stopped by a man who said his wife was very ill. On entering the house she found her in a state of collapse from cholera. Sending the man with the chaise for the doctor, she took the case in hand. The fire was low in the fireplace, so she pulled out the hot bricks from the back of the chimney, tore her flannel skirt in strips and rolling the bricks in them, piled them around the cold body. Then, making a fire, she boiled water, made hot tea from herbs she found in the kitchen, which she forced down the patient's throat, and kept hot, wet flannels on her feet. She soon revived and when the doctor arrived with other remedies, he said her life was already saved.

Robert Wing died in 1856, aged 73, and his wife afterwards made her home with his daughter, Mrs. Steere of Providence. After the death of Mr. Steere, Abigail Wing, being over seventy years old and blind, removed to New Bedford and became a member of the family of her sister, Mrs. Rebecca Smith Williams, where, in the devoted care of her nieces, she passed several peaceful, happy years, active in mind and body. She died suddenly while dressing herself and talking with her niece. She closed her eyes, simply ceased breathing and passed on, aged 77 years.

Her line is now extinct.

No. 13. Abraham Smith, Jr., born Jan. 3rd, 1788, died at sea, Dec. 24, 1811, aged 23.

I recall but one record of this son; my grandmother, Rebecca, No. 14, less than two years younger, said of him, "He was my playmate and was good and handsome. He was a great loss to me and to our father."

Rebecca Smith.

No. 14. Seventh daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born June 5, 1789. Died Dec. 26, 1873, aged 84. Married Richard Williams, Feb. 18, 1808. They had 13 children.

Rebecca Smith married at eighteen and lived all her life long in New Bedford. She was one of the fairest of the "sofa-full" of cousins of which Daniel Ricketson has written, and

rather a pet with the older brothers and sisters and her aunt Rebecca Ricketson, wife of Daniel Ricketson, Sr., for whom she was named, who claimed her as a daughter, having none of his own. She spent much time with them and was much attached to their sons, who regarded her almost as a sister. It is already set down in the annals of this society how the handsome Richard Williams came from Taunton in 1806 and took board with my great grandparents, William and Elizabeth Talman, in the house still standing on the southeast corner of Union street and the present Acushnet avenue, and directly across from the home of Friend Ricketson, where the pretty Rebecca passed most of her time. Friend Elizabeth Talman gave him the corner second story room, so that he could "keep an eye" on the young Quakeress, my grandmother. She never told me whether she had the corresponding room on the opposite corner, but she did tell me of her wedding, when she married the handsome Richard, who was not a "Friend." There was no other objection to the union, but this one was rather a trial to her parents and kindred of that faith. As they could not be married in meeting, these relatives were not present, but her cousin, Joseph Ricketson, Sr., and his wife, Lucy Howland, offered their home on Union street for the ceremony, which took place in the parlor described so pleasantly at the tea party where she sat on the sofa with her five sisters some years before. They were a handsome couple; she, small, very fair and dressed in a Quaker gown of white India mull of plainest make, with no ornament, not even a flower; and he, six feet tall, arrayed in a blue coat with brass buttons, white satin vest and ruffled shirt brought from London for the occasion. The portrait of him copied for the post office likeness was taken in London in this dress. The young couple began housekeeping at Padanaram, in a house still standing, where their two oldest children were born. In 1811 they moved to New Bedford, to a house still standing on Spring street, north of Fourth. About 1816 they bought and moved into the house on Third street near Bedford, which was their home for nearly thirty years, and where their last eight children and myself, their oldest grandchild, were born. This good home, which I knew well, was a worthy successor, in its generation, to the Revolutionary homestead of Abraham and Zerviah Smith, and there was constant daily intercourse between them. My mother was rather a precocious child, and was made much of

by her many aunts living at the homestead, and from her I heard many descriptions of it, as well as of her own home with its large happy family of strong, bright girls and boys. Six of these girls grew to womanhood and were handsome and intelligent representatives of their generation.

Richard Williams passed many years in the foreign merchant service, principally between New York and London. His longest voyage was in 1811, around Cape Horn to the Pacific coast, first to lower California, and then north to the present site of San Francisco. It is said that his was the first merchant vessel from an Atlantic port to enter the Golden Gate. Nine of this family lived to maturity and seven of them gradually left for other homes. In 1824 Richard Williams gave up his sea-faring life and became assistant to his father-in-law, Abraham Smith, and afterward his successor in the post office until 1840. He died suddenly in 1845, aged 63, while on a visit to the farm in Taunton where he was born, leaving one son and three unmarried daughters in the home. In 1851 Rebecca Williams, his widow, built a house on Cottage street near Hawthorne, and lived there, with her two last unmarried daughters, until her death. She retained possession of the house on Third street and in her will left it to these two daughters, and afterward to be sold and the proceeds divided among her grandchildren, which was done in 1892, this house, having been in the possession of the family 76 years. Before building her last house, she made a long visit to her oldest son in Michigan, and later spent a year with her oldest daughter near Boston. From that time until her death she did not leave New Bedford; hers was a happy, tranquil old age, with three of her daughters near her. She had, in a large measure, the broad mind of her parents and brothers and while very quiet in manner, was a faithful executive mother to her large family, and always fond of reading. Her early training in navigation, with her brothers, interested her in astronomy, which was always to her an absorbing study. Her grandchildren enjoyed her and learned much from her. One of the younger ones, returning from a visit to her, said to her mother, "I didn't know my grandmother knew so much," to which came the answer, "If you ever know as much as your grandmother does, you will do well." Her mind was clear and strong to the end, and the day before her death, after a short illness, she lay with closed eyes and repeated page after page of "Paradise

Lost," which she had memorized from frequent reading in the evening school of her father in the old homestead, almost 80 years before. At her death in 1873 there were living five daughters and her youngest son.

Sarah Smith.

No. 15. Eighth daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Sept. 30, 1790. Died May 26, 1877, aged 87 years. Unmarried.

She remained in the homestead until, after the death of her father in 1826, the household was scattered. She then lived with several of her married brothers and sisters in New Bedford until August, 1836, she received a removal certificate from the New Bedford meeting and went to Syracuse, N. Y., where she lived for many years in the family of her brother Stephen. From there she went to Buffalo, where the family colony was large, and on to Ohio, a roving but welcome guest in the homes of all her kin, including mine. She retained the plain dress, speech and faith of Friends; was intelligent, capable, witty and cheerful, and an interesting type of spinster, the only one in this large family. When more than 80 years old, she became blind. She was then living with her youngest sister, Mrs. Savage, in Syracuse, but longing for the associations of her birthplace, she returned to New Bedford to the home of her nieces, the daughters of her sister, Rebecca Williams. Mrs. Williams and Mrs. Abigail Wing, her sisters, had passed on from this home not long before, and she lived there, cheery and well, for six years. During this time she fell and broke her hip, but became again able to walk for three years after. She was found asleep one pleasant May morning, "the sleep that knows no waking," and is buried in the family lot in New Bedford.

Isaac Slocum Smith.

No. 16. Born July 26, 1792. Died July 31, 1860. Married Mrs. Olivia Congdon Rudd in 1837. They had no children.

The youngest son of Abraham and Zerviah Smith worked as an apprentice to his father until near his majority, and was always fond of books and the study of higher branches of mechanics. He left New Bedford for New York in June, 1812, receiving a removal certificate from the New Bedford meeting and was for some years in the employ of his older brothers in New York. In 1813, soon after his majority, he went as supercargo from New York to Lisbon, Portugal, and, leaving the vessel there, traveled in France, returning home via England.

While at the home of the consul at Lisbon, he was much interested in two other guests of the family, a lady and her beautiful little daughter, of whom he grew very fond, the mother showed much interest in his descriptions of his home life in America. Many years after, he was pleased to discover in the child he had often tended on his knee, Eugenie, empress of France and wife of Napoleon 3rd. All his reminiscences of this travel in Europe were, in later years, of intense interest to his family, including myself, who lived near him in Buffalo in my childhood. The interest of his brothers in Europe was more strictly commercial, but his broader mind seems to have absorbed much of historical, scientific and artistic interest, and his later studies in all these lines gained him the family title of "The Encyclopedia." To him I always went as a child when I wanted to "know why," which pleased him very much. He would say, "Sit down here at my desk, and I will explain so you will never forget it," and I never did! His small library of standard encyclopedias, scientific and historical books, was the first and best one in his generation of the family. Before visiting Europe he had followed the example of his brother Stephen twenty years before and studied the French language, and most of the books used in his future engineering work were in that language.

About the year 1822, when he was thirty years old, he went to Buffalo, N. Y., then beginning to be "colonized" by many New England families. Here he became senior partner of the firm of Smith & Macy (John B. Macy of Nantucket) "forwarding merchants." Buffalo was fast becoming one of the largest ports in the United States; all merchandise and passengers arriving from the east by the Erie canal were there transferred to sail and steam craft for the West, a very indefinite term then. There was no Chicago, and I think the limit of trade was at Detroit. He soon took a leading place in the development of the city, and was made the first secretary of the Western Insurance Co. of Buffalo in 1825. He was the unsuccessful candidate of a Workingman's party for governor of the state in 1830. In 1831 he was one of a committee of citizens to promote the construction of a railroad to Buffalo. He was the first alderman of the first ward of Buffalo, elected May 28, 1832, and was re-elected in 1834. During ten years of practical business and public services, he steadily pursued his study of mechanical engineering, and in 1832 was appointed as superin-

tendent of the building of the lighthouse on the end of the breakwater at the entrance to Buffalo harbor, which stands today unsurpassed as a piece of masonry, from foundation up. Exposed to the fierce storms and heavy ice drifting toward the mouth of the Niagara river, it is now 77 years old and firm as the rock on which it was built. "The People's Magazine," published 1834, in Boston, has a picture of this lighthouse and "a copy of the original sketch of its construction, by Isaac S. Smith, superintendent." This is a minute description of all details of his work, beginning 15 feet below water at the end of the mole or breakwater extending 1,500 feet from the shore. I remember going into this lighthouse with him, as a child, when he was overseeing some repairs to the outer wall of the mole after the record gale of 1845, and being much interested in the "basement" of the tower, which had stone walls seven feet thick and formed an "oil vault." My father then held the government contract for furnishing all the lighthouses on the lakes with New Bedford refined sperm oil, "the only oil that would not freeze." Isaac Smith was always satisfied with, and proud of, this work, saying, "This is my monument; no one need ever trouble to give me another." Continuing in different business interests for many years, in 1856 he again contracted for the building of a second lighthouse about a mile northwest of the old one, on a ledge of rocks at the mouth of the Niagara river, directly in the middle of the fierce current there. This contract was based on the government survey of the ledge, which he proved incorrect; a new survey was necessary, and the contract was carried out and lighthouse built, where it still stands on the spot he selected. This involved a large extra expenditure, for which he sent in a claim to the government. This claim was held up in Congress for several years, but was finally paid before his death in 1860. Thus he has two lasting monuments of his own building, both witnesses to his mechanical skill obtained at the forge, and his unvarying thoroughness in everything he did.

At his death in Syracuse, where he passed the last years of his life, Rev. S. J. May said of him, "His integrity was instinctive, was earnest, constant and unswerving. He was scrupulously exact and solicitously just and fair in all his dealings, unbendingly devoted to his own idea of truth and right. He was favored in his early training, and was left, through his Quaker parentage, unhindered, if not directly en-

couraged, toward independence in thought. Character he accounted the all-substantial possession in this world and every other; to the end he showed fortitude and good cheer, and his death was calm and brave."

Elizabeth Smith.

No. 17. Ninth daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Dec. 27, 1793. Died April 7, 1881. Married Wing Russell of New Bedford Jan. 1, 1825. They had three children.

Elizabeth Smith was the last child married from the old homestead, the year before the death of her father and the breaking up of the family. She was then 32 years old and had been one of the "faithful ones" since the death of her mother nine years before. Wing Russell, son of Perry and Sybil Winslow Russell, was an apothecary. Their first home was on Third street, south of Union, and he had, in addition to his shop on Water street, a manufactory of "Prussian Blue" on William street, on the site of the present Y. M. C. A. building. Their three children were born in New Bedford, the youngest, Stephen Smith Russell, dying in infancy. Dec. 27, 1834, a removal certificate was given Wing Russell and family to the Hamburg Meeting, near Buffalo, N. Y., and they removed, with their two children, to join the Smith colony there. He formed a business partnership with my father under the firm name of Russell & Hawes, forwarding merchants, but his health soon failed and he died in New Bedford in 1844, aged only 41 years, and was buried there. Elizabeth Smith Russell then made her home for many years with her brother Stephen in Syracuse, and on the marriage of her only daughter to Wells D. Walbridge of Buffalo, again removed with her to that city in 1848, where she lived many years. Her daughter then removing to California and Idaho, where her husband had mining interests, she remained with her son at his home in Erie, Pa., until 1872, when she joined Mr. and Mrs. Walbridge and their only son in Napa, Cal., going the same year to San Francisco, where she celebrated her 80th birthday. Although so far from the rest of her family, it was made a festival occasion by a large gathering of new friends, many of whom had never seen so old a person, and none had ever seen the Quaker dress worn. She was very handsome, her hair as white as her Quaker cap and handkerchief. Her birthday cake with its wreath of flowers, its eighty candles and eighty gold dollars set into the edge of the frosting, was the first one ever seen in San Francisco. She retained always

the fair complexion of her youth. She was the sister, then about 10 years old, who visited Stephen Smith in N. Y., and the French officers she met there pronounced her the most beautiful "jeune fille" they had ever seen, in her simple white Quaker gown with neck and arms uncovered. In 1879 the family returned to New York city, where her son-in-law died suddenly the next year. She was not happy in her city life, and although perfectly well physically, her memory failed somewhat and she longed for the "open air," as she said; so they came to our home in New Jersey, to her great delight, and she said, "I know I shall be happy here." After a happy week, with all her senses normal, she complained one bright morning of a tired feeling, laid down on the couch and fell asleep instantly. The joy of the change had snapped the frail thread and ended a varied life of 87 years. Her only daughter, Lydia Russell Walbridge, then joined her son Russell D. Walbridge (born in 1849) in the Hawaiian islands, where for many years he had charge of a large sugar plantation on the island of Maui. He was the second great grandson of Abraham Smith to enter the Troy Polytechnic Institute as the youngest member of his class and to graduate at the head of it. During his course there he took a year's leave and joined his father, who was superintendent of a silver mine at Boise City, Idaho. Returning to finish his course at Troy, he then spent several years as a mining engineer at Tucson, Colorado, going from there to Maui. In Honolulu he married Berenice Parke, and after a visit to the Atlantic coast returned to Honolulu where his only son, Russell Parke Walbridge, was born in 1905. Russell D. died in 1905. His son early showed a talent for his father's profession, but while arrangements were being made for his education in New England, to prepare him for the Troy Institute, he died suddenly, from the effects of a fall, aged ten years.

For this boy of the fourth generation from Abraham Smith, had been saved all the most valuable relics and records which are here tonight, including a certified copy of apprenticeship and deed of land of John Smith in Plymouth and many other certified records, from the Old Dartmouth Friends Meeting. This is the longest record, in time and items, that I have found. I have made it as complete as possible because I have inherited all these treasures. That line of Elizabeth's descendants is now extinct.

Robert Wing Russell, only son of Elizabeth S. Russell, was born Oct. 12, 1832, was educated in Syracuse-

and Buffalo, and later became cashier of the First National Bank of Erie. He married the daughter of Wm. H. Curry, president of the Bank, and died at Utica, New York, in 1907, leaving three daughters and one son. There are now living four grandchildren and two great grandchildren of Elizabeth Smith Russell.

Deborah Smith.

No. 18. Tenth daughter of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Feb. 12, 1796. Died May 1st, 1879, aged 83 years. Married Joseph Taber Nov. 21, 1821. They had five children.

Deborah Smith, as one of the youngest of the family, remained at the homestead four years after the death of her mother, marrying when 21 years old. Joseph Taber was the only son of Francis and Lydia Russell Taber, and all were esteemed and lifelong members of the New Bedford Friends Meeting. He was early apprenticed to his father as a "pump and block maker" in his red-painted shop on Front street near Union, and continued the business successfully for many years. He lived all his life in New Bedford and a full record of his family was kept by his son Edward S. Taber. I recall one story told of him which made an impression on my childish mind. In the first year of his apprenticeship he spoiled by careless measurements several pieces of the valuable "lignum vitæ" of which the blocks for the rigging of vessels were made, and for a time had a habit of measuring and re-measuring the wood anxiously, to be "sure" before cutting it. One day he realized that this was not the way to make an exact workman, and he resolved to never make but one measure, and that an exact one, and to remember that one. He kept to this rule through life, and said, "I didn't spoil much wood after that." I wish to gratefully record that to this day I have tried to practice this rule.

They were among the few of Abraham Smith's family who never left New Bedford. Their first home was—and in 1831 they built and moved into "the new house" on Fourth street where they lived forty-eight years and where they celebrated their golden wedding in 1871. From her childhood Deborah Smith developed an individual talent before unknown in the family. In one of his addresses President Wood of this Society speaks of "Art suffering from the cooling and quieting winds of Dartmouth Quakerism" and Deborah's first attempts were discouraged and she felt the full force of their influence. Her father, while insisting on good penmanship for all his children, had no

taste or sympathy for what, to him, in his strong struggle for education, seemed a "vanity." While still young, her brother Stephen brought her from Europe the first colored picture she had ever seen, and, "wonder of wonders," a paint box and brushes. I believe this picture is now in the possession of a granddaughter who inherited her talent. In fear and trembling, she took them to the attic, lest they should be condemned, and hid them behind a piece of furniture near the low window under the eaves; when she could steal away unobserved, she would sit on the floor, copy with pencil and then color any picture she could find in the household library—and they were very few—and also perfected herself in the writing and printing, which later became a really wonderful accomplishment. I do not know how soon she ventured to bring forth her work to the light of day, but I have here specimens of her work in colors and in ink dated in 1812 when she was 16 years old and presented to her sisters. These are drawn with the pen and carefully colored; the details are many of them equal to the finest etchings of the present day. After her marriage, her skill is shown in many "Albums," one made as a wedding gift to her youngest sister in 1821, and in the marking of the household linen of several generations; the whole wedding linen of her nieces and children showed her patient work. I, myself, of a later generation, used to carry my new pocket handkerchiefs and choose a design for each from her little book of patterns. She used quill pens and made them herself, and her lines were as true as those of the best engraving tools of the present day. She also drew designs for many beautiful white quilts. I am the proud possessor of one made for my mother on her marriage. It was in the frame six months, the design of one side being first drawn by her and then quilted by herself and sisters, who came every week with their thimbles and put in the tiny stitches to which they had been trained in the homestead; then it was "rolled and ready for next marking." None of the younger ones were allowed to touch it. There are specimens of her pen work on fine cambric, from classical pictures, that are worthily framed and treasured by her descendants. With no instruction whatever from others, she later made oil portraits of her two daughters who died, aged 18 and 14.

Not long before his death she made a small pencil sketch of her father, and one, from memory, of her moth-

er, of which small photographs were made several years after. When the present post office was built in 1893, and it was decided to place pictures of all the postmasters in one of its rooms, an enlarged copy of this likeness was made by a great granddaughter of Deborah Taber and presented to the city by Edwrd S. Taber, his grandson. As no portrait of the first postmaster, William Tobey, could be found, this picture of Abraham Smith hangs at the head of the line, followed by that of Richard Williams, his son-in-law and successor in office, who held the position for 14 years. It is an instance of the irony of fate that this portrait owes its existence to the loving skill of the daughter, whose talent he discouraged, and to her granddaughter who inherits her talent for art.

Deborah Taber rarely left New Bedford, except for visits "on the Cape." In her last days, her senses were keen but her memory failed, and she passed on quietly in her 84th year.

Edward Smith Taber, her only son, born March, 15, 1826, died , remained a worthy citizen of New Bedford through life. He was an active, successful business man and president of the Morse Twist Drill Co., with which he was connected at his death. He married Emily H. Allen of New Bedford and they had three children and five grandchildren, all now living. A grandson inherits the artistic talent of his great grandmother and has just entered himself at the Ecole des Beaux Arts at Paris for study, a decided advance from her "perch" by the attic window of the old homestead.

Caroline Smith Taber, born Feb. 3, 1824, died . Married Samuel Morgan of Albany, N. Y., in , and later moved to Toledo, Ohio, where she died aged . They had three children. The eldest daughter, Caroline, has been for several years teacher of drawing in the public schools of Toledo. She studied for

several years in the art classes of New York city and as a pupil of William Chase, another striking advance from the old homestead attic.

There are now living 4 grandchildren, 4 great grandchildren and 1 great great grandchild of Deborah Smith.

Lydia Potter Smith,

No. 19. Eleventh daughter and last child of Abraham and Zerviah. Born Sept. 2, 1797. Died Jan. 1st, 1872, aged 75 years. Married Joseph Savage Nov. 5, 1821, and on Dec. 26, 1822, received removal certificate from New Bedford to Bridgewater, Oneida county, N. Y., where they first made their home. They soon removed to Syracuse, where Stephen Smith had just settled and where they were joined many years later by Isaac Smith.

Joseph Savage was interested in both the salt and ice business of Syracuse, and they lived there 49 years. After her death, he made his home on Staten Island, where he died.

While Lydia Savage did not fulfil the English theory of the youngest of a family having exceptional ability, she was very "Smithy" according to the Yankee estimate. She had no children, but was always a helpful member of the community where she lived so long, and an active co-worker with Stephen Smith in his Anti-Slavery service. She did not retain the plain dress and speech of Friends, and was fond of pictures and music, and all good modern literature and poetry. When I last saw her in her home during the Civil war, she was taking lessons on the piano so as to be able to play the accompaniment to the Star Spangled Banner, which I was asked to do daily during my visit, she leading the song,—a nineteenth century survival of the spirit which led her father to sacrifice his Quaker membership in 1776. As she had no children, I have given her picture and the original certificate of her marriage to this society for preservation.

III—THIRTEEN CHILDREN OF REBECCA SMITH WILLIAMS

The thirteen children of Richard and Rebecca Smith Williams were born in New Bedford, and as this is the largest family of its generation in descent from Abraham and Zerviah Smith, and none of them are now living, I give a full record of them here.

No. 1. Joseph Ricketson Williams, oldest son and child of Rebecca Ricketson Williams, was born November 14th, 1808, and died June 15th, 1861. He was educated at the Friends Academy in New Bedford and entered Harvard college in 1826, the first descendant of Abraham Smith to have a college education. Graduating in 1830, he and his oldest sister, Lucy Ricketson Williams, started on a journey west, visited Niagara Falls, and went by steamer and stages to visit their aunt Zerviah Sawdy in northwest Pennsylvania. A letter to her father tells of their going on horseback to the Ohio state line and "galloping a mile into Ohio," never expecting to enter the state again. The accounts of this journey given by these two bright young people were long of great interest to the New Bedford families. One old Indian woman, however, a servant in the family, refused to be impressed; she said, "Huh! Miss Lucy make a great fuss over Niagara Falls; I guess she never see Mashpee Mill dam!"

Joseph Williams then entered the law office of "Honest" John Davis of Worcester, who with his wife, a sister of George Bancroft, the historian, became very much attached to him and appreciated his exceptional abilities. He then formed a law partnership with John H. Clifford of New Bedford, afterward Governor, but, his health failing, he went south in a sailing vessel, landing at St. Augustine, Florida, where he passed the winter, and purchasing a saddle horse there, rode home leisurely to New Bedford, arriving June 1st, 1835. His bronchial trouble still made it impossible for him to live on the seacoast, and finally he reluctantly gave up his chosen profession, for which he was well fitted, and in 1835 removed to Toledo, Ohio, where he started and named the Toledo Blade, still a leading Republican paper of the state, in partnership with Pierre M. Irving, a nephew of Washington Irving. In 1839 he removed to Constantine, Michigan, where, with his brother Richard Williams, he built and carried on for several years a successful flour mill.

Here he established a village on New England principles, and became the most prominent man in the county. He built and owned the Tavern and made it a "temperance centre" from the first, delivered instructive lectures in it and encouraged "assemblies," with dancing and refreshments free for all; the only restrictions were "no liquor and no shirtsleeves," and he always attended these dances with his family and guests. He became much interested in the planting of the first orchards in the state, and taking grafts from the fine orchards of Erie and Genessee counties in New York State, he traveled far on horseback through southern Michigan, grafting trees and encouraging and instructing the eastern pioneers who at that time were rapidly settling the State. For many years he wrote and spoke ably in regard to agriculture and political interests, and twice received the nomination of Republican senator for his district against Lewis Cass, afterwards governor. In 1844 he married Sarah Langdon of Buffalo, a grandniece of John Langdon, the Revolutionary governor of New Hampshire, and in 1853 returned to Toledo, Ohio, bought the Toledo Blade establishment and took editorial charge of it. Competent authority states: "Under his management the Blade became, from the first, the advocate of Republican-Free Soil principles. It was entirely independent and uncompromising and did more to inaugurate the Republican party in Ohio than all the other papers in the state. During his editorial career of three years, he had completely Republicanized the northwestern district of Ohio."

In 1856 he returned to Michigan, where he had retained his interests, to accept the presidency of the first agricultural college in the United States, at Lansing, Michigan. This college was the first to benefit by the United States grant of lands for educational purposes, and this land bill, usually called the Morrill bill after the member who presented it to congress, was really in spirit and substance original with Joseph R. Williams. Had he been elected to Congress and presented it himself to the government, it would have brought him deserved honor. A full account of his "work and words" in this connection was published in the proceedings of the Semi-Centennial celebration of the Michigan College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts held in 1907.

In 1858 he was chosen state senator for St. Joseph's county, and later Lieutenant Governor of Michigan and ex-officio Speaker of the State Senate. In the winter of 1860 his health was so affected by his faithful political service that he was obliged to make a trip to Madeira. Knowing well the critical condition of the country, he was impatient to return, and against all advice was again in New England in April, a few days before the attack on Sumter. When Lincoln issued his first call for state troops, Governor Blair of Michigan was ill and Mr. Williams was acting Lieutenant Governor and Speaker of the Senate. He went directly to Lansing, called an extra session of the legislature to raise the quota for Michigan, and, when assembled, opened it with a powerful patriotic speech. The business finished, he adjourned the session, returned to his home at Constantine, and within twenty-four hours died from a hemorrhage of the lungs, as truly a fighter as if he had fallen on the field of battle. The Rev. Robt. Collyer, of Chicago, held the service at his home in Michigan, and in a volume of his published sermons he speaks of this service and gives a fine tribute to the character and work of Mr. Williams. At his request, made long before his death, his body was brought to New Bedford and laid beside his parents; he said, "my exile will then be over." His birthplace never had a more loyal or brilliant son; one who knew him well said to me lately, "He was a leading man in northern Ohio, and capable of great service, and could he have lived, would have taken first rank in the state." He died in June, 1861, aged only 51 years, leaving three daughters. There are now living two daughters, six grandsons and one great grandchild of Joseph Ricketson Williams.

No. 2. Eliza Smith Williams, born July 8, 1810. Died Dec. 28, 1815.

No. 3. Lucy Ricketson Williams, born Aug. 2, 1812. Died Feb. 4, 1894.

Lucy R. Williams was born in a house still standing on Spring street, near Fourth. She was educated at Friends Academy with her brother Joseph and was much like him in temperament and intelligence, but with a stronger constitution, and outlived him many years. Her father, being very fond of music, gave her one of the first pianos in New Bedford, where at that time there were but two others, one brought from France many years before by Rhoda, daughter of Captain Hayden (afterward Mrs. Roland R. Crocker), and the other belonging to her school-

mate, Howland, afterward Mrs. Edward Mott Robinson. Edward L. White of Boston was their teacher, coming from Boston once a week for their lessons. The Howland piano was put in the third story of the old Gideon Howland house on Second street, because that strict old Quaker utterly disapproved of it, and his daughter, getting little encouragement, made but small progress in using it, so Lucy Williams used to go often to the upper room and, with closed doors, play jigs and sing songs to a delighted group of schoolmates. In her own home her father accompanied her on the flute and young people gathered there to enjoy the music. So strong was the Quaker element at that time that she said, afterwards, "There were very few of my age who could turn a tune, and it was really the first home where the young people went to dance and sing." Before her marriage, she made many visits in Worcester, where her brother studied law with Governor Davis, and among relatives in New York and Syracuse.

She married, June 1st, 1835, Samuel W. Hawes, youngest son of John Hawes of New Bedford, and I, their first child, was born in New Bedford in June, 1836. During that year they removed to Buffalo, New York, and were among the pioneer settlers of that city, then but a frontier town. There their son Richard Williams Hawes was born September, 1837. From the first, she was leader in her home and in the social life. Her husband was prosperous, their home a hospitable one and its doors always open to the innumerable friends and relatives journeying to and from New England. Charles A. Dana, then a resident of Buffalo, said of her, "By her genius and her beauty, she became a leader of society in that city, noted for the culture and refinement of its early citizens." For thirty-four years they were identified with all the best interests and activities of Buffalo, broken only by a period of ten years, from 1850 to 1860, when for some time they lived near Boston, he being in business there with his brother, Wm. T. Hawes. In 1855 he bought the Potomska farm in Dartmouth, but sold it in 1857 on account of ill health, and they returned to Buffalo in 1859. At this time Mr. Hawes opened some of the first oil wells in Canada and Pennsylvania, and brought the first petroleum into Buffalo, where he manufactured refined oil for many years. During the Civil war Mrs. Hawes was an active worker in the Buffalo branch of the Sanitary Commission, and president of the Freedmen's Aid society.

In 1870 they removed with their children and two grandchildren to Ho-Ho-Kus, N. J., near New York. In that city he continued in business until his death in 1882. Lucy Williams Hawes became at this time a frequent contributor to the New York Sun, furnishing material for a column of "Sunbeams" for several years. She later wrote interesting historical pamphlets on Buffalo and Lewiston, Niagara county, which were published by the Buffalo Historical society; also several articles in "Kate Field's Washington," of which Miss Field said, "These sparkling sketches, written at the age of 80 years, command a terse and vigorous style which younger writers might imitate with profit."

All her life she was an untiring correspondent, whose letters were welcomed by several generations and in many lands. She survived her husband twelve years and died at Ho-Ho-Kus, N. J., in 1894, in her 82nd year, with all her faculties strong and keen to the end.

No. 4. Rebecca Smith Williams, Jr., born June 25th, 1814. Died Oct. 8th, 1893, aged 79 years. Oct. 8, 1835, she married Lawrence Grinnell, son of Cornelius Grinnell of New Bedford. Mrs. Grinnell passed all her long life in New Bedford, where her beautiful and hospitable home will long be remembered. To her great beauty was added a practical executive ability that made her always among the helpful women of the city. At the beginning of the Civil war she was chosen first president of the New Bedford branch of the Sanitary Commission. The day after the departure of the first New Bedford company for Washington she assembled her family and neighbors in her home and cut out the first shirts that were sent to them. I was one of the workers there when Mr. Grinnell came in with the telegram that the troops had been fired upon in Baltimore. This branch did great work for the hospitals and nurses all through the war. Mrs. Joseph Delano later had charge of that work, but Mrs. Grinnell continued active in many ways as long as needed. In 1885 Mr. and Mrs. Grinnell celebrated their golden wedding, and eight years later, on their 58th wedding day, she passed away. Mr. Grinnell had become blind and physically helpless, and survived her only two months, dying Dec. 14, 1893. They had four children. Laura died in infancy. Frederick died Oct. 21st, 1905, aged 69. Mary Russell, died Oct. 11, 1872, aged 27. Richard Williams, married Norah Gardner of Providence, R. I., June 1874, died leaving one son and two daughters.

No. 5. Richard Williams, Jr., born Nov. 24, 1815. For many years was in business at Constantine with his brother, Joseph R. Williams, removing in 1858 to Buffalo, where he was interested in flouring mills. He married Anna, daughter of Eben Osborn of Sandusky, who survives him. At one time he spent several years in London, England, in charge of American milling machinery interests. He died at Buffalo in 188. They had no children.

No. 6. Zerviah Smith Williams, died of consumption July 25, 1833, aged 15 years.

No. 7. Lemuel Tallman Williams, died May 22, 1822, aged 2½ years.

No. 8. Eliza Smith Williams, born May 1st, 1821. Married Josias S. Coggeshall, 1846.

They moved to Constantine, Mich., where they lived with her brother, Joseph R. Williams, for some years. Mr. Coggeshall went to California in 1850, his wife following him two years after. Their children were: Laura Grinnell Coggeshall, born in New Bedford, died in Toledo, Ohio; Frank Coggeshall, born in New Bedford, died in New Bedford; Annie Williams Coggeshall, born in San Francisco. Mr. and Mrs. Coggeshall remained in California until his death, in February, 1890. Soon after, she returned with her two daughters to New Bedford to the homestead on Cottage street which she had inherited from her mother and unmarried sisters. The climate not agreeing with her, after her life on the Pacific coast, she removed to Toledo, Ohio, in 1891, where she died Jan. 13, 1892, followed by both of her daughters, who were unmarried.

No. 9. Maria Williams, born Feb. 10, 1824, died Aug. 15, 1890, aged 66.

Maria Williams, the oldest unmarried daughter, passed her whole life in New Bedford. After her father's death in 1845, when she was 21 years old, she took her place as the head of the household, and devoted herself to the care of her widowed mother and invalid sister, and later to two blind and childless aunts. Of the six "Williams sisters," considered in their generation the handsomest family group in New Bedford, she was one of marked personality. In spite of many attempts to induce her to preside over other homes, she preferred what was, in her, a life of single "blessedness." She was always active in helpful ways, was one of those who started and managed for several years the "ragged schools" or sewing classes which were held in the public schools on Saturday afternoons, and was an untiring worker in all the

patriotic and hospital work of the Sanitary Commission during the Civil war. Her loving care endeared her to her nieces and nephews, and many called for her to be with them in their last hours. A motherless daughter of her youngest brother, put in her charge when three years old, was a loving daughter to her for many years, and her early death, soon after her father's, broke the last link which held the faithful "maiden aunt" to life. She closed her home and spent some time with Mr. and Mrs. Grinnell, who needed her care, but she died before them, after a short illness.

No. 10. Sybil Tisdale Williams, born April 18, 1825, died Oct.

Sybil Williams, like her sisters, was educated in Friends Academy, married Thomas Bennett, Jr., of Fairhaven, and lived all her life in New Bedford, where, like her older sisters, she was prominent and helpful in all social and philanthropic work. She had a buoyant, cheery temperament which gave an added charm to her beauty, and a friendly, kind manner which remains a pleasant memory to all who knew her. In 1872 Mr. and Mrs. Bennett moved to the mansion of John Avery Parker on County street, where they resided the rest of their lives. For nearly thirty years, Mr. Bennett was superintendent and agent of Wamsutta Mills. They had two children, Williams and Clara Bennett. The early death of their son was a shock from which neither of them ever recovered. Mrs. Bennett died two years later, Oct. 20th, 1877, her husband surviving her until March, 1898. Their only daughter is still living in the family homestead of her grandfather, Captain Thomas Bennett, in Fairhaven.

No. 11. Lemuel Williams, born Dec. 26, 1826, died July 9, 1828.

No. 12. George Williams, born Nov. 28, 1828, died Dec. 1887.

George Williams, the fifth and youngest son, was but 18 years old at the time of his father's death, and was the first son to follow the "call of the sea" which had appealed so often to his ancestors. He made two voyages "before the mast" before entering the service of Grinnell & Minturn, of New York, where he remained until 1860 as first officer, and later as Captain. He served on many of the famous California "clippers," and was one of the officers who took the "Flying Cloud" on her record-breaking trip around Cape Horn. For many years he made annual trips to China. At one time, on the death of the Captain at Canton, he brought home the ship and a cargo worth over a million dollars, through one of the

stormiest voyages ever known. For some weeks the gales drove them back from the Atlantic coast, and three times they drifted back into the Gulf Stream, to thaw out the sails and rigging. They were six weeks overdue, and with food and clothing giving out. The carpet was taken from the cabin to make jackets for the crew, and finally the ship was safely anchored in New York harbor.

On the breaking out of the Civil war, which put an end for a time to the trade with China, he entered the United States Volunteer Navy, and was afterward transferred to the United States revenue cutter service, where he remained until his death. He was stationed for three years in New Bedford harbor, and also served six years on the Pacific coast, including two trips to Alaska. He was intensely patriotic, and said, "I have carried the American flag around the world many times, and into some port of nearly every country on the globe, and I have never seen anything handsomer, nor that I loved any better."

He married, March 5, 1861, Marion Boughton Lloyd, of Niagara county, N. Y., who died March 29, 1866. They had one daughter, Marion, who married Eliot D. Stetson of New Bedford, March, 1887.

George Williams died suddenly in New Bedford while spending a vacation there, and his daughter, died childless March 12, 1888, the last of her line.

No. 13. Abby Smith Williams, born Oct. 4, 1830, died Dec. 31, 1883.

The youngest of the thirteen children, was in some respects the most remarkable of them all. A fall when she was four years old injured her spine and made her an invalid for life. Inheriting the strong physical and mental traits of her parents, and a cheerful, philosophical temperament, her life of over fifty years was an active, useful one, in spite of its limitations. She was taught in her own home, in a great measure self-taught, and was an intelligent, enthusiastic reader. She had a fine sense of humor and was a keen judge of all phases of life. Two years spent at the home of her brother in Michigan interested her much, and she made frequent visits to other relatives, but her last years were spent in the New Bedford homestead, with her mother, sister and niece. Her oldest brother said of her, "She was the peer of the best of us, and had the best brain."—an illustration of the deduction of an English writer, quoted in the introduction to this paper, that the oldest and youngest of a large family have a greater likelihood of developing genius than any of the others.

IV—LATER RECORDS.

It was my original intention to limit records to the grandchildren of Abraham and Zerviah Smith, but I decided later to include all members of lines now extinct, that those records may be closed to date. I now add four names of descendants of three successive generations, which I feel should be recorded here, as none of them are now living. They are marked illustrations of the survival of different phases and types of their New England ancestry.

(1) Frederick Grinnell was born in New Bedford, March 14, 1836, a son of the late Lawrence Grinnell, former collector of customs of the port of New Bedford, and Rebecca (S. Williams) Grinnell. On his father's side he descended from an old French Huguenot family which emigrated to America in 1632 and settled first at Newport, and afterwards, toward the middle of the eighteenth century, at New Bedford. He attended the Friends Academy. In 1852 he entered the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute at Troy, N. Y., the youngest of his class, and the youngest who had ever entered at that time. At this institute he went through the three years' engineering course, graduating in 1855 with high honors, his name being at the head of the list of over 60 students of his own year. The subject of his graduating theses had been for some years at the head of the list of difficult problems, and Mr. Grinnell was the first one to solve it correctly. Having finished his educational career, Mr. Grinnell began his active life in 1856 at the Jersey City Locomotive works, whence he passed, in 1860, to the Corliss Steam Engine company of Providence, where his high ability in a short time secured him the position of treasurer and superintendent of the works. In 1865, however, he was induced to return to the Jersey City Locomotive works as general manager, and the fact that this concern was then leased by the Atlantic & Great Western railroad led to his forming the acquaintance of Sir Morton Peto and Mr. Forbes, on whose express invitation he went to England for the purpose of inspecting the chief locomotive engineering and mechanical works in the United Kingdom. Some time afterwards, when the Atlantic & Great Western Railway company was leased by the Erie company, Mr. Grinnell was offered the position of mechanical superintendent of the entire combined system.

Mr. Grinnell, however, notwithstanding his successful career as a

railway engineer, decided to use his energies and inventive powers for his own benefit, and to that end he purchased, in 1869, an interest in the Providence Steam & Gas Pipe company, a concern which had been founded in 1850. As engineer and manager of this company, he soon developed a large and successful business in the equipment of manufactories with all apparatus pertaining to the use of steam, water and gas, and, in addition, undertook large contracts for the building of towns' gas works, and the laying of water mains.

It was his connection with this company that led Mr. Grinnell to develop a system of fire protection by means of perforated pipes attached to the ceilings of factory rooms, into any of which water could be turned by the opening of externally fixed valves. This device met with a good deal of favor at the time; but as its successful operation depended entirely on human agency, Mr. Grinnell was, by a natural process, led to the study of a system which would be independent of such agency, and absolutely automatic in its working. Numerous automatic devices aiming at the extinction of fire by the agency of its own heat had been previously patented, but every one of them had failed in practice, either through their habit of bursting when not wanted, or failing to open at the critical time. Mr. Grinnell, in 1881, patented his famous sensitive valve sprinkler, self-closing under water pressure. In 1881 Mr. Grinnell further improved the apparatus by the invention of the dry pipe system and other appliances for the equipment of properties where the water in the pipes would freeze.

With Mr. Grinnell's wonderful mechanical genius were combined two other qualities—a lawyer's appreciation of the application of principles to facts and a keen power of explanation of mechanical subjects, all of which stood him in good stead in the demonstration of the value of his invention, and in the tremendous litigation which occurred in regard to it. He was really his own patent solicitor and expert, and his ability in both capacities was responsible for his successful career.

In 1892 the leading concerns manufacturing automatic appliances in different sections of the United States were amalgamated by Mr. Grinnell into one large corporation, under the title of the General Fire Extinguisher company. This company, of which he was the first president, has branch

offices in all leading cities of America, and extensive works at Providence, Philadelphia and Warren, Ohio. The rights of the sprinkler and other patents for Europe were acquired by William Mather of England. Mr. Grinnell remained at the head of the American company up to the time of his death.

During his residence in Providence, Mr. Grinnell was married to Alice Almy, daughter of the late William Almy of New Bedford, in 1864. Of this marriage two children were born, a son who died at the age of four years, and a daughter, now the wife of Robert W. Taft of Providence, a director in the N. Y., N. H. & H. railroad. Mrs. Grinnell died within a few years of her marriage.

In 1874 Mr. Grinnell was married to Miss Mary B. Page, a daughter of John H. W. Page. Mr. Page was principal of the Friends Academy from 1826 to 1829, afterwards studying law and being admitted to the bar in 1832. To Mr. and Mrs. Grinnell have been born four children, Russell Grinnell, whose wife, Rose Gifford, is a daughter of the late R. Swain Gifford, the artist; Lydia, now Mrs. John W. Knowles; Lawrence, who married Emily Rotch Severance, a granddaughter of Wm. J. Rotch of New Bedford, and has one son, Francis B., who married Elizabeth Merrihew Plummer, daughter of Leander A. Plummer, and had one son.

In 1894 Mr. and Mrs. Grinnell moved to this city, Mr. Grinnell having purchased the estate of his great-uncle, Joseph Grinnell, on County street, for a residence.

Throughout his life, Mr. Grinnell was an enthusiastic yachtsman, and took a prominent part in the sport of yachting. He was No. 5 among the original charter members of the New York Yacht club, and had served as a member of its regatta committee. He had also been a member of the New Bedford Yacht club for many years. Mr. Grinnell's first boat was the Lydia, a small schooner. In 1889 he had built the steel schooner Quickstep. She was designed by Burgess, and was intended for a family cruising yacht, but developed great speed. She was not only invariably victorious in her own class, but on three occasions won special races against the finest schooners of the class above her. The Quickstep measures 65 feet on the water line, is constructed of steel, and was built in 1889 from the plans of the well known designer, Burgess. On account of the reputation which he gained in handling the Quickstep, Mr. Grinnell's sailing master, Captain William Hansen, was selected to sail

the Vigilant in the international races of 1893 for the America cup; but he returned to Mr. Grinnell the following season and remained with him up to the time of Captain Hansen's death.

A few years later, tiring of the sport of sailing, and desiring a craft by which he could more quickly return to port at his pleasure, Mr. Grinnell in 1902 built the second Quickstep, a steamer, disposing of the schooner to New York people. The steamer was sold in 1905.

Small boat racing was another phase of yachting in which Mr. Grinnell was interested, and his son's Herreshoff cruisers have been an active factor in the races of the New Bedford club.

Mr. Grinnell was interested in a large number of local corporations. He was a director in the Mechanics bank, to which office he was elected a year after taking up his residence in this city; was a member of the board of investment of the New Bedford Institution for Savings; a director in the Wamsutta Mills corporation. As one of the management of the Morse Twist Drill company, Mr. Grinnell had much to do with the extension of that firm's business; and he was also one of the heads of the Gorham Mfg. Co. He died Oct. 5, 1905, aged 69.

No. 2. Russell D. Walbridge, great grandson of Abraham Smith and grandson of Elizabeth Smith and Wing Russell, was born in Buffalo, N. Y., in 1849, and died at Honolulu, 1901, aged 52 years. Educated at private schools in Buffalo, he entered the Polytechnic school in Troy in 1862. This was just ten years after his cousin, Frederick Grinnell, had entered there; Russell Walbridge entered at the same age, both the youngest in their class. After one year's study he went to Boise City, Idaho, where his father was in charge of a large silver mine, and spent a year in practical work as a mining engineer. He then returned to Troy and finished his course, graduating with honor. After more work with his father in California until 1883, he became chief engineer of mines at Tucson until 1885, when he went to Honolulu, and for several years was superintendent of a large sugar plantation on the island of Maui. It became the most successful one in the Hawaiian islands.

He married Bernice Parke of Honolulu, and in 1899 returned to the east, preferring to work, he said, "in his own country." He finally decided to return to Honolulu in 1900, and died suddenly in 1901, just as he was about to take charge of a plantation there.

No. 3. Williams Bennett, only son of Thomas and Sybil Williams Bennett, was born in New Bedford in 1859 and died Dec. 25, 1875, aged sixteen years.

Williams Bennett was educated in private schools of New Bedford and early showed his inheritance of great mechanical ability. When a mere child he spent much time in the workshop of the Wamsutta Mills, of which his father was the builder and superintendent. At twelve years he built and ran a small steam engine with which to work a small printing press, and published a very creditable small newspaper. In September, 1875, he entered the Polytechnic school at Troy, the youngest in his class, the same record in age and standing as that of Frederick Grinnell in 1852 and Russell Walbridge in 1862. The hope that he would repeat their honorable finish of the course was disappointed by his death, of typhoid fever, Dec. 25th, three months after his entrance.

No. 4. Franklin Smith Macomber, son of Alfred E. and Sarah Smith Macomber, born March 2, 1877, died Dec. 10, 1908.

Alfred E. Macomber is of Scotch descent, and was born in Bristol county, Mass.; his ancestors were "proprietors" in the Pilgrim Plymouth colony as early as 1640.

Sarah Smith Macomber is daughter of John T. S. Smith, the homeopathic physician of New York, and a great granddaughter of Abraham Smith.

Franklin Smith Macomber was the most marked representative of his family branch in his day and generation. He was born in Toledo, Ohio, educated in the public schools, then entered Cornell university and took the law course, returning to Toledo in 1898 when 21 years old, and entering the real estate firm of his father. From his parents he inherited a strong, wise, humanitarian tendency which, through this business, soon developed in many practical ways. It was said of him:

"The scope of his vision and the philosophy and depth of his thought were unknown, except to those who knew the smiling young man best. He had a thorough knowledge and aptitude for architecture and civic engineering. He spent much time going over certain portions of the city, until he learned its possibilities, then placed his mental designs on paper for his own gratification. He took few into his confidence, preferring to wait until the time was ripe, to call the attention of the public with a backing of facts and figures. That his judg-

ment in public improvement was wise was shown in the development of the district where he planted apartment houses and playgrounds; his motive was entirely unselfish and he sought no holdings in other districts that he was planning to regenerate."

In 1903 he married Miss Annie Reynolds of Toledo, and they had one son. He was associated with every movement for the welfare of Toledo, and was the life and energy of the boards with which he became connected. In January, 1906, he was appointed a member of the Board of public safety, and the next year was elected its vice president. In all matters presented to the City Council he was invariably the spokesman for the safety Board, and matters pertaining to the elevation and efficiency of the police and fire departments occupied the major part of his time. He was in daily consultation with experts, gathering data and statistics to show the probable cost and benefits of improvements. He lent much assistance to the work of the Toledo newsboys, and with his brother, Irving E. Macomber, gave the use of a large tract of land to the Newsboys' association for a playground, and a similar tract was appropriated for the use of the school board as a school garden. In the midst of all this strong, helpful work, he developed a trouble of the nose, which, after consultation with the best specialists, seemed to necessitate a slight operation. He went promptly and hopefully to a hospital, his heart action was tested, an anaesthetic administered, and in five minutes he was dead, and a whole city mourned his loss! The mayor issued an official proclamation and all public and private flags were lowered to half mast. The leading paper said: "Since the death of President Mc Kinley, nothing has so shocked and shaken Toledo as the untimely passing of Franklin S. Macomber, city-saver." On the Sunday after his death a public memorial service was held by the City Council. In a tender loving address, the Mayor spoke of his short but complete life, saying, "The record is far too short; it was not time for him to die." Among many other tributes, I add only this from the president of the Labor Union:

"He was my friend; he was one of the very few men in his walk of life who appreciated the efforts of the workers. It would not be fitting for me to recount all he has done for labor, but he always prided himself on being at the service of those who toil. He was a many-sided man, who paid less attention to the individual than to the wants of the community.

You can appeal to your rulers and plead with them to be kind and just, and implore your legislatures to treat you kindly, but these forces must bend their knees to men like Franklin Macomber."

Surely he was "well born," and he died when only thirty-one years old, "good and wise, honorable and honored."

The descendants of Abraham and Zerviah Smith, now living, whom I have been able to trace and record, are: 1 grandchild, 22 great grandchildren, 24 great great grandchildren, 21 great great great grandchildren.

From some of my "forebears," I have inherited a saying which has been used for more than one generation. When condemning the character of any one, it was said "He is poor timber, that will neither take polish

nor hold nails!" I think we can say of the sturdy New England family tree, of which I have made this record of more than three hundred years of growth, that it has always been "good timber." In its first century it held fast the "nails" of adversity, exile, torture, imprisonment and daily privation; in the second and third centuries its vigorous branches reached out to absorb the best elements of every possible gain in power and skill of both body and mind; and as I have lately traced the growth of its fourth century, I am proud to find many of good, firm grain, ready to take on the polish of the 20th century development and opportunity. I bequeath the recording of this to the family historian of 2010, for reservation by the "Old Dartmouth Historical Society."



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 31

Being the proceedings of the Thirty-first Meeting of the Old
Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building, Water
Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on December 29, 1910.

ARTHUR HATHAWAY AND HIS IMMEDIATE
DESCENDANTS By Caroline W. Hathaway

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

THIRTY-FIRST MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

DECEMBER 29, 1910

President Edmund Wood addressed the members concerning a recent publication by Anna and Walton Ricketson. Daniel Ricketson will always be

"A book has been published this month in New Bedford which should receive honorable mention at the meeting of this society, 'Daniel Ricketson—Autobiographic and Miscellaneous.' This historical work has been compiled and edited by two of our members, Anna and Walton Ricketson, authors of 'Daniel Ricketson and His Friends,' and 'New Bedford of the Past.' The book is noteworthy because it supplies in permanent form additional material from the pen of Old Dartmouth's chief historian.

"Daniel Ricketson will always be a name cherished by this historical society, because he was perhaps the very first to realize that his own time was full of unrecorded treasures of

biographical knowledge, historical facts, and family traditions, which were in great danger of being lost to the future.

He does not seem to have had in mind the writing of a complete history of this township, but rather, as he himself states, the assembling of this vast treasure of fugitive local fact and tradition,—the recording of material of inestimable value for the use of future historians and antiquarians.

As a matter of fact he did group them into a satisfactory form, and published a work which was for a generation our only history.

The greatest services that the establishment of this society performed in this community was to arouse our inhabitants to a realization of the value of the relics of the past which still surrounded us, and the records which, unappreciated and unexamined

in many households, were in danger of oblivion. It formed a nucleus for collection, and a devoted working force for study and research.

But incidentally this society performed a noteworthy service in its earliest existence. It brought Daniel Ricketson into his own. It awakened many to see for the first time the real value of the material he had gathered and recorded, and to confess in public manner the debt that this generation owed to his sagacious foresight and loving labor.

It had been the fashion for many years to magnify the occasional errors in statement and to dwell upon the desultory and unskilful form in which he had left his researches. But with the formation of this society came a fuller realization of what he had really accomplished. It is impossible now to read the earliest proceedings of this society as well as the earlier exercises connected with the Bartholomew Gosnold memorial at Cuttyhunk, without acknowledging that our historian, Daniel Ricketson, is of blessed memory, and one whom this society will always delight to honor.

The work which has just been published by his daughter and son, Anna and Walton Ricketson, contains some historical material but has its chief value in the glimpses which it reveals to us of the man himself, of his ambition, of his devotedness, of his lofty ideals, and of his full realization of his own limitations and shortcomings. He associated intimately with some of the largest minds in the land. He corresponded and exchanged literary efforts with some of our greatest thinkers and most successful writers. His conversation, his fund of close observations of nature, and his intellectual hospitality attracted them and made his home quite a centre for high thinking and philosophical speculation. His own literary work was placed in an almost unfair competition, for here it was put exactly alongside of that of Emerson and Thoreau and Alcott and Curtis and Whittier.

The perusal of the delightful letters in this volume emphasizes again the extraordinary change which is now often commented on in the popular education of adults. Now it is largely accomplished through the eye—the reading of the daily newspapers—and the play, and in the few and much adulterated kernels of information which may occasionally be found in the modern vaudeville.

A generation and a half ago this hall would have been crowded to hear the essayist of the evening. It was the era of the Lyceum Bureau. Our largest halls were filled, without the

attractions of orchestras and stereopticon slides, to hear the leaders of thought and action in that day, discourse on philosophy and on the problems involved in current events.

It seems to us now, as we look back, that 'there were giants in those days.' Then was the climax of popular oratory when vast audiences sat thrilled by the skill of the speaker, and were swayed as a mass by a magnetic address.

New Bedford heard the best that appeared on the lecture platform, and Daniel Ricketson entertained some of the best.

Then were the days of one-night stands, as the theatre managers would now call it. A popular speaker would swing around the circle, with a night in New Bedford and then a night in Boston, with perhaps a night or two intervening.

Emerson and Thoreau and George William Curtis were favorites here, and year after year they, and many others, sojourned before or after the lecture with Daniel Ricketson at his delightful home at Brooklawn on Acushnet avenue. Here during the late evening, around the blazing fire in the rustic study called 'The Shanty,' sat our hospitable fellow citizen and his distinguished guest, and discoursed of nature and poetry and art, and brought in with that old-time appropriateness those resounding quotations from the poets, both Latin and English.

The book reveals a beautiful picture of an unusual life."

President Wood stated that a very praiseworthy and popular suggestion of our secretary has developed into quite a success. It was that brass tablets be placed in the panels of our doorways, to commemorate the names of the earliest settlers and that these panels be provided by some one of their descendants who is a member of the society.

President Wood read the inscriptions upon the new tablets, as follows:

ARTHUR HATHAWAY,

Magistrate.

DIED—1711.

From a Descendant—Thomas S. Hathaway.

JOHN RUSSELL,

First Deputy

from Dartmouth.

1608—1694-5.

From a Descendant—Harry B. Russell.

HUGH MOSHER,

First Pastor

of the

First Baptist Church

in Old Dartmouth.

From a Descendant—Frank A. Mosher.

President Wood said that it had also been suggested that the society should in the same manner record the names of citizens distinguished in the less remote history of the city, and that tablets to their memory might be placed in the panels of the archway in the meeting room. He added that one such tablet had already been placed. The tablet is inscribed as follows:

In Memory of
WILLIAM CUSHING WHITRIDGE,
"The Beloved Physician."
Born in Tiverton, Rhode Island,
NOV. 25, 1784.
Died in New Bedford, Mass.,
DEC. 28, 1857.
From His Grand-daughter
Bertha Whitridge Smith.



MISS CAROLINE W. HATHAWAY

Arthur Hathaway and His Immediate Descendants

BY

CAROLINE W. HATHAWAY

In searching for reliable information of the first settlers of Dartmouth, nearly three hundred years ago, many items of interest and value are brought to light, giving an insight into their aims and accomplishments. As time is counted, it is only a few years since the forefathers laid the foundation for the physical and social life of this territory. Among the number was Arthur Hathaway.

The name of Hathaway is local in Wales, and is derived from Port Heathway. It must be local as well in Gloucestershire and Wiltshire, for in the latter at one time there were eighteen Hathaways to every ten thousand inhabitants. The counties of Wales that border on the River Severn, are as much English as those on the opposite side, in the United Kingdom. Although it has not been possible to trace the subject of this article back to either of the above localities, it is fair to suppose that he or his might have emigrated from thereabouts. In Hallens London City Church Registers, it is recorded that "Richard Hathaway of St. Lawrence, Old Jewry, gent., and Anne (Amy) Moddox, spinster of the City of London were married at St. Bartholomew Exchange Nov. 20, 1582 B., and another reads, London, St. Botolph, Bishopsgate, 1652, Thomas Hathaway is married to Elizabeth Harper." Arthur Hathaway named his first son John, and his second son Thomas, and his son John named one of his sons Richard, he, Arthur might or might not have come from London. The records reveal a variety of spelling, the most common forms are Hathaway, Hatheway, Hathway, Hada-way, Hauthaway; they probably belong to the same original family, and they should be spelled one way. The Hathaways of Dartmouth trace their ancestry back to Arthur, who married Sarah, daughter of John Cooke. The tradition is, that

the Hathaways in personal appearance were tall, loosely built, walked with a swinging motion and were of florid complexion, fair hair and blue eyes. This type appears in almost every generation.

There is no detailed documentary information before 1652, thereby much confusion exists. The year of 1651, one Arthur Hathaway was reported as owning in lot 26 in Punccka-teest, now Tiverton. In 1643 a resident of Marshfield of the same name was capable of bearing arms, and was at town meeting at Plymouth in 1646. The Colonial Records state that Arthur Hathaway had a share in lands in that part of Plymouth called Kingston. The records do not settle the question of whether these individuals were one person. Elisha C. Leonard thought they were, while some investigators assert that there were two Arthurs, father and son. Then one John Hathaway, Jr., kept an ordinary at Freetown, presumably at Assonet. John Hathaway at Barnstable, was fined in 1663 for breach of peace, and in 1668 for drunkenness. It was thought at one time that all of these events related to the same John, but this is now doubted; whether either John was a relative of Arthur is a question. John D. Baldwin, a scholarly gentleman residing in Worcester, and the only writer who makes the statement, wrote to the Historical and Genealogical Register: "I have found by investigation that John and Arthur Hathaway, (brothers probably) came to America in 1638 from one of the Welsh counties of Great Britain. John was in Barnstable, but afterward settled in that part of Taunton now Berkley, where he owned land in 1638. Arthur settled in Plymouth and his son married Sarah Cooke." Very little weight can be given to this statement as no authority is given. Gen. E. W. Peirce wrote to the same register that he had discovered a record which proved that the Taunton John

Hathaway was not the same individual who was in Barnstable. Owing to the absence of documentary information, it will not now be possible to state when and where Arthur Hathaway was born; who were his parents and relatives; and when he came to Plymouth colony. This narrative must commence with his marriage to the daughter of John Cooke, November 20, 1652, the same year that the colony granted the territory on Buzzards bay to the thirty-six purchasers of whom Cooke was one. In the first census of New Bedford town in 1790, there were thirty-eight male Hathaways. During the past century there may have been a few Hathaway families that became residents of New Bedford who belonged to the Taunton or Barnstable branches. But so far as known, all who resided within the limits of Old Dartmouth before 1800, were descendants of Arthur Hathaway. By marriage he was connected with important families of Plymouth colony. John Cooke at the age of ten years came in the Mayflower with his father Francis, and he married Sarah Warren, daughter of Richard, who also came in the Mayflower, and were always prominent at Plymouth. John Cooke held Anabaptist views, and was not in accord with the Pilgrim church, and it is suggested that they were entirely willing he should remove his home to Buzzards bay. How soon after the grant of Cushena, any of the purchasers removed to Buzzards bay has not been determined, but not more than seven made their home in Dartmouth.

The name was applied to this region in a tax levy as early as 1632, although the town of Dartmouth was not constituted until 1664. But as early as 1660 Arthur Hathaway and "Segeant" Shaw were residing here, because an order was given to Captain Willet to collect their taxes. In 1656 Hathaway was a member of the grand jury, but probably not from an unincorporated place like Cushena. He did not leave Plymouth until after Feb. 28, 1655, and so must have taken up his abode at Dartmouth between 1655 and 1660.

Robert Hicks was one of the "old comers" to whom Dartmouth was granted, but by some mistake his name was omitted and the name of his son, Samuel, was substituted. When Robert died his heirs brought a petition to have this error rectified, and it was proposed that Samuel should consider the Dartmouth lands as belonging to his father and take only his share therein, but he refused, so in 1662 the matter was submitted to Samuel Jenny, James Shaw, and Arthur Hathaway to decide his

proportion. The result has not been preserved. Samuel it appears retained possession of the Dartmouth lands. Arthur Hathaway purchased from Samuel Cuthbert in 1661, one-half share of land which was one-sixty-eighth of the entire territory of Dartmouth. This gave him a standing as a proprietor independent of his wife's father. The lack of records of this period seriously impair all investigation. There was a book kept by the land owners, which was burned in the house of Thomas Hathaway in 1725. Possibly it contained transactions of the town as a separate corporation, but the existing records of the town do not begin until 1673. After annual elections there were sent to Plymouth a list of the officials chosen at town meetings. Dartmouth chose a constable in 1664, but no selectmen are reported until 1667 and then Arthur Hathaway was one of the board.

The duties of a constable at that time were manifold and must have been taxing. In 1633 it was found necessary to appoint a constable, and Joshua Pratt was chosen for Plymouth. Previous to that time Captain Miles Standish had performed the duties which belonged to that office by virtue of his captaincy. Until 1638, the constable for Plymouth was messenger of the court, the prototype of the sergeant at arms of the Massachusetts legislature. His duty was to attend general court and court of assistants, to act as keeper of the jail, to execute punishment, to give warnings to such marriages as shall be approved by authority, to seal weights and measures and to measure out such land as shall be ordered by the governor or government. During the first twenty years after the town was established, Arthur Hathaway was eight terms "select"-man. In 1674 with Henry Tucker and Peleg Tripp he was empowered to lay out every homestead. In 1671 he was appointed a magistrate.

The official career of Arthur Hathaway ends abruptly in 1684 and with the exception of two deeds, and a will he disappears from all recorded history. Twelve years later in 1696 he decided to divide his lands. He owned on the east side of the Acushnet river, north of Dahl's corner. The south half he gave to his son, Jonathan, and the north to his son Thomas. The deeds were executed later and were not recorded until several years later, which would indicate that he was not ready to complete the transfer when it was first arranged. This was his farm where he lived. It included Captain Franklyn Howland's, and the Laura Keene farm, and land north and south. Some lands also included,

are described as being near the tract which John Howard sold to James Samson, near Obshokqutut, the Indian name for Fort Phoenix. These deeds are executed by his written signature. Nothing further appears concerning Arthur Hathaway until the probate of his will, which was dated February, 1709-10, and presented to the court February, 1710-11. It was executed by his mark. The witnesses were John Cannon, Jr., Isaac Howland and Jonathan Delano. It states that he "was very weak of body but of perfect mind and memory." He gave to his wife Sarah the income of certain estate and a legacy of five shilling to each of his children: Thomas, Jonathan, Mary Hammond, Lydia Sisson, and Hannah Cadman. His real estate consisting of a half share of land in Dartmouth, he devised to his son John, whom he selected as executor. The sudden termination of his business and official career presents a curious problem that defies explanation. His name does not appear even as a witness to any will or deed during that long period. His death probably took place within a month before the probate of his will. The inventory of his estate contained the following:

One-half share of land, £200.

Feather beds and bedding, £40.

A Bible and other books, £5.

Table linen, woolen, yarn and flax, 3 iron pots, 2 iron kettles, 1 brass kettle, 2 brass skilletts, a warming pan, barrel of cider, 30 pounds of tobacco.

The only debt due from his estate was a bill of Dr. James Tallman for £4 4s.

There is no tradition nor record of where his house stood or his homestead; it was probably not much, if any, east of the main road extending to Acushnet. The early settlers located their houses within easy access to the rivers where they could escape from the Indians. According to the will of Arthur Hathaway he left three sons and three daughters.

John—Married (1) Joanna Pope, daughter of Thomas and Sarah Jenny Pope, 1732; (2) Patience.

Thomas—Married Hepzibeth, daughter of Nathaniel and Mary Starbuck, of Nantucket, 1748.

Jonathan—Married Susannah Pope, daughter of Captain Seth Pope.

Mary—Married Samuel Hammond, son of Benjamin Hammond.

Lydia—Married James Sisson, son of Richard Sisson.

Hannah—Married George Cadman, son of William Cadman.

About 1684 the Hammond family lived in that section of Rochester now Mattapoisett, and they owned expensive tracts near the Dartmouth line

and on Mattapoisett Neck. Benjamin Hammond was a contemporary and associate surveyor with Benjamin Crane in the work in Dartmouth. The Sissons came to Dartmouth from Portsmouth, R. I. Richard owned land in Dartmouth, but probably never lived there and his interests came into the possession of his son James. His homestead was at the Head of Westport, on the south side of the road and west side of the river, and comprised the region from the river west to the Central Village road, and half a mile down the river. His house was at the corner near the bridge where he kept a public-house, and the place was known as "Sisson's." Here were held meetings of the proprietors, and here for over one hundred and fifty years was a tavern.

Hannah Hathaway married George Cadman, son of Honorable William Cadman, of Portsmouth, R. I. George Cadman was one of the leading men of Dartmouth. He was selectman, treasurer and overseer of the poor. His name appears as a witness to most of the wills of his day, and he may have written them. Cadman's Neck was owned by his brother Richard.

George Cadman's farm was very long, extending from the east branch of the Westport river northwest to Brownell's corner. It lay between two brooks, one of which is two miles south of the Head and is still called Cadman's brook.

He died in 1718, leaving only one child, a daughter, Elizabeth, who married William White. Some part of his farm near the river was owned in recent years by the White descendants. While no information fixes the location of George Cadman's house, there is reason to suppose that it was near the river, on the south side of Cadman's brook, on the farm recently owned by Stephen Kirby, and which for over a century was owned by the White family.

The three sons of Arthur were farmers, and do not appear to have sought public life. John and Thomas served one year each as constable, and John was once elected "Tythingman."

Thomas Hathaway was selectman for two years and was clerk of the proprietors when his house was burned down and with it the land records. This comprised the whole of their official career. In addition to the landed interests received from their father, they purchased largely from outside owners, and each family came into possession of several large farms. By marriage they became connected with several well known families in this section of the province.

John, the oldest son, married Johanna Pope, daughter of Thomas Pope, and Sarah "Jenne," both well-known families in Plymouth. (A well-preserved Pope cradle of 1648 is exhibited in this building.) His second wife was Patience.

The first wife had six children, and the second ten, and of these, ten were sons.

Thomas Hathaway married Hepzibeth Starbuck, daughter of Nathaniel, of Nantucket, and Mary Starbuck, whose father was Tristram Coffin. This was the "Great Mary Starbuck," the founder of the Society of Friends at Nantucket. They had nine children, of whom four were sons.

1671 Jonathan Hathaway married Susannah Pope, daughter of Captain Seth Pope, one of the leading men in Dartmouth, who was a brother of John Hathaway's wife, Johanna Pope. In this family there were ten children, of whom six were sons. From these three families there were twenty sons to perpetuate the name.

John Hathaway—Married (1st) Joanna Pope, daughter Thos. and Sarah (Carey) Pope.

Children.

Sarah—Married John Cadman.
 Joanna—Married Elkanah Blackwell.
 John—Married Alice Lauenders.
 Arthur—Married (2) Maria Luce.
 Hannah—Married _____ Boomer.
 Mary—Married _____ Douglass.
 John Hathaway (married 2nd) Patience.

Children.

Jonathan—Married Abigail Nye.
 Richard—Married Deborah Doty.
 Thomas.
 Hunnewell—Married Mary _____.
 Abialson—Married Mary Taber.
 Elizabeth.
 Patience—Married Reuben Peckham.
 Benjamin—Married Elizabeth Richmond, Mary Hix.
 James—Married Mary _____.
 Ebenezer—Married Ruth Hatch.

Thomas Hathaway married Hepzibeth Starbuck, daughter of Nathaniel and Mary (Coffin) Starbuck of Nantucket.

Children.

Antipas—Married Patience Church.
 Apphia—Married Adam Mott.
 Elizabeth—Married John Clark.
 Mary—Married Thomas Kempton.
 Thomas—Married Lois Taber.
 Nathaniel—Married _____.
 Hepzibeth—Married Samuel Wing.
 Jethro—Married Hannah West.
 Pernel—Married _____.

Jonathan Hathaway married Susanna Pope, daughter of Seth Pope.

Children.

Elizabeth.
 Abigail—Married Seth Spooner.
 Gamaliel—Married Hannah Hillman.
 Hannah.
 Seth—Married Hannah Willis
 Deborah—Married Jireh Swift.
 Jonathan—Married Bridget Delano.
 Silas.
 Elnathan—Married Esther Spooner.
 Paul—Married Ann _____.

The three brothers above mentioned owned large sections of the ancient town.

Jonathan's Hathaway's south line was at Dahl's corner, where the line between Fairhaven and Acushnet crosses the road. It extended north about one thousand feet, and from the river east over one mile, and was bounded on the north by the Laura Keene and Franklyn Howland farms. Thomas Hathaway had the estate next north, in width half a mile north and south, and extended back from the river over two miles, and comprising six hundred acres. Both had land on Sconticut Neck.

Jonathan Hathaway had large tracts in the north part of Long Plain village, extending from Quaker Lane, north over half a mile, and the same distance east of the main road toward Rochester, and to the westward, across the river nearly to the Keene road.

John Hathaway's land, chiefly on the west side of the Acushnet river, was in several tracts, and in area was about as extensive as that of his brother Thomas. His homestead extended from the river out to Mt. Pleasant street, and began at a point 330 feet south of Davis street at the north line of the Coffin farm, and extended north as far as Brooklawn park. On the water front of this farm are located today the Whitman, Manomet, Nonquitt and Nashawena mills. In the northeast corner on the river was a landing place as early as 1730, and here John McPherson started the village of Belleville in 1774.

John Hathaway had another tract of 200 acres on the south side of Hathaway road, and extending west from Shawmut avenue to the ledge. On Shawmut its frontage is over half a mile. On the north side of the Tarkiln Hill road were large tracts extending down from the hill west beyond the railroad, and east about the same distance. The house that he gave his son Arthur stands there today, and is still occupied. Arthur early moved to Rochester, and owned a large tract there. John also owned



THE THOMAS HATHAWAY HOUSE.
Built About 1725.



THE HATHAWAY-CANNON HOUSE.
Built about 1729.
Near Tarkiln Hill.

a large tract to the south of Sassaquin pond, the east part of which became the farm of Jonathan Tobey.

The location of the houses of Thomas and Jonathan Hathaway can be determined, but not in the case of John. The location of the Belleville cemetery may indicate that John Hathaway's house was on the river front, and not far distant. In 1704 Acushnet avenue was laid out in its present location, and likely since then the farm house was on the road. There is neither record or tradition where it stood. In 1730 he had a lane running east from Acushnet avenue about 300 yards toward Belleville. His house may have been at its end.

When the road from Dahl's corner on the line between Acushnet and Fairhaven was laid out southerly to Oxford, it began at the corner of Susannah Hathaway's orchard. This was on the east side of the road at the north side of the Fork. If the house of Jonathan, her husband, stood nearby, as might reasonably be supposed, its location is then approximately fixed. The Jonathan Hathaway farm was narrow and very long. Rebecca Hathaway, one of his descendants who died in 1888, owned and occupied a part of this farm.

Next north of the Captain Franklyn Howland place is a solid two-story house, centre chimney, end to the road, and fronting south. It is known as the Stephen Hathaway house, from the fact that he was owner, and occupant for forty-six years from 1792 to 1838. The house was built in 1725 by Thomas Hathaway, whose former dwelling burned in 1725, and in it all the records of the land-owners of whom he was clerk. There he built the present house. It is one of the finest colonial houses in Old Dartmouth. The inhabitants at Acushnet in 1711 concluded to avail themselves of local water-power instead of depending on the first enterprise established at Smith's Mills; so that an association was formed composed of the three Hathaway brothers, together with Seth Pope and Thomas Taber, and they obtained from the proprietors a grant of land on the north side of the road at the Head of the Acushnet, and on each side of the river. Here they built after 1711 a grist mill, and a saw mill. The Hathaways, Thomas and John, after 15 years, conveyed their share to Nathaniel Shepard (in 1726). These mills were operated on both sides of the river until within a half a century, when those on the east side were demolished. The saw mill on the west side is still standing.

Titles were often added to names in deeds to identify the social standing

of the individual. In 1728 John and Jonathan were known as yeomen. John signed with his mark, while Thomas and Jonathan wrote their names. Thomas was described first as a yeoman, and latterly as "gentleman."

There is no tradition that either was entitled to adopt a coat of arms. From works on heraldry it appears that there was a Hathaway family in Devonshire and in Gloucestershire that received grants of arms widely different in design. Stated in popular language, one comprised three silver birds on a black background, and the other a silver bugle horn on a black ground, while the crest is a demi-lion rampant with a fleur-de-lys, in the dexter (right) paw in red, on a black ground. "The lion as an armorial device was used almost exclusively before the 13th century, intended to be emblematical of their bearer, and signified, to an eminent degree, strength, courage and generosity."

The church affiliations of these people are difficult to state as there was no religious organization in Dartmouth until 1699. Arthur Hathaway must have been a member of the Colonial church at Plymouth or Duxbury. According to the tradition concerning John Cooke, it might be inferred that he was disposed toward a liberal adaptation of the Plymouth theology to changed conditions at Dartmouth where numerous families from Portsmouth were inclined toward the Baptists and Quakers. Both of these sects had religious gatherings in Dartmouth as early as 1680, and quite likely the Plymouth emigrants on the east side of the Acushnet river, including the families of Samson, Spooner, Jenny, Pope, Cooke, Hathaway, Shaw and Falmer, may also have had some small house congregation. The meeting of Quakers was organized in 1699, and the First Congregational church at Acushnet was formed in 1708. Arthur Hathaway left nothing to show his choice. His name does not appear in relation to any Quaker activities, so probably he remained connected with the first church. Without question the Hammonds of Rochester were staunch members of the Pilgrim church. The Cadmans and Sissons probably were associated with the Quakers.

In 1708 came the first clash between the Presbyterians and the Quakers, which resulted in the great struggle in 1723 when the English king, George I, overruled the general court of Massachusetts and declared the Quakers entitled to freedom from contributing toward the maintenance of Congregational churches and min-

isters. At the opening of the contest, which was urged chiefly in Dartmouth, a petition signed by eighty-six men who were Quakers and Baptists, was sent to the general court protesting against the church tax. This was signed by John and Thomas Hathaway. The position of Thomas can be easily understood, because his wife belonged to the leading Quaker family of Nantucket. John's first wife was a sister of Captain Seth Pope, who was a vigorous Puritan. The second wife hasn't yet been identified, but the second marriage may have led to his favor for the Quakers.

In 1736 the men connected with the Congregational church at Acushnet agreed to contribute one hundred and three pounds for the minister. It included the names of Jonathan Hathaway, senior, and junior. As the father had married Captain Seth Pope's daughter this church relation is explained. According to the usage of that day, women seldom owned real estate. In their wills the daughters were given money or personal chattels, but the houses and lands were given to the sons. Without attempting to describe in detail the descent of the extensive landed interests of the three Hathaway brothers, a brief statement will be given indicating the location of the homesteads of the nineteen grandsons of Arthur Hathaway. Thomas had three sons; to Antipas he gave the north third of his homestead, part of which was recently owned by George F. Lewis, and the house which he built was burned down last spring. The middle section he gave to Jethro, and this was the Stephen Hathaway farm in later years; while Thomas received the south third, which included the Laura Keene and Captain Franklin Howland farms.

Jonathan Hathaway had six sons. In the division of his estate Gamaliel received the narrow farm north of Dahl's corner; Paul received a house lot in Fairhaven village between Middle and Water streets, and the others, Seth, Jonathan, Silas, and El-nathan, received tracts in the north part of Long Plain. John Hathaway had ten sons. In 1730 he conveyed to each a small lot of one acre at Belleville, which was the first attempt to establish a village on the west side of the Acushnet, south of its head. They each had a farm. Jonathan received the north two-thirds of the homestead, including the Belleville and Nash farm. The south third of his homestead he gave to his son John, and this included the Peter Cutler, Tucker and Nye farms. Arthur received the farm on the north side

of the road, and on the east side of Tarklin Hill, while the farm on the west side of the hill, extending west beyond the railroad, was given to Ebenezer.

Abiah had the north and south quarters of the farm on the south side of the Hathaway road, and west of Shawmut avenue, and Richard received the central part, comprising one-half. The latter is now owned by C. T. W. Gifford.

The farm on the south side of Sascowan pond, now called Sassaquin, went to Benjamin and James, and in the division James received the last half, which later was sold to Jonathan Tobey, and in recent years owned by Morton and others.

The burial places in Dartmouth before 1700 have been obliterated beyond identification. The Quakers started at Apponegansett that year, and had their yard near the meeting-house. The Presbyterians built their church at the Head of Acushnet, 1712, and since that date the churchyard has been a cemetery. Except in this burial place very few gravestones before 1800 are known to exist. The Quakers excluded them from all burial places before 1850.

Tradition states that John Cooke was buried near the shore at Oxford. In his will he gave the "land near the burial place to Arthur Hathaway." The line of demarcation between different religious sects in Dartmouth appears to have been recognized even to the grave. In the churchyard at Acushnet which John Jenney gave, "to the people of God called Presbyterians," none but members of the church were admitted—Jonathan Hathaway was loyal to this organization, was buried here, and near the stone that marks his grave are those of his relatives and friends who stood steadfast to the Pilgrim church, but no gravestone appears at this place referring to Thomas or John Hathaway. The feeling had run too deep in the great controversy between the Quakers, and Presbyterians, and these two brothers had allied themselves with the Society of Friends. Although a family of abundant means, there is no information as to the location of the burial lot of Thomas Hathaway. Having adopted the stern rule of the Quakers, they rest in unknown graves.

On a hill overlooking the Acushnet river at Belleville is an ancient burying ground. All that marks the graves are rows of rough stones taken from neighboring fields. Not a name or a date designates what person found here a last resting place, suggesting the influence of the Quak-

er dominion that held control of Dartmouth for nearly two centuries. Here was the spot selected by John Hathaway for the burial place of his family.

In 1732 Antipas Hathaway conveyed to Jethro Hathaway, a tract of eight acres on the Acushnet river, the most westerly part of the homestead of Thomas Hathaway, bounded on the east by the creek up to Howards brook, on the south by the property

of Jethro Hathaway. It was called in the deed "Ye old Buring Point," and is located on the river northwest of the Laura Keene farm. This may have been the family burying ground of Arthur and Thomas Hathaway.

The limits of this work will not allow tracing further the career of this Hathaway family. Including those of other names, the descendants of Arthur Hathaway are legion, from the Atlantic to the Pacific.

HERALDRY.

"One of the first steps of civilization is distinction of ranks. Heraldry has been found serviceable as a means of marking that distinction. Symbols or devices of honor by all nations, from the earliest ages, to distinguish the noble from the inferior. Heraldry as an art flourished chiefly under the feudal system. It is agreed by most antiquaries that the hereditary use of arms to distinguish families did not commence until the year 1230. The introduction of Heraldry in England is referred to

the Crusades. Coats of arms are thought to be clearly referable to the tournaments. A. D. 1190, the arms were on small escutcheons, worn at the belt. Every one engaged in the Holy Wars had the form of the cross sewed or embroidered on the right sleeve of his surcoat, whence the expeditions received the appellation of Crusades. After the Norman conquest, heraldry made rapid progress in England, and the high esteem in which it was held is attested by its union with other arts, especially painting and sculpture. Heraldry is thus connected with the lasting monuments of architecture."



OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 32

Being the proceedings of the Eighth Annual Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on March 31, 1911.

REPORT OF THE DIRECTORS	William A. Wing
REPORT OF THE TREASURER	William A. Mackie
REPORT OF THE MUSEUM SECTION	Annie Seabury Wood
REPORT OF THE HISTORICAL RESEARCH SECTION	Henry B. Worth
REPORT OF THE EDUCATION SECTION	Elizabeth Watson
REPORT OF THE PUBLICATION SECTION	William A. Wing
REPORT OF THE PHOTOGRAPH SECTION	William A. Wing

[NOTE.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

EIGHTH ANNUAL MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

MARCH 31, 1911

The following officers were elected:

President—Edmund Wood.

Vice Presidents—George H. Tripp.
Henry B. Worth.

Treasurer—William A. Mackie.

Secretary—William A. Wing.

Directors (for three years)—Julia
W. Rodman, Oliver F. Brown and Job
C. Tripp.

Director (for one year, unexpired
term)—Cara L. Broughton.

An addition to the society's collection of treasures was on view at the meeting, a set of carvings of the several varieties of whales, made by Frank Wood for the whaling room. The whales, sperm, right, bowhead, sulphur, bottom, finback and humpback, are carved in silhouette on wooden panels about 16 inches in length, which are stained in green, affording an effective contrast to the black bodies of the animals represented. The carvings are absolutely accurate in detail, being copied directly from the illustrations in Seamons's "Mammalia."

The following tablet has recently been placed in the memorial arch:

"In Memory of Jireh Swift 3rd.
Born 1740. Died 1817. Served in
the Revolution in the Trenches at
Cambridge. From a great grandson,
Jireh Swift 6th."

President Wood addressed the meeting as follows:

It will be sufficient for me to say that the year has been a good one; there have been some very interesting meetings, and the museum and research sections have done good work. The publications of the society have been kept up.

In reading of the terrible fire in the New York state Capitol at Albany, with the destruction of many valuable records, I felt that there was a moral for societies like ours, relating to the importance of the preservation of old documents and records.

There is a newer idea—the safe preservation of records—and a good deal is being done toward having them put in fireproof receptacles.

There is also another method, and that is that the meat of these kernels of the past is being extracted by antiquarians and by various historical societies. The papers read before this society are full of facts taken from these valuable records, and the facts so taken are safe beyond peradventure. As we get out these important facts, they receive the best possible preservation in the publications that follow.

Report of the Directors

BY

William A. Wing

The Old Dartmouth Historical Society greets its members at its eighth annual meeting. We are still a society in its youth with many problems to face. Like in the older historical societies, some of these are difficult in their best solution. But there is at least one in which the co-operation of our members can serve perhaps to make us unique among such organizations—prompt payment of dues!

The various activities of the past twelve months are described more in detail in the various reports of the directors.

We have, as usual, the sad duty to announce the deaths of the following members: Joshua G. Baker, Lucretia G. Chace, William L. Chadwick, Harriet A. Church, Lydia H. Church, Charles H. L. Delano, Susan R. Fletcher, W. Trap Frees,

Charles H. Gifford, Henry F. Hammond, Herbert E. Hicks, Jonathan Howland, Jr., Walter S. Howland, George Kempton, Elizabeth F. Nickerson, William F. Nye, Sarah S. Randall, Mary H. Stowe, Helen R. H. Stickney, Lloyd Swain, *C. A. M. Taber, Bertha W. Swift, Lucy E. Tisdale, Sarah G. Tompkins, Sarah Wright.

*Life member.

In the passing away of Mr. Lloyd Swain this society loses a friend who served as treasurer from its organization to 1906. His interest and co-operation in our needs make a kindly and pleasant memory.

Thus in brief has passed the year of 1910-11 of this society.

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Wing, Secretary.

Report of the Treasurer

BY

William A. Mackie

William A. Mackie, treasurer, in account with Old Dartmouth Historical Society, from March 30, 1910 to March 31, 1911:

Receipts.	
Balance March 30, 1910.....	\$176.95
Due	602.00
Life members.....	75.00
Admissions	62.00
Publications	21.00
Mechanics National bank.....	120.00
Merchants National bank.....	27.00
Commonwealth of Mass. rebate of tax.....	51.23
	\$1135.18

Payments.

N. B. Institution for Savings...	\$50.00
Museum	38.06
Salaries	150.00
Labor	279.67
Current expenses.....	251.12
Repairs and improvements.....	131.30
	\$900.15
Balance March 31, 1911.....	235.03
	\$1135.18

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Mackie, Treas.

Report of the Museum Section

BY

Annie Seabury Wood

The Museum Section, in presenting its eighth annual report, congratulates the society and thanks the public on account of the steady growth of its collections.

Certain notable acquisitions among many acceptable ones deserve especial mention: First, a silver watch, the gift of Miss Elizabeth Bailey, which came down to her from an English great-great-grandmother. William Sawyer Wall was in England in 1798, and was paying a visit to his grandmother, Mary Moreton. When he was about to return home, she took the watch from her side and sent it to his daughter, Mary Moreton Wall, her namesake. Miss Bailey is the daughter of Cornelius Bailey and Mary Wall.

On exhibition in our Oriental room is a beautifully carved frame made, specially to order, in China about 1860, and presented to the society by Mrs. Clement N. Swift.

In our Colonial room is an interesting old cheese press from the Morton House at Lakeville, given by Abbott P. Smith.

From Mrs. Bertha Whitridge Smith, we have received some interesting embroideries belonging to the Whitridge family, and from Miss Mary Rodman some homespuns and other ancient household relics of the Wilbur and Howland families, her ancestors.

A large oil painting of the Roman Forum by William Wall was presented by Charles W. Clifford.

We have also acquired an important addition to our whaling collection in a set of 'heaving down' blocks. So far as we know, this is the only set in existence, and their use is entirely a thing of the past. They played a very important part in old times in the coppering of the bottoms of vessels, and are as interesting in their way to us as the historic 'camels' of Nantucket are to the inhabitants of that famous island. The blocks were last used about 15 years ago to 'heave down' the bark Josephine.

In January the entertainment committee, which is drawn from the members of the Museum Section, presented Roy Andrews of the American Museum of Natural History, in an illustrated lecture on Hunting Whales with a Camera, and during the winter two well-attended and successful teas have been given.

On Patriots' Day, April 19th, the committee proposes to present Mrs. John Colby Abbott in a talk on the Women of Versailles, illustrating the life and dress of the French Court. The entertainment will be held in the rooms of the society and will be followed by an informal tea. We hope for a generous patronage.

Respectfully submitted,

Annie Seabury Wood,
Secretary Museum Section.

Report of the Historical Research Section

BY

Henry B. Worth

The work of the Historical Research Section is not only to preserve and perpetuate facts that might be forgotten and lost, but to restore events to their original setting and combination. One of the tendencies of tradition is the rearrangement of details into varying and erroneous combinations. This is not due to

fraud or deceit but to the frailty of the recollection. It is observed in court trials where witnesses of undoubted veracity, flatly contradict each other in relation to recent events. Some details that are obscured or forgotten are supplied from different situations, and honest and intelligent people present seriously

conflicting accounts of the same concurrence. Hence divergent traditions may be discovered concerning any historical fact. Giles Russell established an iron forge at Russell's Mills in 1787. In a few years the story was current that this enterprise was conducted by a different person one hundred and thirty-five years earlier. It is astonishing how unwilling some are to reject the traditions that are full of mistakes. No amount of evidence to the contrary is sufficient to substitute fact for fiction. After accepting the story without scrutiny and investigation, they continue loyal to the error. Some exhibit irritability at the suggestion of a doubt as their integrity was questioned. The trouble is that their informant was mistaken.

Every tradition should be tested by comparison with contemporary records. If the two are not in conflict, the oral statement may be accepted. But if there is discord, the tradition must yield.

It is now proposed to call attention to a certain incident, the tradition on which it is based and some records of contemporary history that have not heretofore been given due weight.

In Oxford village in Fairhaven, a few yards east of Cherry street, and extending from Lafayette street to Pilgrim avenue, is a lot which was conveyed in 1833 by Thomas Bennett to Benjamin D. Coombs. In the south portion was an enclosure in which were kept hens and swine. In the center was a hillock on which were spaces marked by rough stones after the manner of old burial places. This was purchased in 1895 by the Fairhaven Improvement association and was renovated and graded. A boulder drawn from the river was located on the knoll and on a bronze tablet is the inscription, "Sacred to the memory of John Cook who was buried here in 1695."

The authority for the statement depends upon a tradition and it is thus repeated, as he received it, by one of Fairhaven's best informed citizens: 'John Cook was one of the first white settlers in Fairhaven. They had only one cemetery and that was at Oxford. There was once a slate slab lying flat on the knoll, having the names of forty or fifty persons who were buried there. This was completely obliterated over sixty years ago, so that no vestige of it remains; nor is there in existence a copy of the inscription nor any record who was buried there.'

To this is added from another source, that John Cook owned all this territory and it passed from him

to the Taber family of which the late George H. Taber was a descendant.

Oxford was part of the farm of Capt. Thomas Taber which he received from the proprietors of Dartmouth 1672 and 1683. At his death in 1732, it passed to his son Phillip, who conveyed it ten years later to William Wood, glazier. In the deed of 1760 from Wood to Elnathan Eldridge, transferring the part of Oxford west of Cherry street is a statement that the southeast corner was west of 'ye Burial Place.' So while this proves that the Oxford lot was used for burial purposes as early as 1760, it should also be kept in mind that Taber, although a son-in-law of Cook, derived his title directly from the Dartmouth proprietors and that this burial place was never owned by John Cook. It never contained marked stones at any grave.

It was a universal custom in Dartmouth before 1700 that on each homestead farm was a plot devoted to burial purposes. Many of these spots have been forgotten and are unknown while some are still in existence. John Cook's homestead included the farm that is crossed by Coggeshall street leading from Main street to the bridge. According to the usual custom it would be expected that his last resting place was on his homestead, if there were not some deeply significant records relating to another locality.

In the south edge of Acushnet, half a mile south of the parting ways, the road to Fairhaven is crossed by a brook, that flows into the Acushnet river and at its junction forms a neck of land that is situated northwest of the Laura Keene farm. This may be designated for convenience Howard's Point.

In Cook's will, probated in April, 1696, he provides: "In the first place I give to my son-in-law, Arthur Hathaway, and his wife, Sarah, my daughter, all my land in the point at or near the burying place in Dartmouth, which I bought of John Russell." This has been assumed by many to be at Oxford, but the Russell deed in 1668 describes 'the point of land which I bought of Samuel Cuthbert adjoining to the house lot of John Howard, on the one side and the creek on the other.' Russell's deed from Cuthbert in 1661 conveyed a small point of land of 4 or 5 acres lying against the land of Cuthbert.

Beside the devise in his will, Cook had in 1686 given to Arthur Hathaway all that neck of land near the land of John Howard, bounded by the Acushnet river and on one side by Howard's land.' The farm containing the Brook was the Howard

homestead and the farm south was owned by Cuthbert and 1661 conveyed to Arthur Hathaway. So it is clear that the burial point in which Cook had such an interest, which he had purchased nearly thirty years before his death, was the neck northwest of the Laura Keen farm. He was solicitous to have it stand in the name of his daughter and son-in-law who lived in the immediate vicinity. This Howard's point passed from Arthur Hathaway to his son Thomas who also acquired the Howard farm in 1715 and then conveyed both to his son Antipas. The latter in 1747, then living in Newport, transferred the farm to James Weeden but retained the neck. In 1751 Weeden sold the farm to Hezekiah Winslow. The land next south was then owned by Jethro Hathaway and was later known as the Stephen Hathaway place.

The last record relating to the subject is a deed given in 1752 by Antipas Hathaway to his brother Jethro "a certain Point of land called ye old Burying Point in Acushnet Village, being ye most northwesterly part of ye Homestead of Thomas Hathaway deceased, bounded east on ye Creek, running up to Howard's Brook by Homestead of Hezekiah Winslow and by land of Jethro Hathaway." It remained for nearly a century part of the Stephen Hathaway farm.

The Homestead of John Cook was on the hill north of Oxford where the new brick school house has been built and extended north to the Woodside cemetery and south to the

Riverside cemetery. Somewhere on this farm according to the usage of that day would be his grave. But a mile farther north was a neck on the river which was a burial place as early as 1686; was owned by Cook and held by his descendants until modern times. In the light of this record there is strong reason to suppose that Cook was laid in the point purchased by him and transmitted to his descendants. Opposed to this is the tradition that he was buried at Oxford on a lot which he never owned and in which he is not known to have had any interest, and where there was never an inscribed stone marking any grave.

Without some record there can be no certainty where John Cook's grave is located, but judgment cannot be rendered in favor of the Oxford tradition. The foregoing represents the stage of present information. If further facts are discovered and authenticated, a conclusion can be reached that will settle the inquiry.

This paper is presented to preserve in useful form some interesting historical data, but especially to illustrate the method of testing tradition by comparison with contemporary records. There is no sound reason to condemn the method, because while it may result in discrediting popular reports and stories, it might frequently support and sustain the oral legend. Whichever consequence follows, truth should be the object sought without regard to the effect on accepted traditions.

Report of Education Section

BY

Elizabeth Watson

The education section cannot report definitely what has been accomplished during the past year, inasmuch as the school children and the various organizations that have been invited to the rooms have come individually, as opportunity offered, instead of collectively at stated times.

Owing to the severe winter it has not been practicable to try to arrange for the public school classes to visit the rooms with their teachers, but after the Easter Recess it is expected that the plan will be carried out as formerly.

Students from the textile school have shown an interest in the old loom and other devices for primitive textile work, while inspiration has been added to the industrial school by some of our exhibits, from which the pupils have taken measurements or made drawings.

The work of this section is far-reaching, and the committee, appreciating its opportunities, regrets that no more has been done.

Elizabeth Watson,

Chairman.

Report of the Publication Section

BY

William A. Wing

We who are so fortunate as to dwell in a community graced by such institutions as the Old Dartmouth Historical Society and our new Public Library and who enjoy the many privileges so offered, may find it of some passing interest to know what facilities for the "great joy of reading" were afforded those who dwelt in Old Dartmouth some 200 years ago or more.

The meagre lists of books owned by the most "bookish" folk in the old township—at least in that particular keep us from regret of the "good old days." The Puritan 'tis said was a man of "one Book—the Bible." In old Dartmouth's early days several were more liberally supplied, though is there scarce an instance of anyone possessing "Twenty Bookes at his Beddes heade" as did he of Chaucer's "Pilgrimage."

The Rev. Stephen Bachellor—one of the first Oxford graduates in this country and ancestor of many an old Dartmouth inhabitant and of many members of this society had really for his time and place a very great library which in the year 1644 was burned with his home. In a letter to his staunch friend, Gov. Winthrop, he much bemoans the loss of his "goodly store of bookes."

The libraries of those early days were composed of very large and very small books. There was scarcely any "happy medium." That ancient worthy—Henry Tucker—who died in 1694,

possessed "Two Bibles, one Testament and one Concordance."

John Russell—old Dartmouth's First Deputy—in 1695 left "one Bible and several other Bookes" valued at £16.

John Cook, Pilgrim, Pioneer and Preacher, in 1696 died possessed of "Two Bibles and 6 other books" worth £2 in all.

Arthur Hathaway, the "Magistrate," who died in 1711, had "a Bible and other books" at 10s.

Hugh Mosher, First Pastor of the First Baptist Church in 1713 left "2 Bibles and other books all at £3."

The most scholarly man in town very properly was the Reverend Mr. Samuel Hunt of the Church Presbyterian who in 1730 was inventoried to "his bookes £32, 14s, 6d." The details unfortunately of this interesting library are omitted. Peleg Slocum, that "honest publick Friend" had, we know, at least a great Bible, leathern bound and brass clasped.

John Akin, Captain, Town Clerk and "gentleman" as he was styled, had at his death in 1746; a large Bible, £10, and likewise "Hell's Torments," and other small books at 8s.—let us hope some of the others were more cheerful at least in title.

Thus would our Publication Section preserve the results of research of even more humble minutiae in the story of old Dartmouth's days and ways.

Respectfully submitted

Wm. A. Wing, chairman.

Report of the Photograph Section

BY

William A. Wing

It was in the year 1747 that William Almy of "Punkatest" (Tiverton, R. I.) wrote his will. There was much of worldly goods to be bequeathed (for that day)—nearly £8000 in money, about 500 cattle, seven slaves, lands and such treasures as silver spoons and "great silver tankard." From his mansion Squire William Almy might look to

the westward across the Seaconnet river and see in the distance the ancient homestead of his grandfather, William Almy of Portsmouth, R. I., the "first comer," and of his father, Governor Christopher Almy. In fact, one could almost locate their burial places. And near his own dooryard (as was the custom) was the spot to be his own last resting place. Wherein was

already laid his wife (born Deborah Cooke). Though as at such a time his mind was not only upon death and the dead, but upon the living. For there were children to be handsomely provided for.

His daughter, Rebecca, the wife of Holder Slocum, of old Dartmouth, and a lady of much "quality," was to receive £500, a negro woman "Hagar," silver spoons and chairs, his son Job Almy, who had married into the wealthy Tillinghast family of Newport, was to have "lands and housing at Quanset, Dartmouth, where he dwelt and where he built him three houses, each with a gambrel roof as his fortunes increased by legacies and

accumulations and there they stand today still in the possession of descendants.

In our photograph room may be seen pictures of William Almy's "Punkatest" mansion, the burial place of his parents, the Governor and his Lady and the three gambrel roofed houses at Quansett, the homes of his son, Job Almy, so that our photograph section at least preserves "presentments" of what meant so much to Mr. William Almy as he wrote his will in the year 1747.

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Wing, Chairman.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 33

Being the proceedings of the Thirty-third Quarterly Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building, Water Street,
New Bedford, Massachusetts, on 29 September, 1911 ∴ ∴ ∴

ADDRESS—BENJAMIN RUSSELL

Edmund Wood

THE EARLY POETRY OF OLD DARTMOUTH

William A. Wing

[NOTE.—The "Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches" will be published by the Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson's Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

THIRTY-THIRD QUARTERLY
MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

29 SEPTEMBER, 1911

Address---Benjamin Russell

BY

Edmund Wood

One of the most reliable sources of historical material to the student of our earliest Colonial Days has always been the land records. Old Dartmouth is notably rich in the possession of a perfect treasure-house of this invaluable material.

It is most remarkable that the original field notes of the surveys of Benjamin Crane, first surveyor to the Dartmouth Proprietors, have been preserved in good condition for two hundred years. Not a map or a platting of a survey made by him has ever been found although innumerable ones must have been made. But the note books containing courses, distances and areas and generally the location have come down to us in good condition.

These books are eleven in number and date from 1710 to 1721. Supplementing these are two similar books by Benjamin Hammond, Crane's successor as surveyor to the proprietors from 1723 to 1741, and one book by Samuel Smith who followed at a later date, from 1768 to 1793.

All these records of the original surveys came into the possession of the New Bedford Free Public Library a few years ago.

In one of the early meetings of this society, one of our members, A. McL.-Goodspeed, read an erudite paper on the subject of these books, their interest and their value.

In it he expressed the hope that some way would be found to more surely preserve these treasures, either by printing or photographically reproducing them.

It is noteworthy and commendable that the trustees of our city library have done both and with rare good taste. The large volume recently published shows half tone pictures of every page and opposite, the text in printed form.

We acknowledge with pleasure the receipt of a copy of this book from the library trustees and it has been added to our growing collection.

Since our last meeting a life member of this society has died—Charles Austin Mendall Taber.

He was born in Acushnet and married a Miss Lund of that town.

In his will he bequeathed to this society the sum of \$150—and this bequest has already been paid.

Although his later life was spent in Wakefield in this state he always showed a sincere attachment for this society and the past life and achievements of the locality which this society seeks to commemorate.

In 1873 he published a volume of verse entitled 'Rhymes from a Sailors' Journal' and we have found a copy in the Millicent library.

This shows a facility at rhyming and many of the subjects have a decidedly local flavor—"The Whaleman's Return," "Written Soon After Watching Whales in a Storm."

The author was at one time during his life the captain of the whale-ship Millinocket.

One of the longer poems entitled "The Old Puritanic Burial Ground," describes the historic cemetery at Acushnet, and contains one or two bits of description which revive details which have been almost forgotten. "The old horseblocks that flanked its sides unused and mossed for many a year.

In his later years he wrote and published several books on scientific subjects: "The Ice Age, Past and Coming," "Our Periodical World," "Our Periodic Earth," "Cause of Geologic Periods."

The bequest from an appreciative Son of Old Dartmouth, for which we are very grateful, nourishes the hope that there are many patriotic members of this society who plan to bestow upon it some generous memorials of their affectionate regard.

"The society has received from William W. Crapo, its first president, a valuable gift. Four of the original cartoons of Arctic Whaling Scenes, drawn by Benjamin Russell. These drawings delineate with faithfulness the catastrophe to our whaling fleet in the Arctic Ocean in 1871. These are the originals from which the lithographs were made, which were published and had quite a sale at the time. Many New Bedford homes had these pictures framed hanging on the wall. This disaster was the greatest which had ever befallen our chief industry. The loss of property involved, directly or indirectly, nearly every inhabitant of Old Dartmouth, and in those days of fewer works of fiction and no theatres with thrilling moving pictures the exciting tales of miraculous escape and heroic struggles, brought real ro-

mances intimately into hundreds of households. Mr. Crapo a few years ago purchased and presented to this society one of the original drawings of this artist, and with the four new ones just received, we are indebted to him for an extremely valuable collection, which with the decline of whaling has an ever increasing historical value.

BENJAMIN RUSSELL.

The historian of any epoch, in his researches for new material is always attracted by what seems to be notes taken on the spot. These are considered more valuable, because of their crispness and frankness. They are generally written for a very limited number of eyes to see, and they record the honest first impressions. There has been no time to calculate on the possible results of saying what one really thinks, and trimming the real belief to please other peoples, or to agree with the view of other observers.

It is this which makes the diary one of the best corroborative records.

The publication of Pepys' diary gave a truer insight and a more intimate view of the interesting details of English life at the time of the Restoration than any state paper or contemporaneous history.

This observation is also true of sketches made on the spot. These bring back to us the past as it really appeared at the time to the artist. It is unfortunate that when we go back beyond the discovery of photography we find so little of this valuable historical material.

Stop and think a little of how different the future historian is going to view the period in which we now live. Not only are we flooded with the printed word on every phase of thought and action, but we are surrounded by cameras to perpetuate every view.

Nor are these laborious sketches of scenes drawn slovenly, and omitting more or less of the detail—but photography is instantaneous and greedily grasps every detail. And now we have the moving picture, which gives us action as well as position.

It is evident the future will know us to the life, as we lived, and moved and had our being.

Old Dartmouth has been fortunate in that it possessed artists as well as historians to jot down impressions and mirror for us the past.

At previous meetings I have taken up the work of William Bradford and also of William A. Wall. Tonight we are being reminded of another of our last century artists because we have received from Mr. Crapo five valuable original drawings of Benjamin Russell.

In 1830 we had in New Bedford two commercial houses which at the time overshadowed all others, on the one hand were the Rotch's carrying on both foreign commerce and whaling with long continued success, on the other hand were Seth and Charles Russell, who had recently increased the prestige of that family and were rich and powerful. Some of their foreign ventures in commerce were brilliant, they carried a large bank balance in London, they owned many merchant ships and whaleships, and they had also acquired a large amount of real estate within the town. The two brothers were the sons of Seth Russell senior, who was grandson of Joseph Russell 2nd, and the nephew of Joseph Russell 3rd and of Caleb Russell 1st.

There was some rivalry between some of the older merchants and these two brothers, Seth and Charles Russell. The later were called progressive, they took long chances and with uniform success. But soon there came reverses, then the tide seemed to turn against them and finally came the crash when the brothers failed, and much property and real estate in the city changed hands.

Benjamin Russell, the artist was the son of Seth, the older of these two merchants. He was brought up while the fortunes of the house were booming. He loved sketching, generally in black and white, most often in lead pencil, but later washed in with india ink and finished with a fine brush point and with a pen. He sketched much about the wharves and on the ships, and must have been an industrious draughtsman. It was here that he first gained his intimate knowledge of the sails and ropes and ships tackle. His drawings are noted for their exhibitions of an exact knowledge of the rigging of a ship. He knew the ropes. In this respect many of his pictures are more accurate than they are artistic. He has drawn finely pencilled lines of running rigging which never could have been seen by the naked eye from the point of view of the observer. Although he couldn't really see them at that distance he knew they were there and so he drew them in and ran them along where they should be.

I have not been able to learn how much teaching he had in art. He certainly had considerable talent for drawing and some skill in composition, but he had ability with color.

The great disaster in the Arctic in 1871 when so many of our ships were lost gave him his greatest subjects and on these pictures his reputation will chiefly rest.

I will not attempt to enumerate the different works of this artist

which are now known to exist. It will be sufficient to say that this society now owns six of his originals and five of the reproductions by lithography.

Benjamin Russell was at one time in the ship chandlery business, but he does not seem to have been prominent as a business man. He was, I believe, at one time a director of the Old Marine Bank.

There is a story that he drew an interesting caricature of one of the directors' meetings, which was remarkably true to the life. In it the almost life-long president of that institution was represented as seated at the head of the table on a cake of ice. This picture was said to be exceedingly popular with certain disappoint-

ed applicants for discount, who had been chilled by the presidential atmosphere.

Benjamin Russell's largest and most ambitious work was the execution of a panoramic series of pictures of a whaling voyage done on a large scale. Some of these pictures had exceeding merit and much spirit. This panorama was exhibited several times in local halls and at an exhibition of this society and also in many other cities, and now belongs to one of our members, Benjamin Cummings. It will always have great historic interest, and it is to be hoped that the present owner of it will decide that the only fitting repository for it is the treasure house of this historical society.

The Early Poetry of Old Dartmouth

BY

William A. Wing

Old Dartmouth had early some poetic affiliations even if a bit far-fetched.

Mary Holder, the wife of Peleg Slocum, was a kinswoman of Edmund Spenser and 'tis said some of his poems were written at her ancestral home "Canons Ashby" in a room known to this day as "Spenser's Chamber."

A close relative was Sir John Dryden—Poet Laureate of England. Now 'tis very probable that Good wife Slocum, never read any of her distinguished relatives' poems and would undoubtedly have been mightily shocked if she had. The Friends frowned on "Rhymes and Rhymsters." The goodfolk of Old Dartmouth had the incomparable poetry of their Bibles. Their children also, such poetry as there was in the "New England Primer" that "Little Bible of New England" as it has been called. Perhaps they too, learned the Elizabeth Isles in rhyme and their alphabet in "sing-song" as in our own childhood.

There were quaint bits of poetry in the early almanaks and occasional poems in the likewise occasional newspapers. There were doleful hymns in the old "Psalm and Hymn Tune-Book" used in the ancient church at the "Head-of-The-River" as early as 1789.

The ministers of this same old church were scholars "college-bred" with meagre libraries but in their day so much attention and opinion were given to the Greek and Latin poets that those writing in English received comparatively scant consideration.

Such was the condition of the Muse of Poetry in Old Dartmouth previous to the middle of the seventeen hundreds. So, cleverly she made some attacks upon the place from without.

William Chandler of Connecticut, a surveyor, (father of the famous Colonial clergyman, Rev. Dr. Thomas Bradbury Chandler of New Jersey), brought out a poetic effusion in the form of a broadside, entitled: "A Journal of a Survey by Order of Royal Commissioners, 1741." It begins—

These lines below describe a full survey

Of all the coasts along the 'Gansett Bay,
Therefore attend and quickly you shall
know
Where it begins and how far it doth
go.

* * *

But stop my muse let's haste on our
survey
And stretch our coast along the east-
ward Bay.
So then from thence we measured by
the sands
An eastward course along these pleas-
ant lands.
And we came to Dartmouth, a most
liberal town,
Whose liquid treats their generous
actions crown.
Here is the place where we did end
our work,
Here we left, off (and did it with a
jerk)
And then retired our field-book for to
scan.
And of this large survey to make a
plan.

This tribute shows that evidently New Bedford of today is no worse than Old Dartmouth of the past. We wonder if the son, the ponderous clergyman, was like his father or indifferent to "liquid treats."

Mary Tallman, (a daughter of William) in 1769 at the age of 10, (so says a descendant), wrote little rhyming-notes to her neighbor and playmate, Hannah Pope. The post-office was a hollow tree that overhung the brook separating their homesteads. It is to be regretted that those little lyric letters have disappeared.

Captain James Cushing of Boston (appearing on the muster rolls as "Cushin' and "Cushion") from Colonel Paul Revere's Regiment, was sent to Dartmouth just before the British Raid in 1778 in command of a company of artillery consisting of about eighty privates. A bit of poetical History probably concerning him follows—

THE CUSHION BATTLE.

In Newport there's been found of late
A grand, important, full debate.
The Council met—and all agree
That rebels must be made to flee
But to what place, pray can we go,
Where's the least danger of the foe?
And bravely forth for stealing stand?
The man is found, here is brave Gray,
Ready to lead to such a fray.

Quick, quick your light horse then
prepare,

Embark you men with utmost care,
To Dartmouth quickly then set sail
And burn and plunder without fail.
Then men embark without delay
And soon they pass the mighty Bay
Forthwith they land on Dartmouth
shore,

With soldiers, Tories, many score.
They soon advance without a fright,
For Friends and Quakers will not fight.
Bolder they grow and nothing fear,
Then men advance from front to rear.
No opposition do they meet
Till they approach the second street,
And now begins the mighty fray,
A Cushion there obstructs the way.
They all draw up the battle line
With caution, prudence vast design.
With vigor too the attacks they make
To kill or wound or prisoners take.
Push on brave boys, your pointed steel
Will make the mighty tyrant reel.
We'll bring the haughty tyrant down
That dares usurp a lady's crown.
The action's warm: the battle strong;
The Cushion could not stand it long.
No re-inforcement coming in
The Cushion's number being thin,
The battle's won by gallant Gray
Who now pursues without delay
His grand design to burn and steal
Fat sheep and oxen, lamb and veal.
These are the wondrous feats they do.
With all their grand parade and shew.
Go sneaking home and tell your king
His folly doth through Europe ring.

Silas Delano of that part of Old
Dartmouth (now known as Fair-
haven,) just after the Revolution tells
of his runaway servant thus—

THE RUNAWAY.

A handsome premium can be had
By him who will convey
To me a light-haired, slim-shanked lad
Who lately run away.
Whose name is Dudley Williams called,
He's major, sir, and squire,
And won the title he's held
Of swindler, knave and liar.
And coward for it is a fact
He will not fight a feather
For which a cowhide strip'd his back
And tanned the rascals leather.
He left his creditors behind
Their losses to bewail.
Being determined in his mind
To give them all Leg Bail.
He stole two horses from the reels
As he run from Dartmouth town
Mounted them quick took to heels
And has not since been found.
Two hundred dollars I'll give quick
To any clever fellers
That will the scoundrel convict
And bring him to the gallows.

Whether any "clever fellers" re-
ceived the \$200 reward research does
not show.

On May 13, 1793, "Mr. Charles
Church, senior, of (what is now
Fairhaven), attempting to cross the

harbor in an open boat to the eastern
shore, was overset by a whirlwind and
drowned, act. 53."

This elegy appeared, "Written in
the Evening" by "Philander," in faint
imitation of the poet Gray.

ELEGY TO MR. CHARLES CHURCH, SENIOR.

What time pale Cynthia holds her
feeble sway,
And waning cheers the solitary plain.
Say Misery, feels't thou one reviving
ray?
Or does the silence but augment thy
pain?

The weeping muse has heard the
mournful tale;
His soul is summoned to eternity!
O'er life's gay scene Death spreads his
shadowy veil
And Church, that cypress is entwined
for thee!

Tranquil the deep soft zephyrs fan'd
the wave,
But fatal prov'd that inauspicious
hour,
High Heaven ordained for thee a Wa-
tery Grave;
Nor could'st thou fly the unrelenting
Power.

To add to the general gloom of the
little community three days later, the
"amiable and truly virtuous" Miss
Betsey Tripp deceased of a "consump-
tive disorder," act. 25.

"With a comely person were such
graces as endeared her to all."

The following elegiac lines written
by "A Friend" were spoken of as "apt
on the sad occasion."

O! Betsey, how transient is the dream
of life
And every care-felt comfort we en-
joy,
And fro't with care, solicitude and
strife,
Each hour attempts our blessings to
destroy.
All human scenes are subject to decay,
And time asserts an all prevailing
power
Expanding beauties to the morning's
ray
We bloom to wither as this tender
flower. A Friend.

At least one "sighing swain" in old
Dartmouth invoked the Muse general-
ly to "Pella" and signed "L". His
identity if ever disclosed, is today un-
known.

The following written in 1793 is
perhaps as worthy a "taste of his
quality" as any:

THE RURAL WALK.

With Pella at eve thro the grove
I'll innocently walk;
And all the way of kindest love
In friendly converse talk.

While towns are chok'd with dust and
noise.

Here I and Pella stray;
No rattling chariots harm our joys,
But round us lamkins play.

Or else by Quishnett's peaceful stream
We wander hand in hand;
See, oe'r his face the zephyrs skim
And drive the waves aland.

Look! Pella cries, Boat following boat
They blacken all the flood!
One all acreen! The oars afloat
Alas! that e'er I viewed.

Some luckless squall not felt ashore
May cause a tear at sea;
How soon the joyful scene is oe'r,
How frail our pleasures be.

One sigh when generous pity calls
Shall in my breast have room.
I weep when e'er a good man falls
She said. We wander'd home.

These early poetic efforts, humble
crude and even absurd, have in-
terest and value for us today, in that
they cast a glimmering light on cer-
tain phases of their time, as does
nothing else.

The Muse in Old Dartmouth strove
not all in vain. Surely she has a
rightful place in the History of Early
American Poetry.



OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 34

The Proceedings of the Thirty-fourth Quarterly Meeting held
in their building, on January 12, 1912.

COURTSHIP AND MARRIAGE OF YE OLD TIME QUAKERS

By Mary E. Austin

[NOTE.—“The Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each, on application to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Thirty-fourth Quarterly Meeting

President Wood addressed the meeting. Perhaps the most important mission of a society like this is a study of the habits and customs of our ancestors. The sources of our information are public, private and religious records. Many of the records were perishable, and whenever anything of importance happened our ancestors were pretty sure to jot it down. We have to go largely to the records for our information but it is known that records of our local history are perishable, but the research members of our society are given publicity and whatever we do now is embalmed forever for future generations. Our records of our own research and the modern publicity make the records practically imperishable. What we rescue becomes so disseminated as to be indestructible and immortal. Our research committee should be encouraged to preserve any and all records of local history and more of our members should be interested and stimulated in the gradual study of some phase of the past. A great many of our members are interested in studying back into the past of their own families and other subjects as a recreation and pastime. If only the members would jot down their research the material will gradually accumulate until a valuable paper is the result.

The life our ancestors lived here was simple compared to the present day, yet a life full of passion and love, full of complex bearing, full of jealousies and loyalty, gaiety and sorrow, yearning and striving. The records that come down from the old time were only fair. The records were often only the barest facts, records of births, marriages and deaths, the acquirement and sales of land—that is all.

And still those lives were full, not just like ours of the present day. Living then was more even, and perhaps monotonous at times. There was no telephone and no quick transportation. Later in our colonial history life became more complex with the thicker settlements along the Acushnet river and the growth of commerce and the relations of a larger world. The returning mariner brought the element of romance, and the suspicion of other views of life which seemed heretical.

The public vital records contain little to help us in the realization of this intimate social life. We get more from private papers, letters and diaries of the old time. Here we have vivid pictures, sketched upon the spot, opinions from a contemporaneous point of view. Then in many localities we have the religious records. Wherever the Quakers abounded there we find their help more abundant than elsewhere. Their records are the more valuable from the fact that the Quakers have been particular, more so than almost any other sect. We find records of very frequent meetings and the doings faithfully recorded. The presiding officer was always the clerk. The Quakers didn't believe that a chairman was essential as the spirit was the guiding matter. The record was made by some designated person. Importance was given to the women Friends and in no other society will you find a dual record. It is well known that the most important records are those of the Friends of this locality. It is interesting to know when a member of our society confesses she has been interested for years in research, and has prepared a paper from such research.

Courtship and Marriage
of Ye Old Time Quakers

By MARY E. AUSTIN

Courtship and Marriage of Ye Old Time Quakers

BY

MARY E. AUSTIN

George Fox had just reached his majority, when the great battle of Naseby was fought.

Green writes in his History of English people: "The shock of war had broken the bands of custom and given a violent impulse to the freest thought.

Into this age of swift changes, step men who were resolved to seek God after their own fashion, and who were as hostile to the despotism of the national church as to the despotism of the king.

Among these men stands the Quaker founder. This was the age when Roundhead and Cavalier stand with drawn swords, and fill England with throes of war. Accepting a captain's commission would have released Fox from Derby prison. But he believes war is unlawful, and he will not accept his release through any method that will compromise conscience.

He who followed in the footsteps of Fox must abjure theatre, card playing, races, bull-baiting, cock-fighting, dancing, Christmas decorations and festivities. Quakerism was a protest against the times, against manners, and customs, speech and literature, societies and religion.

The girls of the seventeenth century enjoyed but a brief childhood. Then even in the nursery, worldly parents were selecting for them husbands, and were sometimes in so much of a hurry to secure great advantages of family and fortune, that little girls found themselves saddled with the responsibilities of marriage before they had hardly time to put away their dolls.

Such marriages often productive of the greatest unhappiness, gave serious offence to the Quaker leader, and very early, in his journal, he treats upon marriage.

Within ten years of Fox's first appearance as a preacher, meetings of the Friends were established in most parts of England. From the first, they had repudiated the marriage ceremonies of the church, and married in their own fashion, without

priest, altar or ring. Very early, the legality of these marriages was called in question, and the children sneered at as bastards.

A suit was begun, by a kinsman of a Quaker, who had died, to prove that his child was illegitimate and could not heir the property. "The Quakers go together like brute beasts," said the plaintiff's counsel. But the judge held that marriage was constituted by mutual consent, and remarked: "That was a true marriage when Adam took Eve and Eve took Adam." Thus the Quakers were saved from the curse that threatened to blight their hearthstones.

In view of the public and private charges made against the Quaker home, the monthly meetings were charged to attend very carefully, to keeping a record of marriages and births, and to see that all persons "walked orderly according to their professions."

"Walked orderly according to profession" was an "elastic clause," that developed finally into hard and fast customs, hardly compatible with the doctrine that life, conscience and worship must be guided by the spirit and not by man.

Birthright membership made a vast amount of trouble. At first one had to be a believer before he could be a member of a Quaker meeting. But when the children of accepted Friends were counted as members of the "Faith," the meetings had to deal with numbers of young people, who had no real interest in the Quaker doctrines, who wanted to follow worldly fashions in dress, which they did in spite of the meeting, and who insisted in marrying outside of the society, if they pleased.

Hence the ruling of the Discipline, "Children must be disowned if they marry not Friends—unless they make an acknowledgment that they have done wrong."

Items of the records of the Nantucket, and Dartmouth Monthly Meetings bear full evidence that the

Friends in our vicinity were not lax in enforcing the rules.

"Nantucket.

"1768—Our visitors inform this meeting that they have treated with S—— D—— respecting her marrying with a man of different persuasion, but do not find in her any disposition to condemn her fault. It is the judgment of the meeting that she be set aside as one with whom Friends had no unity."

"1724—A—— N—— signed an acknowledgment that among other things 'she had gone out from and against the mind, will and allowance of my tender parents in performing her marriage."

"1762—N—— R—— acknowledged that for want of keeping close to the divine light, having married contrary to the advice of Friends, I am sincerely sorry and hope for the time to come to be more careful."

"1800—L—— S—— disowned for keeping company with a man not a member and for attending a marriage out of the order of Friends."

"1804—B—— C—— had married a member of our society sooner after the decease of his former wife than the Discipline advises and contrary to our order notwithstanding he was cautioned against it."

I will read a copy of a certificate dated August 9, 1764, furnished by Mrs. Clement Nye Swift, a certificate of her ancestors.

"Whereas, Stephen Hathaway, son of Jethro Hathaway and Hannah, his wife, of Dartmouth, in the county of Bristol, in the province of the Massachusetts Bay, in New England; and Abigail Smith, a daughter of Humphry Smith and Mary, his deceased wife, of Dartmouth, in the County and Province aforesaid, Having Declared their intentions of taking each other in Marriage, before Several Monthly Meetings, of the people called Quakers, in Dartmouth, According to the Good Order Used among them, Whose Proceedings Therein, after a Deliberate Consideration thereof, with Regard to the Righteous Law of God and Example of His People Recorded in the Scriptures of Truth; in that case were allowed by the said meetings.

They appearing clear of all others and having the Consent of Parents and others concerned, Now these are to certify all whom it may Conserne, that for the full accomplishing of their said intentions this Ninth day of the Eighth month, called August, and in the year of our Lord, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty-four, then the said Stephen Hathaway and Abigail Smith appeared in

a Publick Assembly of the aforesaid People met together in the Publick Meeting House in Dartmouth, and in solemm manner, he the said Stephen Hathaway taking the said Abigail Smith by the hand did openly declare as followeth:

Friends, I desire you to be my witnesses, that I take this my friend Abigail Smith to be my wife. Promising with the Lord's assistance to be her loving husband till death shall separate us: Or words to that effect: and then in the said Assembly the said Abigail Smith did in Like manner Declare as follows this: Friends, I desire you to be my witnesses, that I take this my friend Stephen Hathaway to be my husband, Promising with the Lord's assistance to be to him a loving wife until Death shall separate us. Or words to that effect.

Then the said Stephen Hathaway and Abigail Smith, as a further confirmation thereof then and there in these Presents set their Hands, she according to the custom of marriage Assuming her Husband' name.

Stephen Hathaway.
Abigail Hathaway.

and we whose names are hereunto subscribed, being present at the solemnizing of the said Marriage and Subscriptions as Witnesses, have hereunto Subscribed our names this day and year above Written.

John Russell	Humphry Smith
Thomas Smith	Peleg Smith
Robert Willis	Henry Smith
Joseph Tucker	Benjamin Smith
Deborah Russell	Samuel Smith
Elizabeth Gidley	William Anthony
Prince Allen	Phebe Tucker
Benjamin Howland	Deborah Wilbur
Christopher Slocum	Alice Smith
Antiphaz Hathaway	Mary Howland
Daniel Russell	Rebeckah Slocum
Thomas Briggs	Alice Anthony
Joseph Russell	Penelope Howland
Jim Davis	Rebecah Smith
Hephzibah Davis	Susanne West
Clark Hathaway	Hephzibah Hussey
George Smith	Ann Coffin
	Mary Tucker

Unlike the rest of the world, the Friends long held tenaciously to the old custom of keeping the bride and bridegroom throughout the whole day, which is one of great social enjoyment.

The chief feature of the entertainment was a fine repast, which was prolonged with many a sober jest and quaint rejoinder.

One of the "jests" has come down to us. A prim old Quaker spinster one day attended the marriage of her grand-nephew, a young person who had in the course of his twenty-one years received much needed disci-

pline at her hands. The old lady was at her best on this festive occasion, and at a pause in the breakfast her young relative looked over at her with a beguiling smile.

Tell us why thee never married, Aunt Patience, he said teasingly?

That is soon told, William, said the old Quakeress, calmly. It was because I was not so easily pleased as thy wife.

After the marriage feast, a walk on a sideway may be the programme of the day. Wherever the party goes, the overseers must follow and note well that all present "do take care at the houses or places where they go—that all behave with becoming sobriety."

At the next monthly meeting, the committee must give report and if unfavorable the first duty of the meeting will be to instruct the overseers to secure an expression of "sincere repentance of such transgressions, manifested by a conduct circumspect and consistent with out religious profession."

If the transgressors are refractory, their cases are again reported to the monthly meeting, which may then disown them.

To one outside the fellowship of Quakerisms, it is the most simple and natural thing in the world, that two people mutually pleased with one another should enter into the closest and tenderest relations of life.

Only those within the fellowship could comprehend the opposition with which the step would be regarded by family, friend and meeting, if a Quaker youth should desire to marry out of the meeting, or the consultations, concern, the absolute distress that had to be gone through with.

When it becomes known that such a marriage is contemplated, it is reported to the monthly meeting, and in accordance with the rules, members of the ministry and oversight are appointed to visit the parents and make an inquiry "If an infirmity of purpose has led them to sanction such a disgraceful departure of the rules, as to permit a birthright member to make an unholy alliance—a disorderly marriage?"

A long sitting follows this question—composed of long silence and frequent quotations from the Scriptures, which deal with the prophetic denunciations of the chosen people for making alliances with the heathen tribes.

If the purpose of the visit of the overseers was not accomplished, the meeting after hearing the report, appoints two or more persons to visit and deal with the "delinquent."

This grave and official visitation was conducted with much gentleness and love, but was none the less dreaded and formidable.

After the usual silence, and perhaps a prayer, a motherly voice might commence her pleading with: "Beloved, I have not hitherto found thee charged with levity, nor setting up thy own will in opposition to the witness within. I hope thou hast inquired there."

If after all the prayers and persuasions, the youth persisted in the worldly companionship, the case would be again duly reported and recorded at the next Monthly Meeting with all the details of the visit.

If marriage follows with a "worldling" and no repentant word is secured by a second appointed visit, the youth is disowned.

The Acoaxet Monthly Meeting records furnish this account of a disownment:

"1800, 7mo. 19th.

We are informed by Acoaxet Preparative Meeting that N— S— has much neglected the attendance of Religious Meetings and gone into many of the vain modes and fashions of the times in his apparel, for which he has been repeatedly labored with by the Overseers. He also has kept company on account of marriage with a woman not a member of our society and has married the same out of the unity of Friends notwithstanding his being cautioned before marriage.

After considering thereon, and thinking there has been sufficient labor bestowed, we therefore deny unity with him as a Member of our Religious Society until he condemns his misconduct to the satisfaction of Friends.

The Women's Meeting concurs with us herein.

We appoint Lovel Tripp and Wm. Gifford, son of William, to inform him of his being disowned and draft a testimony of his denial and bring to next Monthly Meeting."

The same records furnish a copy of a Denial:

"Whereas, J— F—, who had a birthright and his education among Friends, hath so far disregarded our advice as to Neglect the due attendance of Religious Meetings and gone into some of the vain fashions of the world and also kept company with an married a woman out of the unity of Friends; altho he was labored with an cautioned, but our advice hath not had its desired effect: Therefore, for the clearing of the truth, we do disown the said J— F— from being any longer a member of our society,

until he shall condemn the above transgressions to Friends' satisfaction. Given forth at our Monthly Meeting, held at Acoaxet the 13th of the 3rd mo., 1802.

Signed in and on behalf of our above said meeting,
by John Mosher, Clerk."

One alternative remained to the "delinquents." They might of their own free will resign their membership, in which case there would be the same appointments, visits, condemnations, records and publicity.

Some Monthly Meetings at one time were so rigorous that parents were required to disinherit their children who had made worldly or "disorderly marriages," and not receive them into their homes, nor be familiar with them.

In the enforcement of the Discipline, the Nantucket Quakers exceeded in severity all meetings in New England. Although the island settlers had sought to escape from the restrictive interference of the Winthrops and Endicott, yet they retained many of the characteristics of the people of Massachusetts Bay.

In Dartmouth, the situation was not homogeneous. It was composed of persons who were liberal at the start. The Tucker family came from Milton; the Kirbys, Allens, Giffords, Wings, came from Cape Cod; while the great majority that constituted the Dartmouth Meeting, had been residents of Rhode Island, the refuge for every form of liberal and eccentric theology.

From this it naturally followed that the Discipline among the Dartmouth

Quakers was much less rigorous than at Nantucket. While firm in essentials, they overlooked trivial shortcomings, and hence their records disclose a much smaller number of disownments for minor offences.

When the crisis of 1845 came, and the Yearly Meeting stood at the parting of the ways, one section under the lead of the Nantucket Meeting urging the acceptance of the Puritan views and methods, it was the power and influence of the New Bedford Quarterly and Rhode Island meetings that swung the New England Yearly Meeting toward the more liberal direction.

In spite of the liberal tendencies of the New England Yearly Meeting, the regulations concerning marriage remained nearly the same down to 1872.

A committee of the Five Year Meeting of 1897 prepared a new Discipline, which has been accepted by eleven out of the thirteen Yearly Meetings.

In the last edition of the Discipline, the rules concerning marriage are very simple.

The public betrothal is omitted; also disownment for marriage with a non-member.

The Overseers still listen to reasonable objections concerning a proposed marriage, and the committee of four reports to the Monthly Meeting concerning the ceremony.

The Discipline advises carefully to observe the Laws of the State.

In these days of home-making and, alas! home-breaking, the wise supervision of marriage by a Quaker Monthly Meeting would be an important public benefaction.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 35

The Proceedings of the Ninth Annual Meeting held in the
lecture hall of the New Bedford Public Library, on June 12,
1912.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE
NINTH ANNUAL MEETING

[NOTE.—“The Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each, on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Ninth Annual Meeting

The ninth annual meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society was held in the lecture room of the Free Public Library.

Officers elected:

The officers elected are as follows:

President—Edmund Wood.

Vice Presidents—George H. Tripp, Henry B. Worth.

Treasurer—William A. Mackie.

Secretary—William A. Wing.

Directors for Three Years—Mrs. Annie A. Swift, Mrs. Clara L. Broughton, Abbott P. Smith.

President Wood addressed the meeting.

Tonight occurs the ninth annual meeting of the old Dartmouth Historical society, and we greet our members in a new place. It is a fitting place to hold a meeting of a society dedicated among other things to the preservation of the monuments of the past. This building has much local history woven into its structure. It was built with money which the city or town received. And it was a worthy structure of a dignified architecture—and deserving to be called the City hall.

How much of New Bedford's noteworthy history has centred about this building! To a historian the golden age of any community seems to be found in the early times when all the citizens could gather together yearly in one place and counsel together for the public good, and appropriate money prudently and judiciously.

Here too have been held the innumerable mass meetings of our citizens when they responded to some sudden call, and together determined on the proper action for the common good.

When the time came when this old City hall was no longer sufficient for municipal purposes it was destroyed. In all the criticism of the recent exploits of our city fathers in the time of public buildings we have none of this one act—the handling of this historic monument. It has been treated reverently, and much good taste it has been allowed to suit the

requirements of the new service which it is to bestow on the community. It is a dignified and worthy home for our Free Public Library, and building and library stands among the foremost of such institutions in the state and the nation.

This room has been wisely given to the varied movements for the education of the people, and there is commendable liberality in the way in which the trustees are handling it.

The Old Dartmouth Historical society is glad to meet in it as one of the movements of this community connected with education and research and profitable public discussion.

When the Old Dartmouth Historical society first thought of locating at its present quarters on Water street, there were many who thought there were drawbacks in its inaccessibility for meetings. They called it pretty far down town. Still some of us are not willing to admit that it is not, all things considered an ideal place for the rooms and the historical collection. The place is still redolent of the odor of the past; the view from the windows is in sympathy with the relics inside; the ships and the wharves and the oil casks are visible and the old buildings have witnessed the doings of those early times. How curious it would seem to those workers of 75 years ago to hear that for mere convenience we had resolved to hold a meeting way back on what was beginning to be known as Cheapside. This place would certainly not be any handier to the majority of our citizens. There is another point to be considered in relation to our present location on Water street. It will never be so inaccessible as it is just at present. As the city grows all the members will be further and further removed, and it will be necessary to take the trolley cars or other newer means of conveyance to get into the centre of the city and then Water street may be about as convenient as Cheapside. No, I for one, do not think we have made any mistake in our permanent location.

Report of the Directors

BY

WILLIAM A. WING

Another twelfth month has passed in the history of this society. A year older and, we trust, wiser—but we are still very young, comparatively, beside some of the other historical societies of Massachusetts; such birth-years as 1790, 1797, 1811, 1822, 1824, make our own 1903 seem rather infantile. So we may take hope that when we have reached their advanced years we may have like honors, dignity and wealth, surely according to our deserts.

This society will ever hold

In Memoriam

Sarah C. Anthony.
Standish Bourne.
Lydia L. Bryant.
Emma C. Cornell.
Mary S. Cummings.
William B. Fisher.
Rebecca M. Frothingham.
John L. Gibbs.
Frances B. Greene.
Isake H. Gifford.

Albert W. Holmes.
Lucy James.
Sarah D. Ottiwell.
Anna C. Phinney.
Gardner T. Sanford.
Mary B. Sanford.
Charles F. Shaw.
Susan S. Snow.
Humphrey F. Swift.
William N. Swift.
Edmund Taber.
Elizabeth R. Wing.
Walter P. Winsor.
Adelaide F. Wood.

The death of Edmund Taber, our senior member, removes from our midst a charming gentleman of the old school. Old only in years, the relation of his valued reminiscence and his interest in the aims of this organization are pleasant memories.

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Wing, Secretary.

Report of the Treasurer

BY

WILLIAM A. MACKIE

Annual report of William A. Mackie, treasurer of the Old Dartmouth Historical society, from March 31, 1911 to June 12, 1912.

Receipts.

Balance, March 31, 1911	\$235.03
Membership and Dues,	550.00
Lyceum Fund (Merchants Nat'l Bank),	27.00
Lyceum Fund (Mechanics Nat'l Bank),	180.00
Lyceum Fund (N. B. 5c Savings Bank),	255.51
Lyceum Fund (N. B. Inst. for Savings),	389.12
Life Membership Fund (N. B. Inst. for Savings),	166.03
Legacy Est. C. A. M. Taber,	150.00
Rebate of Tax,	48.20
	<hr/>
	\$2000.99

Payments.

Salaries,	\$1350.00
Supplies,	248.12
Labor,	350.85
	<hr/>
Balance,	1948.97
	52.02
	<hr/>
	\$2000.99

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Mackie, Treasurer.

Report of the Museum Section

BY

ANNIE SEABURY WOOD

In presenting the 8th annual report of the museum section we have to confess to a year of inactivity on the part of the committee. In November Roy C. Andrews gave a lecture under our auspices describing his wanderings in the South Seas and the Orient, but other than this nothing in this line has been attempted.

The friends of the society, however, have not been idle, and it is gratifying to be able to report that many important additions to the museum have been made, some as gifts, others as loans. The annual meeting is the time when the society makes public acknowledgment of these acquisitions and we take this opportunity to extend our thanks to all contributors. While it is impossible to enumerate all of them we desire to make mention of the more important gifts received during the year.

Historically, one of the most interesting is a kneeling stool used at the first Methodist meetings in New Bedford. At the foot of Mill street, which took its name from a windmill standing at the top of the hill there still stands a plain, old, two-storied house. The house was built by George East during the Revolution and was afterwards known as East's Tavern. It became a great centre for ministers, and as there were at that time no churches, religious services were often held there. On the eastern slope of the roof of the house is a scuttle and here, it is said, Mrs. East, a woman noted for her piety, used to screech and shout to the good people across the river to announce a meeting. In 1795 Jesse Lee preached in this house, the first Methodist sermon ever listened to in New Bedford. The landing on the old stairway where he stood remained unchanged within, but the praying stone upon which he knelt has found a home in the rooms of the society. It is a plain old piece of work, guiltless of paint and absolutely without ornamentation, made apparently by rather unskilled hands with rather crude tools, and it is now somewhat shaky from age. A brass tablet, suitably inscribed, has been affixed to it by its donor, Mary East Coggeshall, a great grand-daughter of George East.

Mrs. Clement Nye Swift, whose interest in the society never flags, and who has always been untiring in her devotion to the work, has given, among many other things, the Men's High Seat from the old Friends' Meeting House built at Acushnet about 1740. This, too, is a very val-

uable acquisition from a historical standpoint.

Abbot P. Smith is greatly interested in the ancient household furnishings of the homes of old Dartmouth, and one of his many valued donations is a folding bed of unusual pattern from the Handy house at Hix's Bridge. This house which has lately come into the possession of Mr. Smith was built in 1714 (almost 200 years ago) by George Cardman. From him it descended to his daughter, the wife of William White. About 100 years ago it became the property of the Handy family and it is still known as the old Dr. Handy house. It is a most interesting place with big low rooms, fine old woodwork, a huge fireplace, a brick oven, and a smoke chamber for smoking hams.

The old packet ship New York of the Black Ball Line running between New York and Liverpool was commanded by Captain Thomas Bennett, and a carved mast-sheath of beautiful design and workmanship from that ship has been presented by Captain Bennett's grand-daughter, Miss Clara Bennett.

An ancient try-pot used about 1750 on the Fairhaven shore for trying out blubber from whales brought in from shore cruises, is the gift of Miss Anna Robinson at the request of her mother, Mrs. James Robinson.

From William W. Crapo we have received a set of Benjamin Russell's drawings, which have been previously acknowledged; from Charles W. Clifford, an artistic and interesting medal in bronze, and from Frank H. Gifford, old account books and log books.

The following bequests have also been received and are gratefully acknowledged: A pair of brass whale-oil lamps bequest of Lydia H. Church; a grand Chickering piano, the first in Fairhaven, brought by Captain Arthur Cox for his daughter; a portrait of Captain Arthur Cox, both bequest of Sarah Cox Anthony; portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Hoag, bequest of their daughter, Abby Hoag; portrait of Captain Caleb Kempton, from his son, George Kempton.

One word in closing. Many interesting articles have been placed in the rooms of the society during the year as loans, and although they are not mentioned in detail in this report, they have been gladly received and are fully appreciated."

Respectfully submitted,

Annie Seabury Wood,
Secretary Museum section.

Report of the Publication Section

BY

WILLIAM A. WING

In Old Dartmouth's early days, the comparatively few who could write rarely took their "pen in hand," save on some occasion of import. The daily struggle for existence left little time for letters—paper was valuable and conveyance of news seldom and dangerous. Of the few letters that the vicissitudes of time have preserved for us, there are three of more than passing interest.

The first was written in Dartmouth in 1727 by Jabez Delano (son of Jonathan) to his brother, Jonathan, who had moved to Tolland, Conn., and became an ancestor of President U. S. Grant:

Loving Brother—I was moved to write to you before now, both within myself and from mother, but I put her off because of the sickness that was in my family.

Our eldest has had a long lingering illness. I am but poorly, but the sickness has been very general in our town. Four grown persons died in our village, viz.: Jonathan Hathaway, Rose Spooner, Jemima Babcock and Amos Taber's wife.

We have indifferent good crops. We have had a great drought, which lasted from English morning till about ye middle of Sept. (The usual farmers' complaint of the weather!).

Of an earthquake—A week yesterday, about ten at night, which shook both ye land and water, the islands and seas at that degree that several doors were shook of ye latch in our village, and 'tis said that at Nantucket ye harthstones grated one against another and that Car, ye boat builder, run out of his house, got in a boat for fear ye island should sink.

My love to all our friends, farewell,

Your Brother,

1727.

Jabez Delano.

Whaling correspondence is shown as early as 1745-6, in the following letter by Philip Taber to his son, Tucker Taber, at Dartmouth:

Sandy Hook, ye 6 of 12 mo., 1745-6.

Loving Sons—Having this opportunity that proper to rite to you to inform you that we are well and that George Sisson arrived here last second day and they are very desirus to go off a whaling as soon as possible and want you to come as soon as possible and to bring a good boat and if the can bring som good hands it would not be amis. Thomas Akins will not haul his boat very soon for his sloop is gon to Cape Britton (the Louisburg expedition). Our love to you and all friends is what offers at present from your

Ever loving father,

Philip Taber.

The servant problem was vexatious even then, for Thomas Hazard—known as "Bedford Tom," the president of the Bedford Bank on the very site of our Historical Society—writes from New Bedford, July 8, 1803, to his brother, Rowland Hazard, Esq., of Kingston, R. I.:

Patience that our father and mother brought up has been here about 10 days. She is so much demented and so troublesome in our house that I was obliged to apply to the authorities and have her sent to the work-house, where she now is, as we do not know in what town in the state of Rhode Island she belongs. I shall be much obliged by they informing me immediately on receipt of this, what town has to maintain her so that our selectmen may take the right steps to get her where she belongs and to be clear of the expense and trouble of her.

We are as well as usual, with much love to dear mother, thy wife and children, in which we all join.

Thy affectionate brother,

Thomas Hazard, Jr.

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Wing, Chairman.

Report of the Photograph Section

BY

WILLIAM A. WING

In the year of our Lord 1555, there was born near Bedford, England, one Lewis Latham. He was gently bred and trained in the art of falconry, becoming sergeant falconier to King Charles I. In those days an office of importance and distinction. It was his brother, Seymour Latham, who wrote the authority on that art, 'Latham's Falconry.'

In 1655 at the ripe age of 100 years 'Lewis Lathame Gent was buried,' according to the parish register.

His daughter, Frances married respectively Lord Weston William Dungan, Jeremiah Clarke, William Vaughan, and came eventually to live in Newport, in Rhode Island, bringing among her household goods a portrait of her father painted in his advanced years. This portrait bears in one corner the Latham arms and is today the property of descendants, the heirs of Mr. Elkins, whose daughter it was said might become allied with the Royal House of Italy.

Walter Clarke, the grandson of Lewis Latham, inherited his mother's propensity for marrying frequently. His wives were: Content Greenman, Hannah Scott (an aunt of Mary (Holder) Slocum, Freeborn Williams (a daughter of Roger Williams) and Sarah Prior. Descendants came eventually to Old Dartmouth and one married an early owner of the Howland farm at Round Hills, and so Lewis Latham became an ancestor of many old Dartmouth folk.

We have lately acquired an interesting photograph from this ancient portrait for our photograph room. So bringing us of the present here in New Bedford in New England back into the past to that Court Falconer, who saw in his one hundred years of life so many historic happenings, Lewis Latham, Esq., of old Bedford in old England.'

Respectfully submitted,

Wm. A. Wing, Chairman.

George H. Tripp paid a tribute to what the Old Dartmouth society had accomplished. "Either of its three objects," he declared, "would be an excuse for its existence. There is the collection, which is on exhibition at the rooms of the society. Then there is the publication of the society, the thirty odd numbers of which now contain an immense amount of valuable material. We use them a great deal in the library, and the so-

ciety ought to take a great deal of pride in them.

Another work that is hardly recognized is the monumental work done by Mr. Worth, in preparing an index of the local papers, which involved looking over the files of nearly a hundred years, and gives almost a complete chronological history of New Bedford. It was a labor of love by one man, and is worthy of a great deal of honor."



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 36

The Proceedings of the Thirty-sixth Quarterly Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society; being their annual outing,
and held in Westport, Massachusetts, 12 September, 1912.

HIX'S BRIDGE AND THE HANDY HOUSE

By HENRY B. WORTH

[NOTE.—The "Old Dartmouth Historical Society Sketches" will be published
by the Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each, on application
to the Secretary and also at Hutchinson's Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Thirty - sixth Quarterly Meeting

The Old Dartmouth Historical society held its annual outing and 36th quarterly meeting yesterday at the old Handy house at Hix Bridge. The trip was made in automobiles, about 30 machines leaving the public library building at 11 a. m., and passing through Smith Mills, Westport Factory, and down to the old Potter house, which was built in 1677, a short distance north of Central Village. From the Potter house the trip continued south to the road leading to Hix's Bridge and then to the Handy house, arriving there by 12 30 o'clock. This old house was built in 1714 and has been recently restored to its original condition by the present owner, Abbott P. Smith. Here the party had lunch.

William W. Crapo, Henry H. Crapo, Edmund Wood, Mary E. Bradford, Mrs. Thomas A. Tripp, Anna L. Tripp, Clara Bennett, Henry B. Worth, Sarah E. Worth, George R. Stetson, Mrs. George R. Stetson, Willard N. Lane, Mrs. M. J. Leary, George S. Taber, Mary B. Leonard, Roland A. Leonard, Clara A. Read, Mrs. William H. Wood, William H. Wood, Calista H. Parker, Elizabeth Watson, Caroline H. Hiler, Ella H. Read, Sarah H. Taber, Susan G. W. Jones, Carolyne S. Jones, Francis T. Hammond, Edward B. Smith, Mrs. Edward B. Smith, Mrs. Clifford Baylies, Mary W. Taber, Mrs. Sarah Kelley, Caroline S. Akin, Mrs. Mayhew E. Hitch, Mayhew R. Hitch, Alice Howland Tripp, Gertie E. Bridgham, George L. Habitch, Mrs. George L. Habitch, George R. Phillips, George R. Wood, Mrs. William C. Phillips, William C. Hawes, Mrs. William C. Hawes, Josiah Hunt, Mrs. J. Hunt, Natalie Hunt, Mrs. J. L. Martin, Bertha A. C. Mosher, William E. Hatch, Arthur R. Brown, Elizabeth P. Swift, Elmore P. Haskins, William A. Wing, Arthur A. Jones, David L. Parker, William H. Reynard, George H. Tripp, Mrs. Susan H. Kempton, Anna C. Ricketson, Cornelia G. Winslow, Cyn-

thia D. Jenney, Margaret Earle Wood, Priscilla Howland, Francis Rodman, Arthur G. Grinnell, Mr. and Mrs. Llewellyn Howland, Carline Stone, Thomas S. Hathaway, Sarah Tappan Coe, William Stevenson, Gertrude S. Perry, Mrs. Abby L. Prichard, Mrs. Mae A. Braley, Thomas E. Braley, Fred D. Stetson, Caroline W. Hathaway, Marian Parker, Mrs. H. B. Worth, Caroline E. Hicks, Dr. Wm. J. Nickerson, Charles A. Tuell, Elvira M. Tuell, Carrie E. Davis (Mrs. L. B.), Helen H. Davis, Margaret E. Gibbs, Frank Denby, Mrs. Andrew G. Paine, Mary B. Paine, Elizabeth N. Swift, Gertrude W. Baxter, Mary Kempton Taber, Sally Gordon Taber, Mrs. William N. Church, Katherine L. Swift, Mrs. C. A. Cook, Mr. and Mrs. William Huston, Mrs. Fred S. Potter, George E. Briggs, Francis J. Denby, Mr. and Mrs. Frank W. Wildes, Thomas B. Wildes, Caroline L. Aldrich, Gertrude W. Mann, Hilda P. Tripp, Benjamin C. Tripp, Cortez Allen, Elizabeth S. Macomber, Edward L. Macomber, Herbert S. Peirce, Grace E. Peirce, Jennie C. Peirce, Mrs. H. C. Washburn, Albert A. Ruddock, H. C. Washburn, Mrs. S. J. Tripp, Benj. W. Allen, George E. Tripp, Edna M. Tripp, Etta J. Allen, George J. Allen, Charles T. Heron, George E. Handy, Milton E. Borden, Roland Cornell, George Hart, A. F. Brownell, John Mosher, A. P. Smith, A. Westby, D. W. Baker.

President Wood addressed the meeting.

Members and friends of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society and Citizens of Westport:

Today we celebrate our society's outing within the limits of that portion of Old Dartmouth which was set off as the town of Westport. It is fitting that we should do this for we have already held similar meetings in Acushnet and Fairhaven and North Dartmouth and South Dartmouth, and several meetings in New Bedford.

Right here the interrupting small boy might cry out: "What's the matter with Westport?" We can all say that Westport is all right. There is absolutely nothing the matter with her—unless we might say that she suffers from being too far away from New Bedford and too near to Fall River. That is too great a strain to put upon the virtue of any town. But Westport had within her that which always was against provincialism and village narrowness—and that is a sea port and commercial relations with a wider world—and they began very early to develop it.

"Before the neighboring towns on the north and west had really learned that the earth was round, the inhabitants of Westport had followed New Bedford down to the sea in ships and had begun at Westport Point to regularly fit out some good sized whalers. Here began John Avery Parker in a moderate way which developed steadily after he had moved to New Bedford until he became one of the merchant princes of his time; and Henry Wilcox laid by a fortune which the land would never have yielded.

"The town of Westport has always prospered. It has been a place of beautiful farms of a thrifty, prosperous people. It has furnished from its hardy seamen some of the most enterprising and successful whaling captains that that fearless industry has ever known. In its earlier days it had a social life, centering in Adamsville of some aristocratic pretensions; it had an unusually prosperous settlement of Quakers at Central Village, and in the industrious, exemplary and successful life of Paul Cuffe, it had the earliest exhibition of the capacity and executive ability of the American Negro which waited long for an equal exponent in Frederick Douglass and Booker T. Washington.

"We are glad to meet in Westport today. We are interested in its welfare and many of its inhabitants are interested in our society. We have several members from Westport, and one, Edward L. Macomber, is a director.

We have come over today for two purposes; to see the historic houses which have survived 200 years, and secondly to learn something about them and of the Old Dartmouth mothers who dwelt in them, and of the life which went on 200 years ago and dignified this same picture of house and landscape and beautiful expanse of river.

We have several full fledged, well developed historians in New Bedford, who are attached to our society, and we generally carry them with us when we wander forth into the more remote parts of our old township.

The dean of our faculty of history is Hon. William W. Crapo, who through a long life of studious research and by many published essays and public addresses has illuminated the part of his native town.

We have Henry H. Crapo, who has within a week stirred us with a rushing mighty wind the dry leaves and vegetable mould of the genealogical camps of eastern New England. I shall hope at some future meeting to say more of this interesting publication which means so much to our own society.

And we have Henry B. Worth, who more than any other man has shed a steady light upon the ancient land proprietors and the house of our ancestors. Fortified by these three experts our society is safe to travel, and no citizen of Westport will dare to mislead us or take us in by spinning any visionary yarns for our consumption.

Hix's Bridge and the Handy House

BY

HENRY BARNARD WORTH

It is of great advantage that this meeting should be held in such an historic centre where are clustered so many features of interest, and where two centuries ago resided some of the leading families of Old Dartmouth, because here it is possible to observe the landmarks face to face.

At this point in its course the Acoakset river is contracted within narrow limits by the hills on either side, and here is the most picturesque spot in the Indian line of travel between the Acushnet and Saconet.

As early as 1686 there must have been transportation across the river, because at that date the Handy farm was bounded on the south "by a highway," and this would be a meaningless public utility unless there were some arrangement at the river to reach the other side. The highway at the east side of the river extended to Apponegansett, and on the north side fronting this river was the homestead of Valentine Huddleston, and across the road was the homestead of Samuel Cornell, which he obtained from his mother, Rebecca. On the west side of the river the highway in 1686 extended up the steep hill to the road "leading to Paquachuck," now known as Westport Point; on the south side of this road was a great tract owned by Joseph Coleman of Scituate, and on the north side the farm owned by Peleg Slocum, which at that date he conveyed to William Ricketson, and shortly after was purchased by George Cadman, and in recent years known as the Handy farm. How much before that date a ferry was operated, the records fail to disclose, but the presence of public roads leading to the river from each side indicates the existence of some method of crossing previous to that time. By whom the ferry was first conducted cannot be determined except by inference. When

the road was laid out on the east side in 1707 it began "where the ferry-boat now usually lands"; this was before Mary Hix engaged in the business, and while it might have been operated by either of the farm owners there is nothing to suggest that Huddleston, Cornell or Coleman was concerned in the undertaking. From 1686 to 1718 the Handy farm was owned by George Cadman, the most prominent man in the locality; and in 1710 he conveyed to Mary Hix the land on the river front which she used as the ferry landing, and where she lived. This is some indication that when she made the purchase and engaged in the ferry she continued what George Cadman had previously established.

For over two centuries the central feature of this region was at first the ferry, and then the bridge. Joseph Hix came from Westport in 1702 and purchased a farm at the end of Westport Point, where he died in 1709. He left a widow, Mary, who was the daughter of William Earle, and she at once displayed considerable business activity. She purchased the lot on the west side of the river from George Cadman, built a house, and continued the ferry across the river. A short time later she secured land at the Head of Westport, probably with the purpose of finally choosing whichever locality provided the best business results. The court records of Bristol county indicate that she was not unmindful of the requirements of Colonial travelers, and so in 1710 and subsequent years she obtained a license to sell strong drink. She sold the land and house at the ferry in 1735 to her son, William, and he at once took steps to build a bridge, but it was not until 1738 that he had completed the structure. Then the voters of the Head of the River, under the

lead of George Lawton, William Sisson and others, protested to the general court that William Hix, who had the privilege of a ferry, had built a bridge which was a common nuisance because it obstructed the passage of boats up and down the river, and they asked that the nuisance be removed. Notice was issued to Hix to show why the petition should not be granted. It cannot be discovered how far this subject became an issue in the town, but in 1739 William Hix was elected representative to the general court, and again in 1740, a remarkable fact considering the lack of interest which the members of the Hix family have taken in political life. This election gave him such an advantage in the bridge controversy that the conclusion is sound that the townspeople united with him against the protesting voters at the head of the river. In 1739, in response to the notice from the general court, William Hix represented that he had built a commodious bridge at his own expense, at the most convenient place, and that the same was of great benefit to the public, and asked that the general court would confirm and establish the same as a toll-bridge. They voted to allow him to maintain the bridge and to charge as toll the same amount as he had previously charged for ferriage. In 1743 he was allowed to double the toll rates, because of the cost of the building and maintaining the bridge.

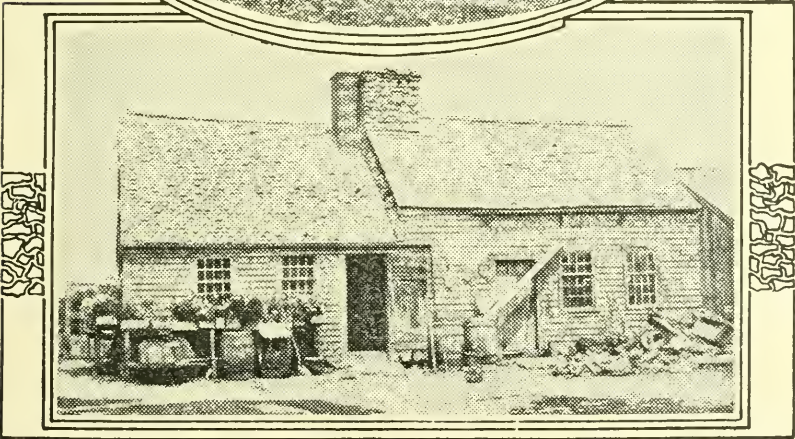
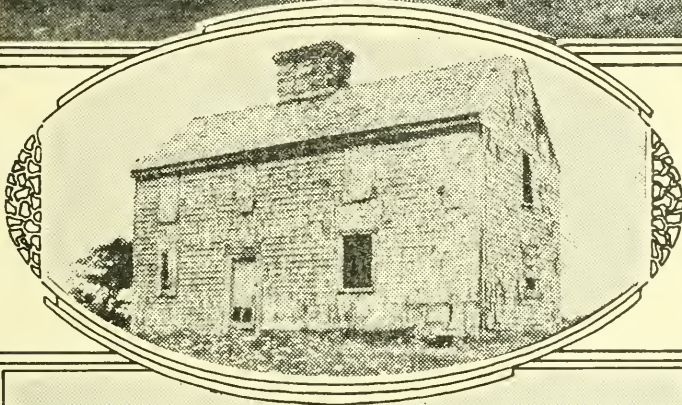
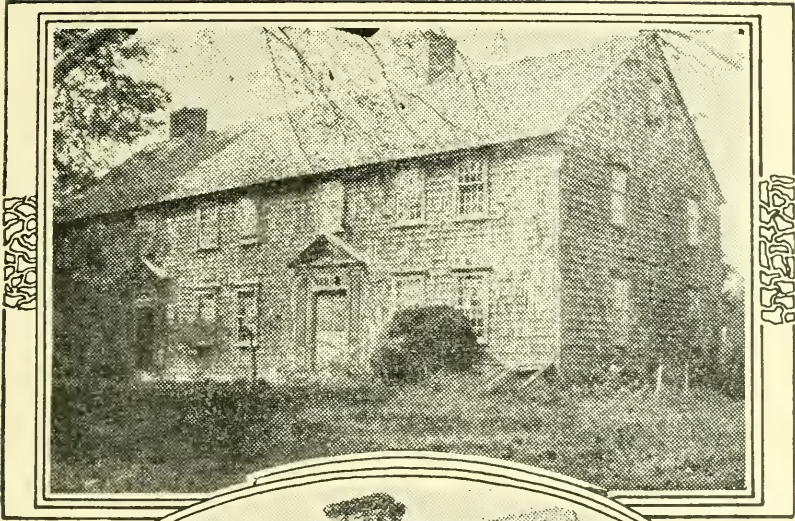
The construction of the bridge was probably an important factor in leading the Dartmouth voters to remove the town house in 1750 to the Head of Aponegansett. And it is significant that the objection to this removal came from the same men who objected to the maintenance of Hix bridge. Their self-interest and convenience were apparent in both proceedings.

The Hix Bridge farm, including the bridge and approaches, and the farm on the south side of the road, west of the river, had been acquired by William Hix, and at his death passed to his widow, Anna, and his children, and was finally owned by Joseph Gifford, who had married a daughter. The property was purchased in 1804 by John Avery Parker, Levi Standish and Josiah Brownell; and owned by them until 1814, the property was offered for sale, and it was then arranged that it should be purchased by Dr. James H. Handy and Frederick Brownell, that the doctor should take the deed in his own name; then convey the bridge and all land east of the driftway to Brownell, who should pay the sum of \$2,800. Brownell took charge and repaired the bridge as his own, collected toll, paid the taxes, built a building on the north side,

where he conducted a country store, and finally in cash and groceries paid the doctor the entire price of the property; but the latter neglected and refused to give any deed. The town took the bridge in 1871, abolished the toll feature, and made an award of \$1,800 to whoever might be the owner. This led to legal proceedings between Brownell and Dr. Handy's estate, but Brownell succeeded in getting the money. In 1876 Giles Brownell sold to Albert M. Allen the remaining land at both ends of the bridge, and it was later acquired by Mrs. Betsey F. Allen. On the second floor of the store building, where Frederick Brownell conducted his business for over fifty years, was the lodge room of the Noquochoke Free Masons, and when they erected their own building east of the river Mrs. Allen sold the store to Daniel J. Sullivan. Adjoining this building is the landing laid out by the selectmen in 1717.

The farm on the north side of the road, extending from the river to the main highway at Central Village, was purchased in 1687 by George Cadman, who had removed from Portsmouth, Rhode Island. His later homestead, comprising over five hundred acres, lay along Cadman's Brook, two miles north of Hix bridge. He was selected to fill many town offices and was a wealthy man for that period, and owned a Negro slave that he disposed of in his will. His only descendant was one daughter, Elizabeth, who married a William White, whose ancestry has defied all historical research. Cadman conveyed the northwest corner of this farm "where William White lives" to the Dartmouth Monthly Meeting of Friends in 1717, and here is the Quaker meeting-house. The rest of the farm he devised to his daughter and her husband, and after them to their children. In 1794 it was owned by Jonathan White, and the east hundred acres was that year purchased by Dr. Eli Handy of Rochester. At the death of the doctor, in 1812, the farm passed to his son, James H. Handy, who was also a physician of considerable celebrity. Industrious in his profession, he was nevertheless negligent of his own business interests. It is said that he never collected any bills and never paid any; and his estate was insolvent. This carelessness involved the bridge in the complications already described. Yet he was a famous country doctor.

The great house occupied by the Handy family reveals the fact that it was built at three different periods. William White married Elizabeth Cadman about 1714, and went there to live, and their house, a pretentious mansion for those days, was the east



1—THE CADMAN - WHITE HOUSE

2—THE RICKETSON - SHERMAN HOUSE

3—THE WAITE - POTTER HOUSE

section of the present structure. The framework which has not been concealed by plastering or wall paper, gives unmistakable evidence of its age. When the central portion is examined, where the corner posts project into the room only a few inches, there is conclusive evidence of a construction not far from 1800. This portion was probably built by Dr. Eli Handy. The west section, in which the corner posts are entirely concealed, was erected many years later. A gentleman is now living who states that this was built by Dr. James H. Handy, that he borrowed the money to pay for the same from a sister of George Kirby, and failing to repay the amount, the farm was attached and bought by Kirby, and was later purchased by a friend of the Handy family, who, in 1876, conveyed it to Miss Hannah Handy, a sister of the doctor, who had paid for it by work as a seamstress. She devised the property to a son of the doctor, and last year his descendants sold the farm, the part west of the driftway, with the mansion, to Abbott P. Smith, and the east part to Herbert S. Pierce.

The house that Mary Hix erected at the west end of the bridge about 1710, stood on the south side of the road, and after the Revolutionary war was considerably rebuilt. One room of the old structure was retained, but this was considerably obscured by the additional structure. The house is now painted red. Here was the residence of the bridge owners until it was purchased by Albert M. Allen, and here for years bicycle tourists and the Masonic brethren appreciated the entertainment that could be obtained at Aunt Betsey's.

At the conclusion of the meeting at the Handy house, a visit was made to the old Ricketson house, which was built in 1684, then back through Russells Mills to New Bedford.

HISTORIC NOTES ON THESE OLD HOUSES

Ricketson-Sherman House, Westport.

This house is located on the west side of the road leading from South Westport to Horse Neck, about two miles south of the South Westport Corner and 300 yards east of the road.

The land was originally owned by Hannah Gaunt, a descendant of the Southworth family of Duxbury. In 1684 she conveyed the same to William Ricketson, before that time a

resident of Portsmouth, R. I. In 1682 Mr. Ricketson petitioned the town of Portsmouth for leave to build a water-mill, and in 1683 he petitioned to be admitted as a freeman. The town records disclose no action on either petition. His next appearance seems to have been in Dartmouth. When all the land to which he was entitled had been set off to him he owned nearly 500 acres, bounded west by the Noquochoke river. He died in 1691, leaving three sons, Timothy, William and Jonathan, and widow Elizabeth, who later married Mathew Wing; and from these two marriages are descended the Ricketsons, and most of the Wings of this section.

This farm remained in the Ricketson family until 1796. The portion containing this house was sold to Thomas Sherman of Rhode Island, and in 1904 was owned by Charles and Albert C. Sherman of New Bedford, two of his descendants.

This house is located on a hill which commands a view embracing Adamsvills, South Westport, Westport Point to the Elizabeth Islands. It faces south and end to the adjoining road. The chimney is made of stone, and according to the principles governing the latest Rhode Island stone chimney. The chimney extends nearly across the house and furnished the four rooms each with a fire-place. The house throughout has heavy summers, bracketed corner-posts. The timbers are all of sawed pine and handsomely though plainly finished. Such a construction clearly antedates 1700.

In the east chamber the mantel-piece and frame about the fire-place indicate the finest degree of hand workmanship, in a day when sand-paper was unknown. When Isham and Brown visited this house in December, 1903, it was their opinion that it was constructed about 1684.

The last occupant left it before 1877, and as the dust worm has practically destroyed its frame in the first story, it cannot remain standing many years longer.

William Ricketson's business was that of a miller, and he operated a saw mill on the brook southeast from his homestead, where possibly the timbers of this house were prepared and finished.

Waite-Potter House, Westport.

This house is located about half a mile north of Central Village, between Main and River roads, and was owned in 1904 by Perry G. Potter. It can be seen from the main road except in the summer season, when hid by the foliage of the trees.

The original farm in which this house is located was situated on both sides of the main road, and was conveyed in 1661 by William Earle to Thomas Waite; comprised over 200 acres and was bounded east by the Noquochoke river. It remained in the Waite family until 1728, when Benjamin Waite sold the part between the river and the main road to Robert Kirby, whose descendants continued in possession until 1837, when Ichabod Kirby conveyed to Restcome Potter his homestead farm of 50 acres on which this house is located. When Restcome Potter died the farm descended to his son, the present owner. In the deed to Mr. Potter a small piece of land was reserved which had been the Kirby burial lot for over a hundred years, the rough stones in the lot being marked, one R. K. a second, the same, and another I. K. The Waite burial lot is in that section of the farm lying on the west side of the road.

This house is the oldest in old Dartmouth, if not in southern Massachusetts. It will be noticed that the chimney is constructed in two sections, the right of which is stone and the left brick. The explanation handed down among the owners is that when the west addition was built, just previous to the Revolutionary War, it was found the old stone chimney would not furnish a fireplace for the addition without another flue, and hence the west section of brick was built against the old stone chimney. The ancient section of the house is that which appears in the picture as the centre. It is built according to the methods in vogue in Rhode Island following 1650.

It is a one-story dwelling of one room 18 feet square, with a fireplace, as shown in the photograph, and a low attic under the roof. The west end of the ancient house was a stone wall tapering with the roof and ending in the chimney stack. The fireplace is wide, but low, and a century after the house was built was lined with brick. The chimney jamb is a beam 18 inches square. The summer was placed parallel to the chimney and was supported by posts set into the walls of the house. The corner posts are bracketed and braced. The mortar in the chimney is of composition made from seashells. The entire construction indicates that the building was erected before 1700.

Messrs. Isham and Brown of Providence, experts in Colonial house building, examined this structure in 1903, and suggested 1660 as the probable date of construction, but the tradition exists that it was built in the 1677, which was the year following the King Philip war, as the Indians are supposed to have destroyed all dwell-

ings in this section. The tradition is probably correct. Its last occupant, a Kirby, left it to move into the west addition, and the old portion has since been used as a pigsty, henroost and general farm purposes.

Restcome Potter lived in the west part two years after he purchased the farm, and then built the present farmhouse.

Dr. Handy House, Westport.

This house is located a short distance west of the Hix Bridge, at the north-west corner of the road leading to Westport Point and in 1904 was owned by a descendant of the famous Dr. Handy.

The land was originally set off to George Cadman and that farm extended from the river west and included the Quaker meeting house, cemetery, and town house at Central Village.

George Cadman's only child was Elizabeth, who married William White of Rochester. Thus the name Cadman in this branch of the family disappeared from Dartmouth, but the numerous descendants by the name of White in that part of New England all trace their lineage back to Elizabeth Cadman. They were married about 1714, and this property was placed at their disposal by George Cadman, and in his will, probated in 1729, was devised to William White and wife.

1794. Jonathan White to Humphrey White.

1794. Humphrey White to Eli Handy, physician, and the house has remained in the Handy family since that date.

From an exterior view the impression might be gained that this house was originally built for a tavern or a road house, but the observer would scarcely discover that it was constructed at the separate dates covering 120 years. This clearly appears by an interior examination.

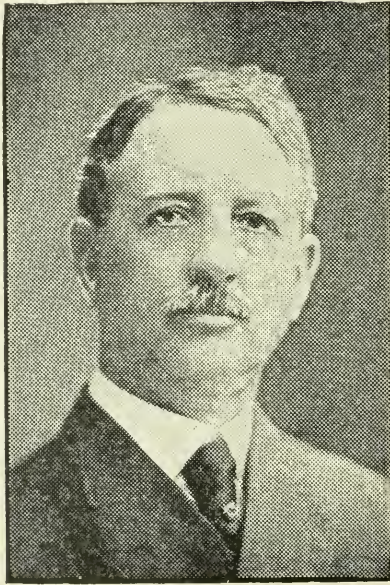
The two front doors divide the house into three sections, forming six rooms on the lower floor and the same number on the second. Beginning at the east end it will be observed that here is a heavy summer parallel to the end of the house extending through both rooms, and in the second story the heavy corner-posts are bracketed. In the middle section there is no summer and the part of the corner-posts projecting into the room somewhat insignificant; while in the west rooms the summer and corner-posts have entirely disappeared. In the east part a significant feature is the bracing from corner-post to girder, as shown in the interior. In the east part the edges of all timbers chamfered.

The evidence is satisfactory to indicate that the east end was the original house; but it was built in 1714 to 16; that it had a west chimney which provided a fire-place for all the rooms; that about 1730 the owner desired to build a west addition, and that it became necessary to remove

the original chimney and build the present east chimney; that Dr. Handy in 1821 built the west third of the house.

The house was purchased by Abbott P. Smith in 1911 and he has done much to restore the house to its original condition.

H. B. W.



ABBOTT P. SMITH



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 37

Being the proceedings of the Thirty-Seventh Meeting of the
Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held in their building,
Water Street, New Bedford, Massachusetts, on January 29, 1913.

NEW BEDFORD ONE HUNDRED AND TWENTY
YEARS AGO, AS GLIMPSED THROUGH THE
MEDLEY.

By Ida A. McAfee.

[Note.—The “Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches” will be published by the
Society quarterly and may be purchased for ten cents each on application to the
Secretary and also at Hutchinson’s Book Store.]

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

THIRTY-SEVENTH MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

IN THEIR BUILDING

WATER STREET, NEW BEDFORD

MASSACHUSETTS

JANUARY 29, 1913

On Henry Howland Crapo's "The Comeoverers" and Tablet to Ralph Earle

BY

PRESIDENT EDMUND WOOD

President Edmund Wood in opening the meeting said:

Since our last meeting there has been published in this community a notable book, "Certain Comeoverers," in two volumes, by Henry Howland Crapo. This publication is worthy of prominent notice in the proceedings of this society, not only because it was written by one of our members who has already contributed for us a paper, but also because it treats so largely of the people who settled and established the township of Old Dartmouth.

The history of this locality is interesting only as it becomes a history of the people who settled here, and lived and loved and strove and who transmitted through worthy descendants so goodly a heritage. But it isn't often that a learned book on genealogy and ballasted heavily with ancestral diagrams with infinite ramifications, can be considered an animated history of a people or place. Such a work is generally a history of dead names, dry, yes, and mouldy, too. But here we have a publication about the dead,—long, long dead, but which is very much alive. The characters in it have lived, and been actuated by the same ambitions and passions which we recognize about us daily. Some led saintly lives or violently proclaimed their faith and suffered dire persecution and torture for righteousness's sake; and there were others who sinned easily and fell far short of the glory of God.

The story begins with the landing of the Pilgrims, close by us at Plymouth, and extends up into Newburyport and down thro' Old Dartmouth into Rhode Island. All this land was new. It was an unbroken wilderness and the first instinct and duty was to break and subdue it, and for a few

generations this undertaking was enough to occupy about all their energy. Much of the life which was lived by these old worthies in this very locality was a homely life, but they were creatures of flesh and blood. With a few notable exceptions they were quite ordinary men and women with a very limited sphere of action. The family was in a way patriarchal and few broke away from the ancestral home. Far from their farms and from their usual wealth of children

"Their sober wishes never learned to stray.

Along the cool sequestered vale of life
They kept the noiseless tenor of their way."

They tilled the land and got more than a living off of it, and we know the obstinate ungrateful character of most of that land now and it couldn't have been much better then. Slocum's Neck yields more hens and eggs and less in crops every year.

In the description of this locality we recognize an old friend in the story of Eliezer Slocum and his wife the Lady Elephel. The material in this chapter was first presented in a paper read before this society a few years ago. And a most delightful chapter it is. Barneys Joy and Slocum's Neck are here brought into sudden touch but into violent contrast with the old world and its older civilization.

Here is all the material for a most delightful novel and that too without a violent departure from the rather legendary story. Can we not indulge in the hope that the author, having already contributed so much pleasure by his artistic recital of the rather meagre historical facts, may not some day give his imagination free rein and round out the story into a

historical romance almost medieval in its ruggedness and truly artistic in its harmonious grouping of most violent contrasts.

Taking this publication as a whole we are impressed with its comprehensiveness and the wide range of the author's research. The balancing of conflicting authorities, which are more or less traditions, is calmly judicial. But the whole is pervaded by a playful fancy working with a light and delicate touch. Never before it seems to us, has a scholarly genealogy been handled vivaciously. The subject and the abundant pedigrees lead us to expect a Dr. Dryas-

dust but lo! the style is, as it were, moistened with sparkling champagne.

The Old Dartmouth Historical society is gratified by its connection with so charming a book.

President Wood announced that since the last meeting an additional tablet had been added to the collection already in possession of the society, this latest tablet being inscribed "Ralph Earle, Leader of Settlers, Died 1716." It was from a descendant, Margaret Earle Wood. Secretary Wing read a brief sketch from Mr. Crapo's book of the Ralph Earle for whom the tablet was erected, and his parents.

New Bedford One Hundred and Twenty Years Ago, as Glimpsed through The Medley

BY

IDA A. McAFEE

One hundred and twenty years ago takes us back to 1793. That was ten years later than the signing of the treaty of peace following the Colonies' War for Independence. It was the year of the closing scenes of the French Revolution, and the year that saw the French Republic established. It was the year when Louis XVI lost his head and Marie Antoinette suffered a similar fate. It was a year that saw France and England embroiled in war, and pretty much all of Europe out with gun and sword.

It was in the presidency of George Washington. It was when John Hancock was governor of Massachusetts, and the year in which he died. It was the time when this nation consisted of fifteen states; when the Indian was a very live problem; and when the western frontier lay along the Ohio.

The year 1793 was hardly more than a quarter of a century after the name of Bedford—to be afterwards changed to Newbedford—had attached itself to the little community in Dartmouth that for the brief years of its existence had been content to be known as "the settlement at the foot of Joseph Russell's homestead." It was the sixth year after Newbedford had been set apart from the town of Dartmouth, as a separate township, including within itself the villages of Acushnet and Fairhaven.

It was twelve years earlier than the time when William A. Wall made his familiar picture of the section that lay between the water front and what is now William and Second streets, and nineteen years earlier than when the Fourcorners picture was put on canvas; and as it was fifteen years after the British soldiery had landed at Clark's Cove and marched up

around the head of the river and disembarked at Sconticut Neck, burning as it went eleven houses and twenty-three shops, the place must have had a much sparser look as to buildings even than in these pictures.

It was a time when ail Bedford, Fairhaven, and Acushnet counted 3313 people, using the figures of the federal census of 1790.

It was a year when fifty-four citizens of the town cast a vote for governor and for senators—there was a property qualification attached to the franchise in that day.

It was a time when there were two mails a week between this town and Boston.

Especially it was the time of Newbedford's first newspaper, *The Medley* or *Newbedford Marine Journal*.

The time to appreciate a newspaper is when it gets to be about one hundred and twenty years old—when the paper is brown and the ink faded and the letters worn. Here we are making a special point of this little ragged dingy paper, while in its day John Spooner, its founder, publisher, editor, printer, and everything else, got a hearty rebuke from a subscriber because it did not satisfy his expectations of what a newspaper ought to be; and when the printer had to coax his subscribers to come up with the price, in cash or rags, junk, country produce or whatever they would give.

To us it is the mirror of the past—a good deal blurred and not reflecting quite clearly, but giving a glimpse here and there of what we want to see. From the standpoint of the Old Dartmouth Historical society, which owns a two-year volume dating from the start,—through the favor of Misses Anna and Ellen Clifford,—it is not so very satisfactory a document. The value of chronicling local news had not yet been learned. The

interest of the future in the past was not appreciated.

The Medley printed a great deal about the revolution in France and the establishment of the French Republic, in which the new republic of America was vastly interested; gave considerable space to congressional and legislative proceedings; printed such news from over the seas and from other sections of the country as came its way in letters to people in this town or to their friends in other places—as “a letter from an American in Dunkirk to his friend in this town, received by brig Mary;” as brought by word of mouth by travellers or the shipmasters, as “a gentleman from Philadelphia says;” or as copied from other newspapers,—weeks or months old, as the case might be. Especially it gave literary Newbedford a chance to express itself in print on all sorts of abstract and philosophical themes, and to worry and flurry each other a bit, under such signatures as Equitas and Agathocles, Philanthropos, Philander, and the like: but it seemed to take for granted that the people knew what was going on about them and that what they knew there was no reason to put into print.

A Highfaluting Salutatory.

It was a highfaluting salutatory with which The Medley greeted the people of the beginnings of this city on November 27th, 1792—about “the establishment of the art of printing in this part of our empire,” with “here an extensive country, situate remote from a printing press—its inhabitants numerous; but a small part of them knowing or being known in the transactions of the world, unless they advance a large extra sum for their knowledge,” and its intention to “instruct them in the ways of men at a much cheaper rate”—than subscribing for an out-of-town paper.

“A general knowledge of the world—of the revolutions of Empires, Kingdoms, and States, the political transactions of men in public stations—the revolutions in commerce—improvement in arts and mechanics—philosophical discoveries and maritime observations, are useful to man in his journey through life,” writes the editor, and analyzes a newspaper as “a mirror in which is seen Ambition, Envy, Revenge, Treachery, Bigotry, Pride, Superstition, Joy and Sorrow—Passions which constitute the essence of man; wherein we may read, view ourselves, and, if prudent men, alter our deformities; or, at any rate, that is a source of knowledge and entertainment for the curious and enquiring mind,” he abruptly concludes. “Here the statesman may read the

fate of nations.—Here the philosopher may spread before him a map of man, of manners, and of things; and entertain the mind with an agreeable repast.—Here the honest laborer by his social fire, surrounded by his little domestic republic, may waste his evenings in delightful relaxation of mind—may acquaint himself with surrounding occurrences,—may bless his God and his industry, which have placed him in his happy state of independence; while, unenvious, he reads the agitations of mind which distract the peace and blast the felicity of the ‘great ones of the earth.’

“Here the moral philosopher, the friend of man, may communicate to his fellow rationalists all the benevolences of his soul in gentle admonitions and instructive maxims, to inform the ignorant, reform the vicious, and encourage virtue and humanity.

“Here the less serious may amuse the fancy with an original bon mot—a pithy anecdote and sometimes a Parnassian Flight”—evidently New Bedford has always had its poet. (But in that day, as in this, he did not always get his productions printed. In a “Notice to Correspondents,” some time later, two writers were told their communications would be printed next week, but “New Poetic Correspondents” were recommended “to renew their draft at the Fount of Helicon—they appear to have but just siped.”)

These, then, were the colors under which The Medley was launched, with the promise that “nothing which worketh iniquity, or which maketh a lie” shall ever have impression here.—That here private characters shall ever be held sacred.—That the production of enmity, of partiality, and of resentment shall never disgrace his type:—a standard that, if adhered to, may have been sufficient to account for the sale of the paper after seven years, to a rival printer who had come into the field a year earlier!

The price was to be “nine shillings per annum, exclusive of postage; for one quarter of a year two shillings and three pence, to be paid on the delivery of the first paper, in cash or rags; the succeeding quarters at the expiration thereof.”

The start was made at “John Spooner’s office near Rotch’s wharf.” Between the third and fourth numbers there was a gap of two weeks, with an apology for the non-appearance of the paper in the previous week,—“the editor has but to remark that the building he at present occupies as a printing house is unfinished; which exposes his work to the inclemency of the season—and rendered it impossible to fulfil his

obligation to the public. He expects soon to remove to the new building lately erected at Fourcorners, where he hopes to be so accommodated as to issue his paper early on the day of each week hereafter."

For Cash or Rags.

Directly following this notice appeared a paragraph, preceded by a couple of stars and a dagger, giving it a kind of pyrotechnic appearance, a sort of hold-up look, "The printer will receive of country customers any kind of produce or wood, if they prefer it to cash. in payment for newspapers—or of any farmer who wishes to become a customer."

When he had gotten established in the new office at Fourcorners, the printer of The Medley returned thanks to those who "favored him with their custom," offered to fill any "commands in the art of printing" at short notice, thanked those who had generously aided in getting subscriptions, and announced that "Advertisements, Articles of Intelligence, Essays, &c. would be thankfully received for publication." By and by he took the latter part of that back—though before this occurred he apologized, "Cato will excuse the non-appearance of his valediction addressed to Sydney, this three weeks past. It was mislaid." When later "Ignoramus Rusticus" wrote a column and a half attack on "Mr. Curiositas," in a long-continued discussion over the use of an expression by one that the other could not find in the dictionary and that the printer afterwards agreed was a typographical error, the editor added this note: "Quit! quit! cries the Turkey—So does the Printer.—For where Cards grow to Essays he thinks it time to quit."

More than the editor was tired of the long communications on abstract subjects or giving neighborly rubs, for a little later "A Subscriber" wrote: "Mr. Spooner:

"I am well assured it was the expectation of many of your subscribers that your paper would be filled with the most interesting intelligence, both foreign and domestic, proceedings of congress and state legislature, &c., &c. In your Medley, No. 16, 'Quit, quit, cries the Turkey, and so cries the Printer;' and so does a number of your subscribers; for when dull overgrown Cards and dry Essays occupy seven-eighths of the Medley they think it time to Quit."

Following this was an editorial reply, in italic and with the index sign that indicated the editor at work, rebuking the correspondents who had contributed "public essays,

which if comprised in a volume or pamphlet would make something of a handsome addition to a library," and asking for reports of political occurrences, remarkable events, new discoveries, and information of interest: in the agricultural and commercial world.

When The Medley had completed its third quarter there appeared as the first item on the first page a reminder that payments became due at the expiration of each quarter, "The sum individually," said the printer, "is small; but put together in one mass would enable the Printer to cancel the Papermaker's bill, purchase Rags, and sometimes a quarter of Mutton."

A little later, in October, "the Husbandman who wishes to read the News of the Day & would prefer exchanging the product of his Labor with the Printer for his Medley rather than paying Cash," was informed that "good Winter Apples, Corn, Rye, Butter, Cheese, or almost any kind of vegetable" would be received "at current Market Price, if brot within three weeks." Evidently the larder was running low.

"Two Coppers on the Pound."

The offer of not only The Medley but of merchants as well to exchange goods for rags, usually specifically stated as "clean cotton and linen rags," actually signified a real demand for rags for paper making. In the very first issue of The Medley an article was quoted from the Windham Phenix in which the opinion was expressed that "the person who saves one pound of rags for the manufacture of paper does more real good to the community than he who conquers a city." Lest this might seem strong language, "Consider," continues the writer, "that without this saving, science must fall and learning must drop to the ground, and everything which the civilized man holds dear must cease to exist." He reports that his own family has sold to the printer in the course of a year fifty-five pounds of rags, "paying for the purchase of a Bible for one of the children: but even without the price," he would have had them save the valuable commodity, for he rates the person who persists in destroying rags, "after being convinced of their utility," as culpable, and deserving to be looked upon with as much contempt "as a betrayer of his country—and an enemy to every useful science."

Some considerable time after this, appeared a whimsical communication with a feminine touch, asking what encouragement there was in "two coppers on the pound to a young lady for stooping two hundred times to

pick up threds, or for fouling her hands with a dish-clout or house cloth.—Fie on the man who thinks that Moll and Betty would undertake such small business for such small gains.—We have bibles enough in the house already, and Pa buys us our caps, curtains, &c.”

Early Business Interests.

From the advertisements some idea is gained of the business interests of the place, just as the ship news tells of the sailings and arrivals of the whalers and the ships in the merchant service—and they serve successfully to people the town, with their names and suggestions of activity, their show of enterprise, and proof of competition.

Besides the whaling and the ship-ping, probably ship building was the next big business, but there is reference to only one launching during the year. On October 18 an inch and a half notice stated that “Tomorrow morning between the hours of 7 and 8, the new and beautiful ship Barkley, burthen 270 tons, will be launched from the shipyard of Colonel George Claghorn. The satisfaction of viewing this token of our increasing commerce will, we doubt not, induce many to watch the first beams of the Rising Sun”—with a liberal use of italics, small caps and capitals.

Launching “The Barkley.”

The next day the story of the launching was told, under the heading—and headings were rare—“Ship Barkley”:

“The new and beautiful ship, Barkley, went off from her stocks Saturday last, without any intervening accident to soil the happiness of a large and respectable crowd of spectators. Fifteen discharges of cannon, and repeated huzzas, announced her hull floating on the element we hope may buoy her with safety these many, many years. Her beauty is acknowledged by able judges to vie with any ship of her size that floats on the Atlantic. And while we wish she may long continue the pride of Newbedford, we hope her success in aiding the commercial interest of her owners may be felt among every class of our citizens.”

This George Claghorn was the same who built the frigate Constitution at the Charlestown navy yard. His ship yard here was a little south of the present foot of North street. Besides shipbuilder, he was colonel of the local military company, as is revealed by a notice to the members.

William Rotch, Jun.'s Shop.

William Jun. was the Rotch man in the field at this time, but his only appearances in The Medley were to

advertise his stock in trade at his shop—the location of which is not given, since it must have been known to all Newbedford. It was in the Rotch building that stood at the head of Rotch's wharf, a little north of what is now Centre street. It was in this building that The Medley had its office.

In the first issue of the paper Mr. Rotch “respectfully informs his customers and friends” that he has for sale wholesale and retail “sail Cloth of an excellent quality,—No. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, and 8; coarse and fine 5-4th Sheeting; window Glass, of sizes given ranging from 6x8 to 10x12; large and small Looking Glasses, and Plates unframed; Glass Tumblers, Twine and Cordage; Flour and Shipbreads; Pork and Salt; Philadelphia and Russia Bar Iron, excellent for Cart Tire; Paints of several kinds; Sheathing Paper, Wrapping Paper, &c.”

Later he adds to his stock: “Sugar, Prime Pork, French Duck, Tar, Turpentine, Salt, Cordage, Bolt Rope, Spermaceti Candles, Strained Spermaceti Oil, and Grindstones.”

In this same advertisement space he shows his thrift by making known his own need of “a sober industrious young farmer who, if he is well recommended, will find good encouragement.” Still later he advertises as having for sale, “a few pieces best superfine Broadcloth, Cambrics and French Lutestring, Silk Stockings and Sewing Silk, and a few Silver Watches,” continuing the old list down through spermaceti oil, bar iron, and bolt rope, as though there were nothing incongruous in the list!

Books “Bedford” Read.

John Spooner was apparently already a book seller before he became the publisher of The Medley. In the second number he announced that he had “just received from Newlondon and for sale, the following books, viz:” and here is the complete collection announced—note how it differs from the list of works offered in the “literary” advertisements of today: “Bibles, Testaments, Barlow's revision of Watt's Psalm and Hymns, Gardner's Life, Vicar of Wakefield, Webster's Institute, 1st, 2d, and 3d parts, Fenning's Spelling-Book, Dilworth's ditto, Prompter, Little Reader's Assistant, Occom's Hymns, Economy of Human Life, Medical Cases and Observations; Seamen's Journals, Writingbooks, Pocket Memorandums with pencils, ditto ditto without (thus the list runs on without break under that first imposing head of Books), Primers, Children's Books, Geographical Cards, Dutch Quills, Wafers, &c. &c.” Then follows a list of pamphlets and a group of titles headed

Chapman's Books, evidently referring to a series of publications under the publisher's name, in which appear Fanny or the Happy Repentance, Adventures of Robinson Crusoe, Adventures of Gil Blas, History of Queen Elizabeth, Young Gentlemen and Ladies Entertaining Friend, Choice Collection of Songs," and Almanacks for 1793. The advertisement concluded with this stirring appeal: "Ladies, Gentlemen, and Merchants"—I hope the merchants of today will not dislike the differentiation—"are invited to call and furnish themselves and children with books: as they may here obtain them as cheap as in Boston." Obviously the shopping in Boston habit that our merchants complain of was early established!

Six months later John Spooner advertised another assortment of books, including "Hume's History of England, 8 volumes, Robertford's ditto of America, 3 ditto; Moore's travels, 2 ditto; The Spectator, 8 ditto; Buchan's Domestic Medicine; Morse's Geography of America, Christian Economy, The Whole Duty of Woman, Advice to Prevent Poverty, Fothergill's Sermons, and school and children's books,"—any of which were to be given "in exchange for cash, clean cotton or cotton and linen, or linen rags of any color, old sail cloth, or junk."

A Versatile Gentleman.

Caleb Greene respectfully informed his friends and the public in general that he "now carries on and proposes to enlarge the bookbinding business in its several branches," and that he had for sale account books and books ruled to any pattern, and that he could "in a short time supply shopkeepers with spelling books by the dozen of the most approved authors," and that "from his long experience in books he thinks he may lay claim to so much knowledge as that the public may depend on being well supplied, and at as low rate as in Boston." Not only were reading and spelling encouraged, but writing as well, in a note after the date line—"N. B. Black and red ink of the best quality."

Later on Mr. Greene offered to take orders for Bibles—in an early 1794 issue: "Any persons who would wish to supply themselves with large and complete Bibles—with or without apocrypha and concordance, or Bibles of any size, are desired to leave their names at Caleb Greene's shop; where they may view the sizes and in a few weeks have their supply—No part of the pay will be asked till they are delivered."

But he did not confine his attention to book binding and selling. An adver-

tisement of Isaac Wood of Fairhaven probably suggested to him a new branch of business possible to this side of the river. Two weeks before Christmas this Wood announced having just received and for sale "at his shop near the meeting house, Fairhaven, a fresh assortment of European and West Indian Goods, suited to the present season," and also, further,—showing the range of the merchants of the day,—"family medicines, which he can recommend as genuine,—and for sale, by retail, as cheap as can be procured in Boston—together with Phials, &c." Incidentally it may be stated that Mr. Wood also offered for sale "Flower by the small quantity, Crockery, Tobacco and Snuff, Shoemakers' Tools, Books and Paper and Almanacs—with the announcement that in payment would be received cash, cotton, rags, sailcloth, pork & beef, and any kind of country produce." Would it do to wonder how many heirloom treasures in this city owed their family possession to pork and rags!

At the Sign of the Mortar.

The announcement of family medicines evidently spurred Caleb Greene's enterprise, for in the next issue he proved that Newbedford did not need to go to the rival village across the river for its medicines: "From the encouragement given by a number of the inhabitants of Bedford and its vicinity," he had "furnished himself with and just opened a good assortment of fresh Drugs and Medicines, at the Sign of the Mortar, in Water-street, among which are"—and in a half column advertisement he named them frankly, opium and castor oil among the rest; a goodly list, including a variety of patent medicines, and also "an excellent electuary for cleansing and preserving the teeth, with brushes for ditto." And the advertisement concluded, "As said medicines are deemed genuine, they are confidently offered to the public." Apparently Mr. Greene did not want his original business lost sight of, for after a dash rule he continued: "Said Greene carries on the bookbinding business and has for sale geographies, arithmetics, spellers, dictionaries, blank books, &c., which customers are desired to call and see."

Oil Skin Hat Covers.

The full extent of his business versatility is not told, however, until is quoted his announcement of "neat oilcloth covers for hats and women's bonnets—on silk or linen, of various colours—made at a short notice and reasonable price—by said Greene."

Though umbrellas had been introduced into the colonies in the latter half of the eighteenth century, there is no likelihood that they were common in the village of Bedford in 1793, since their manufacture did not begin in this country for some six or eight years later than this.

Mr. Greene was certainly a useful citizen, for he is credited also with keeping the marine journal and the weather record.

Compasses and Hardware.

There were advertisements of Joseph Clement "(late from London), Compass Maker and Iron Plate-Worker, doing business on Union street, a few rods west from Mr. Isaac Howland's store; Joseph Ricketson, Cutlery and Hardware Dealer, lately removed "to the new building erected at Fourcorners, and fronting on Prospect and North streets"—otherwise at the northeast corner of the present Union and Water streets; Gamaliel Bryant, Jun., "removed from the shop he formerly work'd in, to the Fourcorners, No. 4, fronting North street," where he had for sale a general assortment of tinware.

Reduction for Cash.

Reuben Jenne, Blacksmith, of "Oxford, Newbedford," offered inducement for cash payment—objecting "to the present mode of long credit and a remote payday." He informed the public that he proposed "to keep constantly for sale a handsome variety of edgetools, together with plow shares, hoes, &c.," and that "all other branches of his Profession will be attended to and the work executed with neatness and dispatch;" and he concluded the notice with the statement that "the articles received in payment are too numerous to be mentioned here: but whoever will pay in cash he will make to them a reduction of 16 2-3 per cent;" and he adds persuasively that "he flatters himself that all who favor him with their custom will find his terms much better suited to benefit the public than the present mode of long credit and a remote payday."

Medicine Boxes for Seamen.

Thomas Hersey of Fairhaven, "ready to wait upon all disposed to employ him, in the medical line," announced "—Medicine boxes, for the use of seamen, with suitable directions, prepared at the shortest notice."

Cloth Dressed to Taste.

Westport, which had been set off from Dartmouth at the same time that Newbedford had, and that now had a population of 2466,—within thirty-three as many as the town of

Dartmouth,—was heard from in the notice of John Chace, who, bringing to mind the hand loom, respectfully informed the public that he carried on the Clothier's Business, in its various branches, at his works at the head of Acoaxet River, in Westport, and that "Any person wishing to have his cloth dressed to his taste, by applying to him, or forwarding it by the post from Newbedford to Newport, or leaving it at Smith's Mills, shall have their directions attended to, with the greatest punctuality and care, and returned by the first conveyance after dressed."

Joseph and Elihu Russell of Dartmouth later offered "to dress and colour cloth at their new works at Russells mills;" but this came early in the next year.

Occasionally someone advertised for supplies, as "Wanted—Ash timber, for which good pay will be made on delivery," "untanned sheep and lambskin, for which a generous price will be given," "a number of bushels of leached ashes," etc.

Sailcloth was announced as being "fabricated" in Nantucket.

Dispensing Benjamin Russell's Goods.

How Benjamin Russell's household goods found their way into Newbedford homes is suggested in this "Sale at Auction!" notice, offering a choice and valuable parcel of household goods and furniture, being part of the estate of Benjamin Russell, Esq., late of Dartmouth, consisting of several good Feather Beds and Furniture, Mahogany Desk, High Case of Drawers, and other Cabinet Work; Silver Plate, China Ware, Pewter, Stone and other hard Ware; a number of Chairs great and small, both of Mahogany and other sorts—with many other kinds of Household Goods not here enumerated."

Whaling and The Privateers.

If the impression prevails that ships were coming from and starting on whaling voyages continually in those early days, let the illusion be dispelled, so far as this period at least is concerned.

Whaling at this time was just beginning to look up after the crushing blow it had received in the Revolutionary war. First there had been the unrighteous British legislation curtailing American fishing and trading rights, and then there had been the barbarous enactment giving the right of search of American vessels and impressment of American sailors into the British service or the British whalefishery, bringing whaling pretty much to a standstill. Besides, there had been the destruction of seventy

vessels in the harbor of Newbedford at the time of the British raid in September of 1778,—and for several years nothing was done toward the restoration of the industry. One ship is known to have gone out from Dartmouth in 1785 and another in 1787. A little at a time the business picked up. In 1793 the first whaler to enter the Pacific sailed from Newbedford. It was one of George Claghorn's ship—though The Medley does not seem to have reported the sailing. By the beginning of the nineteenth century the Old Dartmouth whaling and merchant fleet numbered about fifty vessels. Generally speaking, 1793 was one of the years of low ebb in the whaling industry.

A count of the ships reported in The Medley as arriving during the last half of that year showed nine Newbedford whalers to have come into port, bringing cargoes of oil ranging from eighty barrels to thirteen hundred barrels, and totalling 6130 barrels, whale and sperm totalled in together; while in that same period, there arrived at Nantucket twenty-two whalers, bringing 13,290 barrels, in lots ranging from fifty barrels to thirteen hundred—one vessel coming in clean; and they were reported to have come from Brazil, from Woolwich Bay off the coast of Africa, and from the neighborhood of the West Indies and Bahamas. A few whalers belonging in Duerirk put in here at that time, fearing to encounter the French during the hostilities with Great Britain.

That it was not always necessary to go to the west coast of Africa, but that whales were sometimes caught nearer at hand, is shown in the item that "Perry Davis, master of a small fishing vessel, brot into Westport, 25 July, a whale that made 17 bbls. oil—out three days."

There were tryworks in that day, in this town at about the foot of what is now Centre street and probably at Smoking Rocks, where the Potomska Mills now stand; at Oxford, now Poverty Point, in Fairhaven; and at Dartmouth and Westport.

The close touch into which Newbedford vessels—whalers and merchantmen—came with the war difficulties of the day is revealed in several items about their encounters with privateers. Captain Benjamin Howland of brig Lucretia, arrived in seventeen days from Capefrancois, reports that he "was brot to seven times on his passage by different privateers—five English, one Spanish, and one French—ordered on board the Spanish and French; the others boarded him in their own boats—all treated him with great civility."

Pickaroons Out-Pickaroon'd.

But all ships did not have so good fortune as this. Here are a couple of real adventures, under the head of "Pickaroons Out-Pickaroon'd, which show the dangers of the seas at the time and also suggest something of the stuff some at least of the Newbedford whaling masters were made of:

The captain of the Brig Polly, Levi Jenne, tells his own story for The Medley, following the item that his ship had arrived here from St. Marks, with a prizemaster and three men, put on board by a Newprovidence pickaroon.

Capt. Jenne submitted first to the examination of his papers by two strangers; when they had left, a strange ship came alongside and he was hailed in "a brutish manner," in a strange language, and six men came aboard "in a hostile manner, with naked cutlasses and pistols in their hand," and he had to sail under their orders on the course to Cuba—but owing to a small wind his ship did not get far. He and his people were kept in constant fear of losing their lives. Then they ran into a fleet of nine sail, three of them privateers, and after the commodore had spent the whole day "huckling from vessel to vessel," a prizemaster was put aboard the Polly, one other white man and two Negroes, "the three last mentioned not worth one farthing, only to encumber us as lumber upon deck," and she sailed toward Newprovidence, in the Bahamas; then his men refused to sail her except for Newbedford, the prizemaster confessed himself helpless, and Capt. Jenne and the Polly came along in due time into their home harbor, with the four strangers aboard.

Capt. Weston Howland, of the sloop Nancy, who left St. Marks in company with Capt. Jenne, confirmed the latter's story, and also bore witness "to similar treatment by four prizemen, which he brot in with him"—in the following statement:—

"The 23d of July, the sloop Nancy of Newbedford, left St. Marks, bound for Philadelphia. The 24th ult. was boarded by Capt. Mackever, from Jamaica; whose Officers came on board and examined my papers; after which he ordered me to proceed on my way. In 20 minutes after they left me, I was boarded by the sloop John, Capt. Edward Shearman, from Newprovidence; who, in a very hostile manner pushed me into the boat—carried me on board his vessel,—where I remained as prisoner 14 hours.—At the expiration of that time he hove out his boat—ordered me into her—got in himself and came on board my vessel.

—He then ordered me to open my chest, which I complied with.—He then took every article out—yet made no discovery of the property he pretended to be after.—After this, the 25th, he left me, and returned to his own vessel—I was soon revisited by a prizemaster and four men, who ordered me to steer for Newprovidence.—The 29th, being clear of the Keys, I resumed the command, and directed my course as I thot proper—Newbedford appearing most consistent, I shaped my course thither:—Here I arrived 12th August—prizemaster and all well.

“Weston Howland.”

Then The Medley commented:

“Such is the treatment received from Newprovidence privateers—and this not the first instance—Capt. Jenne informs that numbers of Americans have been taken in the same manner and sent into that place, without daring even to resist. Then they have been tried upon suspicion of having French property on board—if acquitted the captors do not release them but take them to Inagua and there plunder them of everything valuable.—This the privateers say would have been the fate of Captain Jenne and Capt. Howland, could they have gotten them into this den of thieves.—Among this banditti appears the famed Lord Dunmore, governor of Newprovidence.—Such insults, Americans, ought surely not to pass unnoticed.

“The above mentioned vessels were laden with Sugar, Coffee and Cotton.”

Though it may seem to have no connection here, there is interest in the notice soon after of the marriage of Capt. Weston Howland to Miss Nabby Hathaway—won, possibly, by the captain’s cool daring.

Later on, similar news came in an extract of a letter from the master of a vessel in Newprovidence, to a merchant in this town, which said: “There are fifty sail of American vessels here now; 36 of which were brot down by the Privateers: some of them have been here ninety days, with their Coffee hogsheads bursting in their holds, and their Cotton sacks rotting and dropping off from their quarters.”

Making Sport of a Whaler.

How a whaling master fared at the hands of the preycrs upon ships at this time is told with spirit by Capt. Gardner, in the account of an experience off St. Helena in September of 1793. The Medley says: “Arrived, Ship Edward, Micajah Gardner, from a Delago Bay whalcruise. 1500 bbls. whale oil—Capt. Gardner, not having

heard of a war, ran in for St. Helena to get information.—Sent his Mate and five hands on shore to make inquiry; who were detained by the Governor; and an American ship’s boat the Seahorse, Aibert Hussey, Master, belonging to Capeann, was sent off with the following letter, to decoy him into port:

“France is at war with all the world—the American Ambassador’s head has been cut off at Paris—you have no port on earth to put into where you will not be taken—here you shall have generous terms, all your private property, and that of the crew, shall remain your own, the same as if you had never been taken: I have consulted the Lieut. Governor, and we have agreed to give you these terms—In witness whereof, I hereunto sign, and give it under my hand, and the Seal of the Honorable United East India company.

“Robert Brooke,

“Governor and Commander in Chief.”

“In answer to which, Capt. Gardner sent word,—‘He tharked him for his generous offer—but rather doubted the truth of France being at war with all the world’—Should not therefore throw himself on their mercy—and continued to stand off and on, hoping his boat would return.—But next day by the same boat received a second letter, as follows:—

“I again inform you that France is at War with all the world—That the American States are in alliance with Great Britain—I therefore now treat with you as an American subject—and demand of you to enter our port immediately—Which if you refuse to comply with, I shall be obliged to make a representation of the case to the British Secretary of State, and to General Washington.—After promising this, if you continue obstinate, and are taken on any foreign coast, you must undergo all the severity of treatment by the laws of Nations in such cases made and provided.’

“Captain Gardner doubting much this British Governor’s candor, only replied to the last letter—‘I shall not enter your port, but snall shape my course for America.’—which he accordingly did—leaving his Mate and boat’s crew at the Island—and here safely arrived.”

Tragedies of Whaling.

The tragedies in the whaling industry and the homes left mourning through its vicissitudes, find suggestion in an extract of a letter from Capt. Benjamin Crowninshield to his friend at Salem, dated Port Royal, Sept. 29, 1793, to the effect that “Two

American vessels have been deprived of every officer on board by the fever—a brig from Newbedford, the supercargo, captain, mate and boy all died in the course of seven days and the vessel left destitute:—with this information followed up in the next issue by the further statement “that the brig mentioned proved to be the Nancy, owned by Messrs. Benjamin Church, and Nathaniel Pope, and commanded by Capt. Caleb Church,” and a letter that had been received from one of the hands on board by his parents, in which was written, under date of Martinico, St. Pierres, Oct. 6, 1793:

“After a short fit of sickness, I once more have a chance to send you a few lines. We have all been sick with the West India fever—and have recovered; except those whom God hath pleased to take away by the disease.—First our Mate and Boy—then the supercargo and Captain left this world, they got one Fishers Skiper, an American Counsellor”—and here is inserted an asterisk and The Medley comments below, “We think the writer has in this instance mistook ‘Fishers Skiper, American Counsellor’ for Fulivar Skipwith, American Consul”—to get a Captain, and more hands, if wanted, and send the vessel to Alexandria, as fast as possible.”

After other details, the writer says “it was the captain’s will before he died I should act in the room of the mate,” and he says, “I shall do the best I can to get the vessel home to the owners as soon as possible.”

Lost at Sea.

How William Howland, master of the sloop Sally, was lost at sea, is told in an item headed merely “Ship News”:

“Sloop Sally, William Howland, master, left this port 23d Jan. on a whale cruise, returned last Wednesday, 14th March, off Hispanola, the Captain, Oliver Slocum, (mate), Solomon Slocum, William Church, Joseph Wilcox, James Jan, and Jack Williams, (two last blacks), went on shore to procure stores for said vessel, then lying off and on at the mouth of Aricot harbor: late in the evening attempted to return on board (as say the inhabitants of the place), when a squall of wind arising drove the sloop to sea—and the boat in the gale with all the men above-named was lost—no discovery could be made for eight days except some pieces of a boat, which all agree were part of the boat the master went on shore in.”

Stage and Post Routes.

In spite of the merchants’ determination to serve customers as well

as they could buy in Boston, on the fifth of July a new inducement was offered to visit that town. Under the head “Newbedford and Boston New Line of Stages!” (and the picture of a stage coach drawn by two spans of horses—a wood cut, and done by an artist with no great sense of perspective), “William Henshaw respectfully informs his friends & the public in general that for the convenience and accommodation of those Ladies and Gentlemen who may wish a pleasant tour to or from Boston, he has furnished himself with an elegant carriage and good horses, to run once a week.

“He will start from Newbedford every Tuesday morning at 5 o’clock and arrive in Boston the evening of the same day.—On his return he will leave Boston every Friday morning at 5 o’clock, and arrive in Bedford the evening of the same day”—a four days’ trip.

“The price for each passenger will be three pence per mile—20 lb. baggage gratis—150 lbs. weight equal to a passenger.

“Ladies and Gentlemen who take passage in his stage may depend on the greatest care—and the most particular attention on his part that his horses are good, and well suited to an expeditious and pleasant tour.

“Business entrusted to him to transact shall be performed with the greatest punctuality; and every encouragement in the undertaking most gratefully acknowledged.

“He would mention, as some person might otherwise consider three pence per mile for passengers a large fee, that it is caused by the present exorbitant price demanded for hay and provender.—So soon as the price of these articles shall fall, the Public may rest assured the price per mile shall be reduced.”

Mr. Henshaw was not left long without a competitor in the Boston stage business. Three months and a half later Abraham Russell advertised a conveyance to Taunton and Boston, to run through the winter season once a week, the round trip to be completed between Monday morning and Friday evening. As to the price he made no apology—“the price will be three pence per mile for each passenger, which is the same rate as other stages, and will appear moderate to any who will consider the high price of provender.”

Mr. Russell also announced at the same time his intention to start a stage route to Boston through the town of Bridgewater—a round trip in four days, afterwards increased to five

days, to give some daylight hours in Boston. The price of a passenger on this line was to be fifteen shillings from Newbedford to Boston.

William Henshaw announced about this time that his service would continue through the winter, and that he should put on covered sleighs as soon as the snow prevented the running of his carriage.

Earlier than these latest notices there had been announcement that "the mail is taken from the postoffice every Sunday and Wednesday evening." Now the mails for Boston were closed on Monday and Wednesday mornings, fitting in with the running of the stages.

Early in the year, Samuel Sprague had proposed, "if suitable encouragement" were given, "to establish a post route from Newbedford to Barnstable by way of Rochester, Wareham, Sandwich, &c., and return thro Plymouth, Middleborough, &c., home." He promised "the greatest care and attention paid to private business; and every command punctually performed at reasonable terms."

Apparently a post route had already been established to Newport, for The Medley, early announcing that "one Jess Haskell having undertaken to prosecute the post business between Newbedford and Newport, The Medley would be delivered en route in Dartmouth, Westport, Tiverton and Little Compton, as well as in Newport."

Later, a notice signed by John Spooner announced that the post from Bedford to Newport, through the winter season, would leave every Monday morning, arriving the same night, and he offered: "Letters carried and private business transacted with the greatest care."

Few as the mails were, there was evidently little care in their transmission, and great difficulty in their collection, for "Letters remaining at the postoffice" was a regular feature of The Medley, with letters in this office addressed Rochester, Dartmouth, Westport, and Martha's Vineyard, besides Acushnet, Fairhaven and Bedford, and sometimes three deep to the same address.

The Medley tried to stimulate the establishment of post routes by calling for "Smart able men to supply some excellent post routes, good encouragement to be given by the printer hereof." In the closing number of the year was a call for a "steady, capable man to prosecute a post route to the eastward"—sign not only that The Medley was looking for an enlarged field but that Newbedford was seek-

ing to broaden its touch with the neighboring towns.

Early Shipping.

Through its ships it already had touch with more distant ports. In one week, for instance, at the custom house were cleared sloops for Charleston and Savannah, and a schooner for Hudson; and in another week, besides the clearance of a schooner and a ship for whale voyages, sloops sailed for Newbern, for Philadelphia, and Savannah—these being merely sample weeks. Such advertisements as this appeared:

"For New York and North River, the fast sailing schooner *Tabitha*, now lying at Rotch wharf, John Crowell master, will sail (at such a time), wind and weather permitting. For freight or passage apply to John Spooner or to the said Crowell."

"For Newport and Philadelphia, the sloop *Lively*, lying at Russell Wharf, Shubael Bunker, master, will sail" (etc.); "and will be a constant trader all this season, from this port to those places. For freight or passage apply to the Master in Bedford: who will transact business for any gentleman at either the above places on the most reasonable terms."

No Flurry Over Elections.

Contrary to the usual flurry of today preceding town meeting day in the neighboring towns, and the stir of our own city election, in March appeared a little five line notice: "—Monday next, at 10 o'clock a. m. is notified for the legal voters of this town to meet to choose town officers for the year ensuing. Also, at 2 o'clock p. m. to choose a Governor, Lieutenant governor, and Senators." Not a word had been previously said about candidates. In the following week's paper appeared the item, without heading of any sort: "At a meeting of the inhabitants of this town, on Monday last, the votes given in were:—with the vote for governor, lieutenant governor, and senators, Hancock getting fifty-three of the fifty-four votes cast. The vote for senators stood: "Hon. George Leonard 38—Hon. Thomas Durfee 33—Hon. Elisha May 37."

With similar brevity appeared the call to "—the citizens of Newbedford who are legal voters" to meet at "the old Congregational meeting house to choose a representative to congress, to be a citizen of Barnstable or Plymouth county. Every person who values the privileges of a Freeman will attend. General James Warren, John Davis, and Shear Jashub Bourne, Esqs. are mentioned as candidates." There was afterwards no report of the result of the election.

Drinking Toasts to Washington.

Newbedford and Fairhaven had a rousing good time in the celebration of the birthday of "our worthy President George Washington," on the eleventh of February, the date under the old style of time reckoning. To quote The Medley report:

"The day was ushered in with the rising gun, by fifteen discharges of cannon, from the foot of Prospect street; attended with mussick, and a display of the national colors from an eminence.

"At 2 o'clock p. m. the citizens assembled at Fourcorners, at the foot of Union street; and with the artillery, and mussick in front, headed by Col. Claghorn, moved in procession to the South part of Water street,"—Water street only ran about a block south in that day,—"which situation gave them a commanding view of their fellow citizens, assembled on the occasion, in Fairhaven.

"The signal for commencing the fire was now given by the discharge of a cannon by our fellow citizens of Fairhaven. A regular and alternate fire was then kept up;—each discharge preceded by the following toasts and sentiments:

"1st. Long life to the American Solomon.

"2d. May the cause of Liberty and Freedom never experience the want of a Friend like him.

"3d. May humanity like his ever confound the enemies to Freedom, and convert them to walk in his benevolent paths.

"4th. That the peace of America may continue the same, may his successor adopt his virtues.

"5th. Directed by his wisdom, may agriculture, commerce, arts, and mechanism become more general beneficial to the citizens of mankind.

"6th. May each soldier, like him, feel himself a citizen, and each citizen a soldier.

"7th. May his religious examples pervade the breast of every citizen; and the shades of bigotry and superstition give place to the enlightening beams of philanthropy.

"8th. May his principles of liberty never sleep, where they have taken root, till every root and branch of despotism be dispelled the terrestrial globe.

"9th. The French Republic!—may she ever continue to cherish the sparks of Freedom, caught from the American altar of Liberty.

"10th. The officers and soldiers of the late army, who, with their illustrious Chief, have shared the immortal honor of emancipating their

country from slavery, and establishing the blessings of Liberty.

"11th. May every existing tyrant tremble at the name of Washington!—and the genuine principles of Liberty and Equality universally pervade and enlighten the world.

"12th. Downfall to tyrannical Monarchy.

"13th. Fayette! May we all possess his virtues, but not be sharers of the fate which envy hurls upon him.

"14th. May an honest heart never feel distress.

"15th. May health, and every temporal blessing be continued to our beloved president. May his name be transmitted with respect and gratitude to posterity; and may succeeding generations experience the benign influence of his virtue and his Patriotism.

"After which the following Patriotic and volunteer toast was given:—

"May the French Nation long enjoy the blessings of liberty and equality; and may it never tarnish its glory, by any acts of inhumanity.

"The Procession," the report continues, "then moved from Water street to North Bedford; and at sunset, firing recommenced and continued for near an hour.—After which, the company retired, and partook of an elegant entertainment at citizen Garish's, where their Patriotic joy was demonstrated by the following toasts and federal sentiments:

"Confederated America! May freedom and unanimity continue to be the distinguishing characteristics of these states;—and may Columbia annually shine with redoubled accession of virtue, knowledge, and glory.

"The Commonwealth of Massachusetts! May she ever enjoy the blessings, and always flourish under the immediate direction of a wise and virtuous administration; and may her citizens ever evince to the world, the possession of those principles most essential to the dignity of Man.

"The County of Bristol! Success to her husbandry and navigation, and unanimity among her citizens in political sentiments.

"Newbedford! May we never again suffer by the ravaging hand of war. May unanimity, industry, and literature, with all the benevolent and social virtues, ever harmonize and distinguish her citizens.

"The day passed in the greatest harmony and good order—and at the hour of ten at Eve, the citizens retired elate with the agreeable reflections which the pleasures of the day had inspired."

"When the firing had ceased," the report proceeds, "our fellow citizens

of Fairhaven retired to a convenient place, where fifteen convivial toasts were drank [the celebration proceeding simultaneously in the two towns]:—

"1. Long life to the President of the United States.—May he continue the Patton (sic) of Liberty, and Tyrant's foe.

"2. His amiable Lady.—May they long enjoy connubial felicity.

"3. The Vicepresident.

"4. The Government of the United States.

"5. The liberty of Nations.

"6. Tranquillity in France, and a peaceable return to her emigrant citizens.

"7. May that noble spark which was kindled in America spread thro' the world.

"8. The memory of our sleeping Heroes.

"9. The downfall of Monarchy.

"10. Our Brethren on the Frontiers.

"11. Agriculture.

"12. Commerce and Navigation.

"13. Arts and Sciences.

"14. Love, peace, and unity, at home and abroad.

"15. The eleventh of February.

"After which an elegant entertainment was provided, and the evening was spent in festivity and joy—O Bedford!—How unlike the day, when the British stardard waved in triumph round thy shores—when wild dismay sat on every countenance, and the Valiant trembled with fear."

"Breasts Glowing with Liberty."

Possibly taking fire from this enthusiasm of the adjoining town, Rochester—which in that day comprised what are now the towns of Mattapoissett, Marion, and Rochester, with a population, according to the 1790 census, of 2,644—went in for a great Independence Day celebration. Nothing is said about the day's observance in this town, but as a number of "patriots of neighboring towns" are reported to have been present in Rochester, probably that was the place of the day in this vicinity.

The Medley tells about a day of "festivity and rejoicing," after which "each one retired with his breast glowing with the spirit of Liberty and Equality." How much of this was due to genuine patriotism and how much to the "elegant repast" partaken of at "Citizen Ruggles' tavern" earlier in the day, and the fifteen toasts later drunk can not be said; but the facts of the case are that "the morning was ushered by a discharge of cannon and a display of the flag of the United States; at ten

o'clock a number of patriotic citizens of Rochester and the neighboring towns assembled at Citizen Ruggles' tavern, where they partook of an elegant repast. At two o'clock p. m. the first company of Militia of Rochester, commanded by Capt. Sturtevant, paraded; where, after going thro' the military exercise, was a discharge of fifteen cannon, answering to the fifteen free, sovereign and confederated States of America; after which the officers again joined with their patriotic brethren to celebrate the day, when the following Toasts were drunk:

"1. The United States of America—may their Independence be lasting as time.

"2. The President—long live the patriotic Hero.

"3. The Legislature of the Union—may its deliberations be for the public good.

"4. The Commonwealth of Massachusetts—may her fishery, commerce, and agriculture ever flourish.

"5. The Governor—may immortal honor be the reward of his exertions in establishing our Independence.

"6. The Lieut. Governor—may peace and tranquillity attend him thro' his declining years.

"7. The Patriots and Heroes of seventy-six—may the same patriotic zeal animate our breasts which then warmed theirs.

"8. The Officers and Soldiers of the day—may their principles of liberty and equality never sleep.

"9. The Frontiers—may they be protected from the depredations of savage barbarians.

"10. The Republic of France—as she has caught the spark of liberty from America, may its flame never be extinguished.

"11. The Marquis de la Fayette—may the day soon arrive when he again shall breathe the air of freedom.

"12. May strict neutrality be preserved between the United States and the Belligerent Powers.

"13. May Liberty run parallel with Time.

"14. The State of Vermont.

"15. The State of Kentucky."

Then it was that "after having spent the day in festivity and rejoicing, each one retired with his breast glowing with the spirit of Liberty and Equality."

The Philomathean Society.

Probably some of the "scholars" and "lovers of learning" in the Philomathean society had a hand in formulating the toasts for the Washing-

ton birthday celebration; and we get a touch of the same grandiloquence, coupled with real practicality, in the subjects propounded for discussion at one of its meetings. There had been a call to a quarterly meeting "to be held at the new school house at Head of Acushnet River," "to be opened precisely at 9 o'clock a. m."—No late evening meetings for the early Newbedfordians. According to a notice issued by the secretary, who was no other than the editor of *The Medley*, at that meeting it was voted that "the following questions should be debated upon at the next meeting of the society and that the secretary publish them in the interim, for the information of absent members:

"Is it for the Emolument of Society that the chief Magistrate should have it in his Power to pardon Criminals?"

"Is it consistent with justice that Minors should pay a poll tax for the support of government?"

"Is a reform in English Orthography under our present circumstances, expedient or not?"—the sign of an early beginning to a long-continued discussion.

Schools Public and Private.

Adopting the Massachusetts policy, in Colonial times, of maintaining schools by public money raised by taxation, Old Dartmouth maintained, certainly as early as the end of the first third of the eighteenth century, a school-master for each village and every person in each village had "free access or liberty," to quote an old town report, "to send their children to sd master for benefit of the latin tongue, but no other." Newbedford had such a "grammar master," chiefly to prepare students for the university at Cambridge. Almost certainly at the same time there was also an elementary school.

With the adoption of the state constitution in 1780, public education received a livelier attention; and when in 1787 Newbedford was incorporated as a separate town, its first town meeting voted that "there be one person employed as a town school master in this town." For the next eleven years there is record of a vote passed annually that the selectmen appoint the school masters of the town according to law. But public support of schools in this town had been growing less willing, if one may judge by the fact that in 1798 only "a sum of money for schooling poor children" was voted, this sum being placed at two hundred dollars, at the recommendation of a committee which had been appointed to "inquire into the number of poor children in said town necessary to send

to school at the expense of the town;" and for more than a score of years the public schools were schools for the indigent. Probably, then, in 1793 more children went to private schools than to public ones in this town. From a very early period there was a school on Johnny Cake Hill. At this time there was one at Oxford,—the Poverty Point of today; still standing on the Taber Farm,—and probably others, besides the one referred to in this advertisement:

"Thaddeus Mayhew respectfully informs the inhabitants of Bedford and its vicinity, that, if suitable encouragement be given, he proposes to open a School at the north School-house, where he will teach Reading, Writing, vulgar and decimal Arithmetic, and English grammar; and hopes from his acquaintance with actual business, and a due sense of the importance of the undertaking, to be able to give satisfaction to his Employers.

"Those who are disposed to favor him with encouragement are desired to leave their names, at the store of Captain Jeremiah Mayhew or Mr. William Ross, where they may see the conditions."

The First Evening School.

Nothing more appears on this score until in October Mr. Mayhew in a notice headed "Evening school" announces that:

"The Subscriber, returning his grateful thanks to his employers for past patronage, begs leave to acquaint the public that he has concluded to continue the business; and that for the accommodation and benefit of those whose particular vocations render attendance impracticable, he proposes on Monday evening next to open an evening school:—when in addition to what was formerly advertised, he will teach bookkeeping navigation, and the theory of mensuration, and gauging. And flattering himself with having given general satisfaction heretofore engages by his assiduous attention to the improvement of those entrusted to his care, that those who may hereafter be disposed to favor him with encouragement shall not find their confidence misplaced—especially as he is determined they shall find no lower Terms, nor easier mode of payment."

An Early Reader.

The editor and publisher of *The Medley* at about this time set about trying to enrich the school life—and possibly his own purse—by getting up a school reader. He announced "Proposals of John Spooner for Printing, by Subscription, Miscellanies, Moral and Instructive, in Prose and Verse,

from Various Authors, Designed for the Use of Schools and Improvement of young persons of both sexes," quoting

"'Tis education forms the common mind;
Just as the twig is bent the tree's inclin'd."
—Pope."

It was to have two hundred pages, to be printed as soon as three hundred copies were subscribed for, and to sell for three shillings a book; and those who subscribed for twelve "would receive two gratis." "Subscription papers were lodged with the printer and several gentlemen."

Boarding the Schoolmaster.

No record of school matters would be complete without reference to the complaint, of one signing himself "Preceptor," against the custom of boarding schoolmasters around among the houses of their employers. "The method" he said, "of obliging a Master to change the place of his residence so frequently is attended with many demonstrative inconveniences: for where a man thinks not of staying more than a week, he cannot be at home. No sooner has he learnt to conform to the different manners, government, customs, &c. of one family, but he must remove to another: there with equal difficulty learn to conform to their's. Generally those persons who employ a Schoolmaster, have families of small children. For this, and many other reasons, there is scarce one family in ten, where a man can have the convenience of a studious life (which I am, and every Schoolmaster ought to be fond of). I have sometimes experienced very disagreeable feelings, on receiving visits from my friends; which in other circumstances would have given me the most pleasing sensations. Ashamed, or discommoded at my lodgings, I have sought refreshment for them at a Public House; or been obliged to burden some one of my acquaintances with them, when we wished to be retired. We are often obliged to observe the most persevering and rigid temperance. I have been in perils by water; and in perils for want of fire; twice have I been lousy; thrice have I caught the itch; once I have had—but I forbear: for I do not like exposing myself." He complains of often being so far from his schoolhouse as to be unable to give "that attention which is requisite to his business." He wants the custom to be changed so that any one may be at liberty to board a schoolmaster who lives at a suitable distance from the school and has "those conveniences which will render his life comfortable and agreeable."

Certainly one might well fancy the public sympathy going out to the long suffering Preceptor. But there was one of his own class who soon gave sign of small gratitude for this intervention in behalf of schoolmasterly comfort. Two weeks later in a communication in *The Medley* "Mr. Preceptor" was addressed by one signing himself "E. D." and under date of Oxford, who asked him "if possesit of the common principles of humanity" to publish his name, as he would thereby "justify to the public an innocent character, which suffers by your disguise—one who, together with his own infirmities has to bear (which is no inconsiderable grievance) the imputation of all your nonsense and ill-nature."

Whereupon Preceptor informs E. D. that in making his complaint he had in view not only his own happiness but the happiness of the faculty in general. He should not expect a sympathizing brother to ask him to expose his name and in consequence that of his employers. All he will say is that E. D. was not the writer of it,—which he does with the use of a nonsensical "syllogism." "As to what he has said of its being ill-natured nonsense, I shall only say," he comments, "that I am somewhat inclined to be of his opinion; for I have not heard a person read it, but what said Mr. D— was the author of it, for 'say they,' it is his style; sounds just like him, &c.—If it is my unhappiness to write in his style, I think he should use me more tenderly than to cry out, nonsense, ill-nature, &c. seeing the intent was to erase a custom, which experience must have taught him is contrary to his happiness and mine." And he adds, "I shall conclude in the words of the Poet:

"Then wherefore may not I be skip'd
And in my room another whip'd?
Canst thou refuse to bear thy part—
I' th' public work, base as thou art—
To higgie thus for a small scolding
To gain the faculty good boarding?"

leaving small doubt that Preceptor was of a poetic turn of mind as well as of a studious nature and a tease. "Preceptor" did not have the last word, for there came a caustic reply from the Oxford schoolmaster, under his full name of Elihu Doty,—the last two communications carrying the matter over into the new year.

A Public Library.

Some eight or ten years before the commonwealth of Massachusetts paid heed to the matter of public libraries, the subject of a library had come up for consideration in the village of

Bedford. On Feb. 2d, 1793, The Medley said editorially: "A correspondent observes that as something has been proposed respecting a library in this town, he hopes it may soon succeed; and that the proprietors will make the most modern and best dictionaries the object of their first choice, in the collection of books (as the diffusion of knowledge is the end and design of such a valuable institution) by which means they may the more readily be benefited by the lucubrations of some of our late modern writers."

That word "lucubrations" stirred up the town literary disputants into a discussion as to its right use in this connection, a Friend to Literature asking how the correspondent can determine whether such writings are "the production of diurnal or nocturnal studies," and the argument being clinched by recourse to the Latin, which shows that *lucubro* is to make by candlelight and *lucubratio* studying by candlelight—proving that "no authority whether modern or ancient is sufficient to support the correspondent in using lucubrations in any other sense than that of night studies"—a learned discussion that perhaps furnished in part the foundation for New Bedford historians' assertion that the early inhabitants of the town "consisted of a highly intellectual class of people."

Nothing further appeared about the library; though from other sources it can be said that eventually book clubs were formed, the Library Society got organized, followed by the Social Library, and that when, in the progress of time, all these had combined, the New Bedford Social Library enjoyed "a long, prosperous, and profitable career."

A Doctor of Divinity.

The town had at least one real student, but he was an importation. The name of the Rev. Samuel West, the able Congregational minister in the village at the head of the river was occasionally mentioned in The Medley, but never more interestingly than in the statement that "at the late commencement at Harvard College the degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred on the Rev. Samuel West, of this town."

Interest in the French Republic.

If one may judge from the columns and columns of news in The Medley of affairs in France, the people here were greatly interested in the French revolution and in the establishment of the French Republic. For instance, the proceedings of the convention that sentenced

Louis Capet to death were recorded in full, with the voice of every member chronicled on the question of guilt, and the full text of the decree of sentence was given, with apology from week to week for the omission of other matters because of the news from France. Certainly the editor of The Medley was tremendously interested. On February 2d he said: "Ca Ira! Ca Ira! is the song of the day. By yesterday's mail, we are agreeably entertained with particulars of the Civic Feast, celebrated the 24th ult. at Boston, Charlestown, Watertown, Medford, Plymouth, and Brookline, in this state, and at Providence in Rhodeisland, on the establishment of Liberty and Equality in France. Altho the citizens of this vicinity may not manifest their joy in so public a manner, yet, with sincere hearts, each one will reecho the wish that the spread of Liberty may speedily become as universal as that of Life—and that our noble allies' having wrested the sceptre from Monarchy, may enjoy Liberty, without Anarchy."

And in reporting the sentence of death for Louis he said: "The editor is happy to be able to give his readers so early and so general a statement of the matter: but must lament with every true friend to liberty the death of that generous monarch, who was Columbia's early friend:—who, when oppression and tyranny spread their banners over this young domain, flew to its relief, and quelled the haughty pride of Britain.—As true, unprejudiced friend, we bid adieu to his sleeping ashes—& hope his shade reigns now upon a throne which mobs nor cruel foes can ne'er destroy."

Later on, the French triumphs over the British were nuts to The Medley. When the Duke of York was taken with his whole army, early in 1794, "the editor gladly presents his Patrons the agreeable morceau." But then, that very same piece of news affected congress so that "it could not stay in their siting!"

Newbedford, however, fell in with Boston in adopting resolutions in favor of strict neutrality toward all belligerent European powers, in accord with President Washington's proclamation urging an impartial attitude. "A number of the inhabitants of this town met" and "voted the following resolves: That we will to the utmost of our power strictly attend to the pacific system manifested by the president in his late proclamations: that we heartily concur with our fellow citizens of the town of Boston in their late doings relative hereto: and that we will endeavor to detect all

such as may, in the smallest degree, violate that neutrality we so highly approve." Signed Thaddeus Mayhew, clerk.

News of the holding of American vessels in Algiers—in the midst of the European wars—led The Medley to get out the only "extra" referred to: "a handbill," it is called, issued on the day of the receipt of the news; while the item itself was repeated in the next regular issue.

Preserving the Peace.

Newbedford had at this time, and apparently needed it, a peace protection association. Some idea of the goings on can be grasped from this paragraph printed in November:

"A correspondent being asked, why the noise has become so great in the streets as almost to preclude the possibility of transacting business in the evening, gave for answer, what Elijah the Prophet did to the Priests of Baal—'Perhaps the Watchmen are talking—or they are pursuing, or they are in a journey, or peradventure they are sleeping and must be awaked.'"

There is suggestion, too, of the presence of unruly spirits in an earlier advertisement of two men who "utterly refused" to lend their boats to "any persons whomsoever" because of the many damages inflicted by those who had previously been accommodated, and in the later call for assistance by a man living at "the Longplain" in finding out who had taken, "thro mistake or designingly," a lot of white pine boards that had been left some months before at the Head of Acushnet River.

"Bedford Association."

Nothing had been said in The Medley about the existence of an organization to preserve the peace. A meeting had been called in March of the "Bedford Association," for "the appointment of officers and transacting such other business as may appear necessary," the meeting to be held "at the north school house"; but no ranking was given as to what the Bedford Association was and no report followed of the meeting. But now, when "the noise had become so great in the streets" as to disturb the rural quiet of Fourcorners, and to suggest that the watchmen were sleeping, the Bedford Association comes to the front in a long announcement, divided between two issues of The Medley, "published for the information of all concerned—more particularly as a guide and Monitor to our 'Peace Officers'" of "a system of Regulations proposed for the purpose of promoting good Order, Quietness, and

Security in the Village of Bedford, within the Town of Newbedford and County of Bristol." This consisted of a preamble and nineteen articles of orders and regulations, and under date showing that the association had organized on the "17th of 3d month called March, 1792."

This was the situation revealed by the preamble:

"We, the subscribers, inhabitants of the Village of Bedford and its vicinity, having heretofore suffered many inconveniences by the disorderly conduct of some of the young people and others, in various instances, for the purpose of preventing and reforming those disorders—Do hereby agree to form ourselves into an associate body, and engage as much as may be in our power, to suppress the various species of vice and immorality, that have led to those inconveniences."

Without attempting to go into the rules and regulations in detail, it may be said that they provided for the division of the village into three wards, South, Middle, and North, and "out of each Ward was to be appointed annually three suitable persons, men of orderly and temperate conduct," to be "stiled" censors, "to sit not less than two of them upon any occasion," to hear the complaints brought in by the Officers of the Peace of any disorderly conduct "practiced either within or without the limits" of the village.

After hearing the parties "with candor and impartiality," they were "to determine and require such reparation made (when injury hath been sustained) by the offender to the injured party, as they shall think equitable, and further in all cases to admonish and advice the parties to more circumspect conduct in future; which advice being well accepted, the party to be discharged; but when there appears an obstinate and incorrigible disposition," the Censors were "to certify the same to the Secretary, that their names may be recorded, and also to the Counsellor, requiring his entering complaint thereof to the civil magistrate (when the action is cognizable by law), and in the absence of the Counsellor to make complaint themselves."

Every subscriber to the association was constituted an Officer of the Peace, "not less than four of which, at any one time to have the care of the Village & to patrol the streets, at such times as is necessary, in order to preserve the peace and good order of the Village; and they and all others are required, upon discovery of

any tumult or unnecessary noise, to admonish and advise the persons to desist, and quietly to repair to their respective homes; and upon refusal, or discovery of any other malpractices to the injury of any individual, that they delay not to make complaint to the Censors, in order for their further examination."

Disorderly Conduct.

Conduct deemed offences within the intention of the association was specified as: "Indecent and disorderly behavior on the Sabbath, as idle and unnecessary meeting in the streets in companies and conversing—sailing for pleasure on that day, or any kind of gaming; ransacking orchards, gardens, or any other inclosure, to the injury of the owner; or robbing them of their fruit and produce, within or without the limits of this association; fighting, obscene language, or profane swearing, and drunkenness; tumults in the streets on evenings or at other times or places; breaking windows, throwing stones or sticks, and wantonly killing or abusing any domestic animals which are allowed to run at large; uncivil language and behavior to any person."

Members of the association offending were to be brought before the censors, refusing which they were to be expelled and brought before a magistrate.

Every parent, master, or guardian, on the transgression of his child or apprentice was to deliver him up to the censors for trial; and all members were to use "every exertion in their power" to prevent disorders and discover all breaches of the peace. In all cases affecting the liberty or reputation of the subject, two-thirds of the members were required to be present. Any culprit who "reformed his manners" could have his name erased by the secretary.

Any person of lawful age was at liberty to be a subscriber of the association, but once a member, he solemnly bound himself to adhere to it until the object in view had been accomplished or the association mutually dissolved.

Evidently there was some difficulty about carrying out the provisions of bringing offenders before the censors, for notice is here given that at the annual meeting of that year, a year after organization, it had been voted that the peace officer having the care of the town at the time should "serve citations on those whom they may be directed to by the Censors and to see the persons so cited be brot before the said Censors."

The document was signed by Caleb Greene, Secretary, followed by the words,

"Signed by 85 of the inhabitants of Bedford and its vicinity."

The Intellectual Centre.

It is noticeable that the intellectual interests of the town all seemed to cluster about this "north school house" at the head of the river, while the chief business of the town was pursued at Fourcorners.

A Rochester Ordination.

No church matters were reported for this town during the year, but a new minister was ordained at the Congregational church in Rochester, "to the pastoral care of the Congregational church and society" in the "Congregational precinct of Rochester, Middleborough, and Freetown." He was the Rev. Calvin Chaddock. The ministers named as taking part in the service, belonged in Carver, Plymouth, Rochester, and Abington; and The Medley comments that "the greatest order and regularity were observed by the very numerous auditory which attended on the occasion." While a candidate for the place the young man had had the good judgment to marry, in Rochester, "the amiable Miss Melatiah Nye of Oakham," as the marriage notice stated.

Street Names.

In an early issue of 1793 appeared this notice as to street names—that "the editor of The Medley, by desire of a number of gentlemen in this place and for the information of the public, would mention—that the Street, beginning at Fourcorners, and running west, is distinguished and known by the name of Union street; the street running north, from said Fourcorners, North street; the street running east, Prospect street; and that running south, Water street."

Poor Roads.

The local good roads, or bad roads, question dates back at least to 1793. In what is evidently an editorial review, and under the head "A Hint," a correspondent is said to suggest "to the Surveyors of roads in the town of Newbedford the necessity of attending to some considerable repairs thereon.—He prefers the candid mode of redressing the grievances, to presenting a complaint to the Grand-juryman; and since it is universally agreed that the roads of Newbedford are inferior in point of goodness to any in New England, he hopes this seasonable word will not pass unnoticed."

Town Militia.

George Claghorn, colonel of the Second Regiment in the Second Brigade of the Fifth Division of the state militia, on May 31st, quoted the law of the commonwealth providing "that every noncommissioned Officer and Soldier of the Militia shall equip himself, and be constantly provided with a good firearm with a steel or iron ramrod, a spring to retain the same, a worm, priming wire and brush—a bayonet fitted to his firearm, a scabbard and belt for the same—a cartridge box that will hold fifteen cartridges at least—six flints—one pound of powder—forty leaden balls suitable for his firearm, &c." under penalty of a possible fine of three pounds for failure to comply with the regulation; and the company was called together "for exercise and to examine their equipment"—"and it is the earnest wish of the Colonel and Major to see them appear in the character they sustain, which is Soldiers and Citizens."

"Stop a Runaway!"

That youth was not always satisfied with the working of the apprentice system and sometimes took it into its own hands to remedy real or fancied wrongs or to secure at least a change, and that those to whom they were bound in service took advantage of the constitutional right to get back, if possible, those whose labor they claimed, is shown in two advertisements calling upon the populace to "Stop a Runaway!"—one from Freetown and the other from Dartmouth. In regard to the latter—"Thomas Akin, a Blacksmith," announced:

"Ran away from the subscriber, the 27th ult., an indented apprentice boy, by name Hattle Brayley; sixteen years old—about four feet six inches high—light complexion and short hair.—Had on, when he went away, a short green outside coat, fustic-coloured broadcloth trousers, patched on the knees with cloth of the same kind and colour as his coat.—a good felt hat. Took with him, a good caster hat—a good led coloured broadcloth coat—a jacket and breeches—also a seal skin cap. "Whoever will return said Boy shall receive a handsome reward and all charges. All persons are forbid harbouring or trusting him on my account—and Masters of vessels are hereby forewarned against taking him to sea—as they will answer for it at their peril."

Human Nature Manifested.

Human nature seems to have been much the same then as now: there

was the one who got things under false pretenses, or at least made mistakes: "The Person who claimed Butler's Hudibras and took it from this office will much oblige the printer by returning the same, or more fully ascertaining his property." There was the one who lost his Pocketbook "on the road from the paper mills in Milton to the Northparish in Bridgewater" in August, and got round to advertising for it in February. There was the man who wanted more money than he had: "Wanted, on loan, for 6 Months or a Year, one hundred Pounds, for which or a part, good security will be given and interest paid as most agreeable to the loaner." And there was the same notice printed by a deserted husband that has appeared in the newspapers every once in a while up to now, and will while marriage infelicity remains an unhappy fact, of a wife's having left her husband's bed and board and of his forbidding persons to trust her on his account, signed by a Dartmouth man, under the exceptionally sensational heading for that day of "~~the~~ Elopement!" and a crude woodcut picture of a hoop-skirted woman, with a bag hanging from a stick over her shoulder—quite an Amazon in appearance, though the cut is only three-quarters of an inch high!

A Legalized Lottery.

And there were the people who wanted something for nothing and subscribed for the legalized lottery organized to pay for a bridge in Newfield, Connecticut. The lottery had been authorized by the legislature, providing for 13,334 tickets at four dollars each, with 4078 prizes ranging from four thousand dollars down to five dollars, to a total of \$53,336, subject to a deduction of 12½ per cent.; and leaving 9256 tickets blank. The management flattered themselves these schemes would give "as general satisfaction as is possible for one to be found—so variable is the opinion and calculation of adventures."

William Ross and Shearman and Procter offered tickets for sale in Newbedford. That it was an entirely reputable scheme is shown in an advertisement changing the date of the drawing, which explained the reason for this as "the adjournment of the County Court to the time first proposed;" the manager who subscribed his name "being clerk of said court, and others of the managers belonging to it."

A Natural Singularity.

That running to the newspaper with freaks, whether of turnips, flowers, or animals, is no new adven-

ture, either, finds witness in this item under the head of "Natural Singularity!"

"In Tiverton, Rhodeisland, is a lamb three months old, which dame Nature has furnished with three mouths. The two extra mouths are on each side of its head; which open and shut, and move regularly with the front mouth.—Each mouth has four handsome teeth—and appear firmly set. It grazes with the flock—and is active and as likely to thrive as any lamb in the flock. In all other parts it is like other sheep.—This singularity may be seen at Mrs. Sarah Almy's, by any one who doubts the truth of the above account."

Small Pox Bill of Mortality.

But, unlike the present day, that there was no clamor to get things into the paper the moment they happened is shown in the item, in the middle of January, giving the names of those persons who had died of the small pox in this town in the four previous months. Under the head of "Small Pox Bill of Mortality" were printed twenty-nine names, including twelve of children; and the lack of system in keeping track of deaths is evidenced in the statement that "any person who can give more particular information, by communicating details not here inserted will much oblige the Editor by handing him an account for publication."

Fumigating with Gun Powder.

Speaking of the small pox—there was an epidemic of yellow fever in Philadelphia that year, and, following the lead of New York, Governor Hancock, at the vote of the Massachusetts senate, issued a proclamation of quarantine against persons and things from Philadelphia, after which Boston issued a set of regulations that provided, among other things, for the holding for thirty days of all vessels from places supposed to be infected, "during which time she shall be duly washed with vinegar and cleansed by the explosion of gunpowder between decks and in the cabin." Persons arriving overland from places supposed to be infected were to be detained "at places appropriated by the health officers" and "their effects, baggage, and merchandise were there to be opened, washed, and fumigated with vinegar and repeated explosions of gun powder."

All that The Medley said with reference to any move on the part of this town was that "the selectmen have taken the necessary precautions to prevent the disease from being brought into this place." Evidently the town was stirred up, however, for

The Medley some time after this stated that the selectmen had in their possession a circular issued by the New York quarantine committee saying that the disease was not easily taken "without a predisposition of the body and that the climate was not favorable to the disease in any place but Philadelphia!"—which bears a trace of the rivalry between the two places.

The New York circular sought in specific terms to "preserve that commercial and social intercourse so necessary to the general prosperity and happiness."

Quaint Marriage Notices.

Mostly the marriage notices were the merest naming of names, usually without name of minister, or date—though occasionally Mr.-So-and-So married the "amiable" or "agreeable" Miss So-and-So; and twice a notice was accompanied by verse. Here, evidently, was an unusually important function:

"In this town, Sunday evening last, by the Rev. Doctor West, Capt. Preserved Fish, to Miss Polly Gerrish, eldest daughter of Mr. John Gerrish, of this place.

"Thus pass their life—
A clear united stream, by care unruffled;
While with each other blest, creative love
Still bids eternal Eden smile around."
Again, marriage moved to playful, flattering rhyme:

"In this town Mr. William Delano to Miss Hannah Tallman:
"When Beauty pleads with artful smiles,
She oft the stoutest heart beguiles;
But join'd with H's wit and sense,
Who could resist such eloquence?"

Obituary Notices.

Obituary notices were rare. When Governor Hancock died, a tribute to him appeared in a separate item, under a head-line "Hancock!" flanked on either side with skull and cross-bones, in which The Medley said:

"Monday last the corpse of our late worthy Governor was entomb'd with civic and military honors. While the heart of sensibility laments the loss of so useful a character, the honor and respect manifested in his interment, by the parade of a numerous military band and thousands of his fellow citizens, will afford a satisfaction to the bereaved mind, which only is experienced when others sympathize with us in woe; for as he lived respected, so he died honored and lamented—What more can be said but that the noblest tribute was paid to his memory which worth and virtue merit or mortals can bestow."

Again, skull and crossbones helped to announce the sorrow in the community over the drowning in the river of a respected citizen:

Overset by a Whirlwind.

"Monday last, Mr. Charles Church, Senior, of this town, attempting to cross the harbor to Fairhaven, in an open boat, was overset by a whirlwind, and drowned.—Immediate trial was made to recover the body: which after two hours' search was found.—Every exertion which a humane public could invent was used to reanimate him, but in vain. . Thus died 'an honest man'—respected by all who knew him—beloved by all who revere true virtue—and much lamented by a worthy partner, and a large family of respectable children, who bid fair to practice the virtues instilled in their tender minds by him who loved them.—His remains were on Wednesday decently interred, in the burying ground of the first Congregational society in this town, attended by a numerous concourse of friends and relatives." And then there followed an elegy written on the evening of the drowning by Philander—a very soulful effusion.

Here is another of the rare obituaries of the year:

A Man of Solid Deportment.

"Died—In this town Mr. Ebenezer Allen, Jun., Cabinet Maker, in the 37th year of his life.—On the morning of the 27th (of January) he was seized with a pain in his head, which increased till about 1 o'clock; when, falling asleep, a stupor succeeded, from which he was incapable of being aroused: every stimulating effort which those of the faculty who were called in could advise, was made use of.—Thus continuing till about two o'clock on the morning of the 28th, he expired. He has left behind a disconsolate widow, and four children, to lament his loss.—He was a kind and affectionate husband, tender father, sincere friend, and obliging neighbor, and an honest man: these virtues were much increased by his Christian conduct; which was abundantly conspicuous, in the solid deportment which accompanied the transactions of his life. In him the community has lost one of its most industrious citizens. May the kind hand of friendship pour in the oil of comfort, to soften the sorrows of his afflicted family."

Probate Court.

Probate court was announced to be held here "in May and October, the first Tuesday, at Major Ebenezer Willis's"—known to a later day as the John Avery Parker house, on Willis

street, between County and State: a small section of which is still standing, in a remodelled dwelling.

In the citations in connection with the settling of estates, the occupation of deceased was frequently stated, as husbandman, yeoman, merchant, and the like.

Other Death Notices.

Among other death notices were:

"In Dartmouth, Mr. Joseph Ricketson, *Æt.* 47.—Climbing a tree after grapes a limb broke—he fell—his head striking a stub put an immediate end to his existence."

"At Dartmouth, Miss Betsey Wilber, daughter of Mr. Jonathan Wilber, of that town, *Æt.* 16.

"Death's shafts fly thick—

The cup goes round—

And who so artful as to put it by!"

"Died—At Neworleans, Mr. Jonathan Ricketson, *Æt.* 20.—Son of Capt. Daniel Ricketson of this town. He sailed mate of a brig from Philadelphia, to the above place, where he, with the whole crew, were taken sick with the dysentery—and all except the captain died."

"Died—At Boston, suddenly, Sunday morning last (Feb. 24), Captain William Claghorn, of this town, aged 59. He lived beloved and his loss is lamented by all his acquaintances." This was followed by a sympathetic verse, spoke by Religion for consolation, of the wonders of redeeming love. An elegy appeared in a later issue, signed Philander, where the statement was also made that Captain Claghorn died on a visit to Boston and died of apoplexy.

When Mr. Oliver Spencer, merchant, died at Nantucket, he was "decently layed in the Friends burying ground: to which place he was followed by more than three hundred of his friends and neighbors."

A Tragie Death.

Newbedford furnished nothing so thrilling in the dying line nor cause for so really distinctive an obituary as appeared under the head: "Married—At Nantucket," with the tragie tale told thus breathlessly:

"Mr. John Fairweather to Miss Heppy Swain. Mr. Fairweather was single and an apprentice—free—married and beded—broke out with the smallpox the natural way—of necessity separated from his wife, and lodged in the smallpox hospital: all this in the short space of less than 48 hours."

And, under the head of "Died," below:

"Mr. John Fairweather, of the small pox the natural way."

THE
WHALEMAN STATUE

ON THE GROUNDS OF THE
FREE PUBLIC LIBRARY

NEW BEDFORD, MASS.

No 38

Old Dartmouth Historical Sketches, No. 38

THE PRESENTATION
OF THE
WHALEMAN STATUE
TO THE
CITY OF NEW BEDFORD
BY
WILLIAM W. CRAPO
AND THE
EXERCISES AT THE DEDICATION
JUNE TWENTIETH
NINETEEN HUNDRED AND THIRTEEN

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SKETCHES, No. 38

NEW BEDFORD, MASS.
E. ANTHONY & Sons, Inc., Printers
1913

F74
II 2504

1908
1909
1910

1911

Introductory

In the New Bedford Standard of May 16th, 1903, referring to a poem by John Spollon, appeared the following editorial:

Considered merely as poetry, we could not say with any great degree of candor that the contribution to Fibre and Fabric, entitled "The Whaleman," which was reproduced in this paper the other day, would take a high rank. But the sentiment must be very appealing to any son of New Bedford who remembers the old whaling days, and the mariners and merchants who made the whaling industry a magnificent success. We do not recall that it has ever before been suggested that the whaleman should be commemorated by a statue, yet the suggestion is one that is well worth hearing and heeding. Those of our readers who have visited Springfield, and who have seen the impressive statue by Augustus St. Gaudens, known generally as "The Puritan," but which is a memorial to Deacon Samuel Chapin, an early settler of the town, have seen the idea of Fibre and Fabric's poet carried out as applied to the conditions of that city. As the Puritan was typical of Springfield, so the whaleman would be typical of this city. What a noble thing it would be if a St. Gaudens statue of The Whaleman could be placed on City Hall square, where hundreds of people passing every day could be reminded of the rugged sailors who made New Bedford possible! Whether the verse is good poetry or not, no matter. The idea is as good as it can be, when the aged and gray mariner is represented as saying:

“Yet I heartily wish his old shape could be seen,
 In marble or bronze, mounted here on the green,
 As a Founder the town should remember
 Till Sentiment’s last glowing ember
 To ashes has faded away.

Let his monument stand, with his harpoon in hand,
 Sturdy son of the sea who dragged wealth to the land
 In defiance of hardship and danger;
 For in this town he’ll soon be a stranger.”

This subject, in the hands of a master, should readily adapt itself to a bold and masterly artistic treatment, though we shudder to think what it might be if attempted by mediocrity. Committed to genius, The Whaleman might easily be one of the great statues of America,—and New Bedford would be the only city where it could appropriately stand.

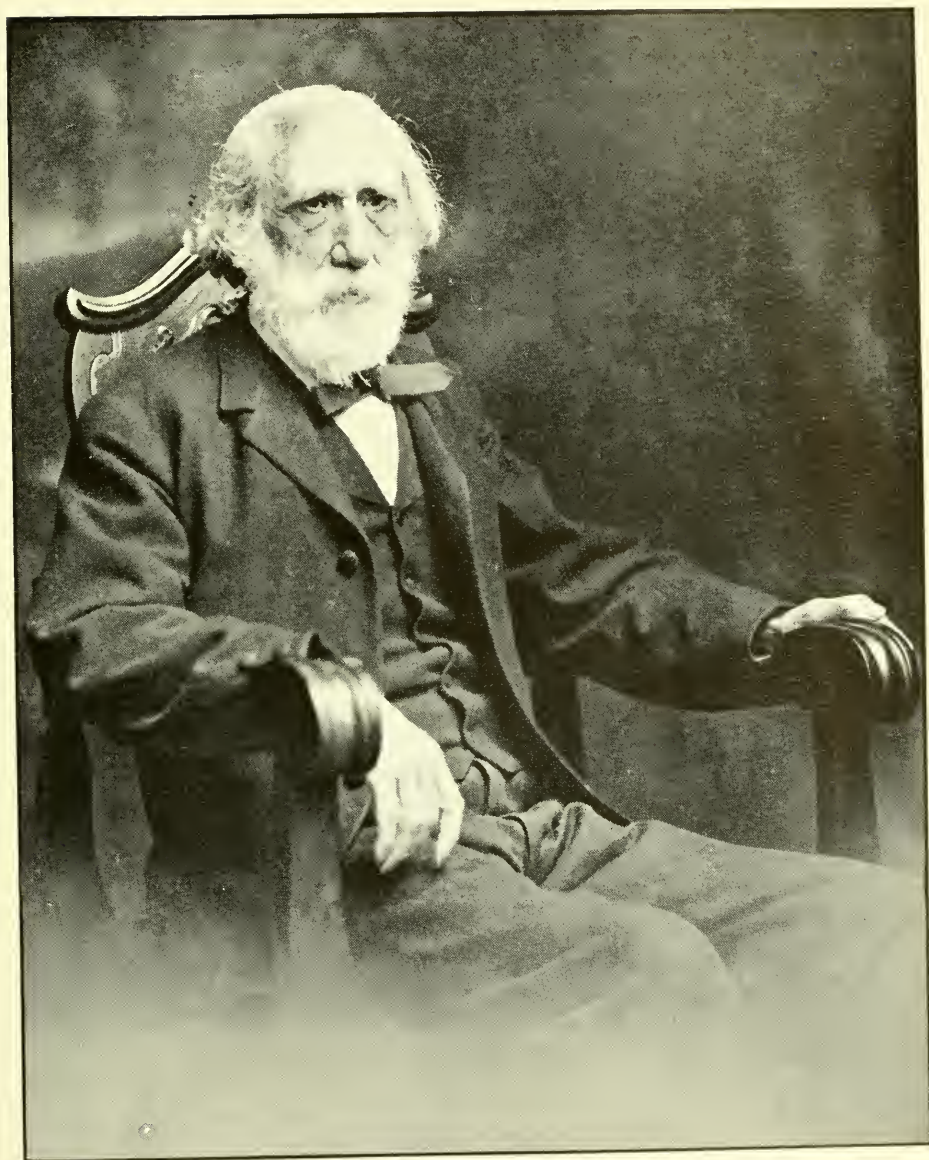
The first information communicated to the public that this suggestion was likely to be realized was presented in the following letter of Hon. William W. Crapo, addressed to the Mayor of New Bedford, who is chairman of the Trustees of the Free Public Library:

New Bedford, Feb. 8th, 1912.

Hon. Charles S. Ashley, Mayor, New Bedford, Mass.:

My Dear Sir:—I desire, subject to your approval, to make arrangements for a memorial in honor of the whalemens whose skill, hardihood, and daring brought fame and fortune to New Bedford and made its name known in every seaport on the globe; and to be privileged to present it to the City of New Bedford as a tribute to the citizenship which I have so long enjoyed.

For this purpose I have asked Mr. Bela L. Pratt, of Boston, to design a model of a bronze figure of a boat-steerer throwing a harpoon from the bow of a whale-boat. The sketch model has been prepared and shows the character of the work proposed. My wish is that this memorial be placed on the ground by the Public Library, and the model has been designed with that location in view.



WILLIAM W. CRAFO

If it meets with your approval I suggest that you refer the consideration of this offer on my part to the Trustees of the Free Public Library. If the matter meets with the approval of the Trustees I will venture to proceed with the work, which when completed I shall desire to present for the acceptance of the City Council of New Bedford.

Respectfully yours,

WILLIAM W. CRAPO.

To this Mayor Ashley replied as follows:

New Bedford, Feb. 21, 1912.

Hon. William W. Crapo, New Bedford, Mass.:

Dear Sir:—Agreeable to the suggestion which your communication to me contains as to reference to the Trustees of the Free Public Library of the proposal which you make to present to the city a bronze memorial in honor of "The Whalemens," I will engage to do so at the meeting Friday evening of this week.

I can assure you that the proposition meets my hearty approval and must commend itself to every person as a thoughtful, generous act deserving public appreciation in the fullest measure.

I have every belief that the Board of Trustees will be greatly pleased to designate the grounds of the Library building as a location where the figure shall be erected, and will select a place in every way fitting, and I will ask them in this respect to forthwith communicate with you.

With great appreciation, I am yours most respectfully,

CHARLES S. ASHLEY, Mayor.

Action was taken by the Trustees of the Library as shown in the following letter:

New Bedford, Mass., March 29, 1912.

Hon. William W. Crapo, New Bedford, Mass.:

My Dear Sir:—The Board of Trustees of the New Bedford Free Public Library at their last meeting directed me, as clerk of the Board, to express to you

their grateful appreciation of the kindly spirit manifested in your offer to present to the City of New Bedford, to be placed in some suitable location in the grounds surrounding the Library building, the beautiful memorial to those hardy mariners who have in the past done so much to add lustre to the honor and fame of this great nation, the American Whaleman, designed by Mr. Bela L. Pratt of Boston.

“Voted: That the generous offer of Mr. Crapo be accepted and that the clerk be directed to communicate the same to him with the thanks of the Board.”

Yours very truly,

A. McL. GOODSPEED, Clerk.

The Whaleman Statue

The appreciation of this gift by the citizens of New Bedford was expressed by the following editorials:

From The Evening Standard, New Bedford:

To be able to announce, as this newspaper has the rare privilege of announcing today, the approaching realization of a long-cherished dream that this city might be adorned with a fitting memorial to the New Bedford whalemen, is such a pleasure as is not often experienced. Adding William W. Crapo's public-spirited generosity to Bela L. Pratt's genius for sculpture, the total is a creation of statuary such as very few cities in the United States are fortunate enough to possess. New Bedford has so few examples of fine artistry that this munificent contribution is of surpassing importance and so of exceptional welcome. As the giver says in his letter, the men whose memory it commemorates brought fame and fortune to New Bedford; and nothing can be more appropriate than that this memorial should perpetuate their fame, while adding by the perfection of its artistic excellence to the city's renown.

Two reproductions from photographs of the sculptor's sketch, with Mr. Crapo's letter to the Mayor, and with a few words of unadorned explanation, given elsewhere, tell the whole story. Nothing can better speak for the gift than the gift itself, and anything added here in the way of praise is the addition of superfluity, notwithstanding the temptation presses too hard to be resisted.

Mr. Crapo's thought of this memorial began to take shape in his mind many months ago. From the first, his desire was to see commemorated that epoch of the

whaling industry which he had known in his boyhood—an industry of strong, venturesome, ambitious men, of young men looking to the future, men who meant to be leaders and who turned out to be leaders. From that thought he evolved the conception of the boatsteerer, now fashioned from the clay by Mr. Pratt, and by and by to be set up in bronze and granite where all the people can see. Possibly our older folk need no reminder that this is the figure of the young man who realized that his killing the whale was on his way to becoming, as they used to say, “captain of a ship.” So many barrels of oil, so many dollars of profit at the end of the three years’ cruise,—of course. But beyond the immense bulk of floating flesh unconsciously waiting his attack he saw himself a mate, a master, an owner of ships, a leading citizen of his native city, wife and children, prosperity, and an honored name. This is the man of the statue—The Whaleman “who brought fame and fortune to New Bedford and made its name known in every seaport in the globe.” Here he is, a man in the full glory and promise of a young manhood and who made that promise good. Long years afterward, he walked these streets, a gray-haired old man, he sailed the seas and he killed whales in fancy at the Chronometer club, he was a director in the bank, he sat at the head of his pew on the main aisle, he served his term in the legislature—but in the thought of the giver and in the brain of the artist he is always the eternal youth, inspiring and leading all those other youths who, coming after, will feel the impulse of his beckoning to achievement. Something like this, Mr. Crapo must have said to the sculptor, and discerning his splendid opportunity the sculptor has translated the vision into the image of the youthful boatsteerer, intent upon his whale, and yet still intent upon his own glowing dreams.

Of the sculptor himself, little more than a word is needed, and much would be impertinence. Probably with respect to fitness for this especial commission his

equal cannot be found among American sculptors, while of the two or three who may be ranked among his rivals in talent, not one is his superior. He has, along with breadth and delicacy of imagination, the power of vigorous execution, as is easily discoverable in the statue of *The Whaleman*. That he deems himself fortunate in his subject is his own modest way of putting it, but another can say with no reservation and with no taint of exaggeration that his subject is fortunate in him.

In *The Whaleman* poising his harpoon where the currents of business and pleasure flow and swirl, for many a generation to come the people of New Bedford will see with grateful acknowledgment honor to the daring men of a wonderful industry, genius speaking inspiration through bronze and stone, and loyal affection for the generous giver's home through a long and useful life.

From the Morning Mercury, New Bedford:

The announcement by William W. Crapo of his purpose to erect a memorial to the whalemén, is received with the greatest satisfaction. It has been the dream of all the lovers of the immortal days when New Bedford, first in the brave industry of whaling, carried the flag to all the seas of earth, that we might rear a fitting monument to the daring race of men who brought opulence and fame to the city through their perilous enterprise.

The hope was always associated with the fear that the thing might not be fittingly or worthily done. But for this apprehension it is likely it might have been attempted before this day. It is gratifying to know that it is to be done by an artist with the sympathy and intelligence of Mr. Pratt, without restriction as to cost, and there is no less gratification that the name of Mr. Crapo, possibly our most distinguished and highly cherished citizen, is to be linked with the splendid achievement.

Once it was decided to erect such a memorial, there could be no doubt in any mind regarding the subject of the design. "It is the harpooner that makes the voyage." It is the harpooner who performs the task with the responsibility and the task with the thrill. "Nowhere in all America," said Melville, writing of the olden day, "will you find more patrician-like houses; parks and gardens more opulent, than in New Bedford. Whence came they? How planted upon this once scraggy scoria of a country? Go and gaze upon the iron emblematical harpoons round yonder lofty mansion and your question will be answered. Yes; all these brave houses and flowery gardens came from the Atlantic, Pacific, and Indian oceans. One and all they were harpooned and dragged up hither from the bottom of the sea. Can Herr Alexander perform a feat like that?"

The harpooner is at the forefront of the whole desperate business. When the greenhand first takes his place in a boat to go upon a whale, he is commanded to keep his eyes astern, so terrifying is the spectacle of the contest—a contest in which the harpooner is the dominant figure. If it is necessary for the harpooner to qualify further as to his importance, let us quote from Melville once again:

"According to the invariable usage of the fishery, the whaleboat pushes off from the ship, with the headsman or whale-killer as temporary steersman, and the harpooner or whale-fastener pulling the foremost oar, the one known as the harpooner-oar. Now it needs a strong, nervous arm to strike the first iron into the fish, for often, in what is called a long dart, the heavy implement has to be flung to the distance of twenty or thirty feet. But however prolonged and exhausting the chase, the harpooner is expected to pull his oar meanwhile to the uttermost; indeed, he is expected to set an example of superhuman activity to the rest, not only by incredible rowing, but by repeated loud and intrepid exclamations; and what it is to keep shouting at the top of one's compass, while all the other muscles are strained and half started—what this is none know but those who have tried it. For one, I cannot bawl very heartily and work

very recklessly at one and the same time. In this straining, bawling state, then, with his back to the fish, all at once the exhausted harpooner hears the exciting cry—‘Stand up, and give it to him!’ He now has to drop and secure his oar, turn around on his centre half way, seize his harpoon from the crotch, and with what little strength may remain, he essays to pitch it somehow into the whale. No wonder taking the whole fleet of whalers in a body, that out of fifty fair chances for a dart, not five are successful; no wonder that so many hapless harpooners are madly cursed and disrated; no wonder that some of them actually burst their blood-vessels in the boat; no wonder that some sperm whalers are absent four years with four barrels; no wonder that to many ship owners, whaling is but a losing concern; for it is the harpooner that makes the voyage, and if you take the breath out of his body how can you expect to find it there when most wanted.’”

Having decided that it is the harpooner who fills the picture, the artist must next pick his type. If he is a lover of the whaling classic there is recalled to his mind the dreadful Queequeg, who “eats nothing but steaks and likes ’em rare,” or Daggoo, or Tashtego, the three salt-sea warriors with the portentous appetites which barons of salt junk could not satisfy. But these are not typical of the glorious host of whalers who made the fame of New Bedford, valorous, hardy, God-fearing men.

The whalers of yesteryear, whom the sculptor honors and perpetuates, is the Native born—“A health to the Native born, Stand up!”—young men athirst for gain and glory in the fishery, “stalwart fellows who have felled forests and now seek to drop the axe and snatch the whale lance.” The time was when the boys of New Bedford were fired by the deeds of the fathers and aspired to be captains and heroes. This is the figure of youth who stands at the prow of the boat—looking forward.

The Mercury has often expressed its admiration for the slogan of the whaler, as brought out by Captain Ahab. Calling aft the crew, the captain demands:

"What do ye do when ye see a whale, men?"
 "Sing out for him," responds the clubbed chorus.
 "And what do ye next, men?"
 "Lower away and after him!"
 "And what tune is it ye pull to, men?"
 "A dead whale or a stove boat!"

In the one hundredth anniversary edition of the Mercury, the Mercury said of the phrase "A Dead Whale or a Stove Boat," that "it should be emblazoned on the monument we are one day to build to the whaleman. It should be inscribed in the schoolroom and on the wall of the bed chamber of the youth of New Bedford."

We are rejoiced that our suggestion has been adopted and that the phrase will appear upon the sculpture. This slogan was the impulse which led the whaleman to do such deeds that all history cannot point to an enterprise prosecuted with greater courage, hardihood, and intelligence. It is a glowing, slashing, spirit-stirring phrase, and we are glad it is to be perpetually before the youth of this city.

No gift, we believe, could be more highly cherished than the memorial which Mr. Crapo has bestowed. We express, we know, a universal sentiment of appreciation, with the hope that the First Citizen of New Bedford, a position Mr. Crapo holds by common agreement, will live long in the place he loves so well, and honors no less.



THE WHALEMAN

Unveiling of The Whaleman Statue

“The Whaleman,” William W. Crapo’s gift to the city, was unveiled June 20, 1913, in the presence of thousands of interested spectators.

In keeping with the sentiment that inspired the gift of the statue, Captain George O. Baker, New Bedford’s oldest living whaling master, performed the office of loosening the ropes that held the covering of the statue, and revealing the figure.

Mr. Crapo spoke briefly in presenting the statue; and Mayor Ashley made the address of acceptance in behalf of the city. Other speakers at the exercises were Edmund Wood, Rev. C. S. Thurber, P. C. Headley, Jr., and Otis S. Cook.

The exercises incidental to the unveiling began at 11 o’clock, in the presence of a crowd which covered the lawn around the bronze figure and overflowed across William and Pleasant streets. Traffic was prevented through these thoroughfares and electric cars were diverted through Sixth to Union street, that the immediate district might be kept as quiet as possible, and the spectators might be given an opportunity to hear the addresses of Mr. Crapo and of the others who participated in the programme.

To Mr. Crapo was accorded a position of honor upon the speakers’ platform which had been erected at the northeast corner of the Library building near the statue, while sitting there with him were the Mayor, who accepted the statue on behalf of the city and who presided over the exercises, the speakers, and invited guests. The party included Captain Ezra B. Lapham and Captain Thomas H. Jenkins, Mayor Ashley, John I. Bryant, Jireh Swift, Clifton W. Bartlett, Librarian George H.

Tripp, Phineas C. Headley, Jr., Edmund Wood, Rev. Charles S. Thurber, Alexander McL. Goodspeed, Dr. Frank M. Kennedy, Frank A. Milliken, Otis S. Cook, George R. Phillips, Charles P. Maxfield of Fairhaven, and Charles W. Howland of Dartmouth. Invitations had been extended to the mayors of surrounding cities and to the selectmen of neighboring towns, but several of them, because of other business, were unable to be in attendance.

The space immediately around the statue had been roped off in order to give Captain Baker ample room for the unveiling, while chairs were brought from the Library and placed in front of the platform for the invited guests. Among these were members of Mr. Crapo's immediate family, this party including Mrs. Sarah B. C. Ross, of Boston, a sister of Mr. Crapo; Mr. and Mrs. Stanford Crapo and family of Detroit; Henry H. Crapo, and Mrs. Charles W. Whittier and family of Milton.

Included also in the group near the statue were Bela L. Pratt, the sculptor, and friends of Mr. Crapo.

The platform which was used by the speakers had been built over the steps, and the woodwork was obscured by a covering of bunting, while large American flags on staffs marked the four corners of the stand.

In order to regulate traffic, a police detail of 12 men, under command of Lieutenant Underwood was present.

A few moments previous to the scheduled time for the exercises Mr. Crapo, the Mayor, and the others of the platform party met in the office of Librarian Tripp and promptly at 11 o'clock came through the Library and took their positions upon the stand, the statue hidden from view by its covering being directly to their left.

After a selection by Gray's Band, the Mayor stepped to the front of the platform, accompanied by Captain Baker, and in introducing him paid a brief tribute to the former mariner—in the Mayor's words, "a splendid example of the men who brought honor and fame to the hardy and fearless calling of the whalemén."

The actual unveiling took but a moment, and as the covering fell away, revealing to the people for the first time the completed work, the Mayor introduced to those gathered about the statue, the donor, William W. Crapo.

The Mayor expressed his gratification at the honor accorded him.

Remarks by the Mayor:

“One citizen there is among us, whose life embracing an honorable span of years, has witnessed each history making epoch in our expanding municipal development.

“He has borne an important and commanding part in the business of other years and is a foremost figure in the enterprises of the present day.

“To no other New Bedford man has been allotted so large a place in the activities of a community attaining marvelous prosperity in two pursuits so radically differing in nature.

“The devotion which he brings to the numerous duties which bear upon him, never allures him from the keenest interest in all that concerns our daily doings, and his reverent appreciation of our history and achievements has been manifested on every occasion.

“At this time he confers upon us a dignified and impressive example of the traits and qualities which control him, our distinguished fellow townsman, and I regard it as my most gratifying privilege to present him to you—William W. Crapo.”

Remarks by Mr. Crapo:

The statue of The Whaleman which is presented to the city recalls the earlier history of this locality. For a hundred years the whale fishery was the absorbing and well nigh exclusive industry of New Bedford, furnishing employment to its artisans on shore and to its sailors on the ocean. Its ships sailed from this port bound on long voyages to far distant seas and they returned with rich cargoes. They were manned with self-reliant, hardy, stout-hearted men. Many of them who had entered the fore-castle, through well deserved promotions reached the quarter deck. They were trained to obey and they were fitted to command. Undaunted they encountered the terrific storms of the tropics and the ice fields of polar regions. Fearlessly they pursued, and with a daring not surpassed in mortal warfare they captured the huge leviathans of the deep and made them contribute to the wants of mankind.

These men brought back something more than barrels of oil and pounds of bone. They enriched our citizenship. In visiting foreign ports in every quarter of the globe for the purpose of shipments or recruits or repairs, in braving the perils of the ocean, in meeting the frenzied attacks of wounded and angry whales, in dealing with barbarous natives of South Sea Islands, in thrilling adventures and hair-breadth escapes, they gained strength of character, a broader vision, and a clearer judgment. Retiring from a strenuous and hazardous service at a comparatively early age they sought on land the comforts of home. Here they were not idle. They engaged in various pursuits and they added greatly to the social life of the town. They were citizens whose opinions were respected by their neighbors, for they had been reared in a school which made them neither narrow-minded nor timid. Some of them took part in the management of our municipal affairs. The first mayor of New Bedford when a young man was a whaleman. He had stood at the masthead, in the boat as harpooner, he had "struck his whale," as the phrase

went, and he earned the position and title of ship captain. For five years he ably filled the office of chief executive of the city.

It was the adventurous spirit and the rugged hardihood of our whalers, the integrity and excellence in construction and equipment of our ships, and the sagacious foresight and fair dealing of our whaling merchants, that made New Bedford the foremost whaling port of the world. The industry still lingers here, a remnant of its former greatness. Instead of fleets of whalers cruising in every ocean, a few vessels returning from their voyages land their catch on our wharves. Modern devices have lessened the risk attending the pursuit and capture, and the romance that once gathered around the harpoon has largely vanished.

This statue, placed in our civic center, a spot endeared to us by cherished memories, is erected in remembrance of the energy and fortitude, the toil and enterprise of the men who laid the foundation of the prosperity of this community. It is a tribute to men who faced dangers, who grappled with difficulties, and who achieved success. Let us hope that in keeping alive the story of the past it may serve to inspire the men of the future with confidence and courage to meet the perplexities and duties which await them.

At the conclusion of Mr. Crapo's remarks the Mayor, on behalf of the city of New Bedford, formally accepted the statue, and as the city's chief executive expressed the appreciation and the gratitude of the municipality.

Remarks by the Mayor:

“I accept in behalf of the people this grand monument in the firm conviction that those of the days to come will have for it the regard and appreciation which now possess us.

“It is symbolical of deeds of fearless endeavor and typifies the sterling worth of resolute manhood in an important work of life, happily combining the toil of industry with the romance of adventure.

“I believe it to be no part of exaggeration in forecast or over-statement in prophecy to proclaim as a certainty that this pile will find an enduring respect in the hearts of the people in whose control it is from this hour to remain.

“For them and in their name, I thank you.”

With the statue formally offered in its complete shape, and formally accepted by the city, the remainder of the programme was devoted to several short addresses, in which men prominently identified with different phases of the city's interests, added their words of tribute. Edmund Wood, president of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, was the first of the speakers.

Remarks by Edmund Wood:

The event of this day with its appropriate exercises writes a new and interesting page in our city's history. But this event today also recalls and commemorates the history of this community fifty and one hundred years ago. We are proud of our past and its glorious record of heroic achievement, but too seldom do we show our appreciation of what we owe to those who left us this inheritance.

The Old Dartmouth Historical Society, which I represent here today, was founded in order to foster a reverence for the past, to preserve the records of those early days, and to keep the virtues of our forebears from falling into forgetfulness. The generous thought that inspired the gift which culminates today had its source in that same spirit of gratitude to those who created this goodly heritage.

No more appropriate subject for a Memorial Statue could be found to typify and epitomize the founding of

our prosperity. New Bedford's chief—its only industry, was the whale fishery, and it was a wonderful developer of the sturdy character of our people. In the mariner it called for bravery, hardihood, and endurance. In the successful merchant it demanded speculative boldness, patient confidence, and ability to endure with an equal mind the most extreme variations of fortune. It broadened the horizon of our local life and liberalized its thought. We knew that the earth was round, that there were other peoples, other religions, other civilizations.

The spirit of exploration which even now breaks forth in successive Arctic and Antarctic expeditions, was satisfied by this constant pursuit of the whales into unknown and uncharted seas.

The spirit of adventure appealed strongly to the youth and the extensive fleet which sailed from this port in the most successful days of the industry was recruited with no difficulty. Schiller's lines express the enthusiasm of the time :

"Youth with thousand masted vessel
Ploughs the sea in morning light."

The stories of the chase and hunting adventure have always had a charm and fascination. Some of the earliest attempts at English literature and the still earlier songs of the minstrels recounted the perils of the hunt and the excitement of the killing. This must be inbred in our very nature, for the refinements of a more complex civilization have not eradicated it. The popular magazines of today have frequent tales of the wild boar hunt, of shooting gigantic elephants and fierce lions, and tracking man-eating tigers in the jungle. But our fathers and mothers in the township of old Dartmouth were not surfeited with magazines. In their place they revelled in the frequent recital of the more intimate personal experiences of a father or a brother on the other side of the earth. Shipwrecks among the Fiji or Society Islands, blood-thirsty fights with Madagascar pirates in the Indian ocean, or the losing

of a whole boat's crew by the lashing flukes of a hundred-barrel whale in his fearful dying agony.

No wonder the boys went to sea when twelve or fourteen years old, or became stowaways on a whaler when parental permission was refused.

But already these familiar tales are becoming traditions and modern whaling with its bomb guns and other new appliances has lost many of the dangers that gave it its chief charm.

In those early days the young whaleman of New Bedford experienced a thrill of excitement far keener than that of the modern hunter for great game with his magazine rifle.

I have always been thankful, and I am doubly thankful today that as a New Bedford boy I had a chance to go on a part of a whaling voyage and to see for myself the chase, the capture, and the trying out, before the sad decadence of this our earliest industry. It makes one feel that he is a truer son of New Bedford and a more appreciative heir to all this rich inheritance of industrial romance. I can to some extent share the keen enjoyment of our surviving whalemens, on this occasion when we commemorate the heroism of those early days by this worthy monument of enduring bronze.

I can recall now those long days of cruising in the North Atlantic in 36 degrees—46 degrees with four vigilant lookouts at the mastheads and the mate also on the foretopsail yard. I can today almost feel the thrill of that moment when suddenly there came from aloft the welcome cry of "There she blows." The immediate bustle on deck, the lifting of the heavy tubs of towline into the boats, the rigging and unsheathing of the harpoons, the lowering of the boats, the barefooted sailors following down the sides of the slips, the long fierce pull with the oars, and then as the boats neared the whale, the sudden leap of the boatsteerer to the bow. He poises his harpoon, and as the boat slides almost on to the very back of the whale, he darts it deep into the huge carcass. "Stern all," and the boat draws back

from the awful danger, but not before the boatsteerer with desperate energy grabs his second harpoon and plunges it alongside of its fellow.

With a fearful swish the whale is off. The line tightens through the length of the boat and spins round the loggerhead with lightning speed. After several minutes the officer in the stern snubs the line and gives the whale the weight of the boat. Forward it darts with amazing velocity. Down on the floor of the boat sink the green hands of the crew who are seeing their first whale, and hug the thwarts for safety—so terrified that even the curse of the mate is unheeded.

But the whale is slackening his speed. He spouts blood and is severely wounded.

Slowly the boat is pulled up to the whale. The mate now changes ends with the boatsteerer. He seizes the long and deadly-looking lance, and as the prow touches the side of the whale, he churns it for one dangerous instant into his very vitals.

Now comes the flurry—the death agony—and woe to the boat that is found within range of those mighty flukes, as they lash the white water fifty feet into the air.

The dead whale is proudly towed to the welcoming ship, and fastened alongside by the fluke chains which are led up through the hawser hole. The famished crew are fed, and as a special reward gingerbread is added to the regular bill of fare of lobscouse. But to the man who first sighted the whale is given a five dollar gold piece.

Now the scene of activity is shifted to the deck of the vessel. The cutting stage is rigged out over the water and the whale, and the heavy falls are led from the main top to the windlass. The officers on the stage cut with the sharp spades, and as the huge blanket pieces are hoisted toward the main top, the blubber is peeled spirally from the carcass. The fires are lighted under the try-works forward and burn fiercely, fed by the oily scrap. On through the night the work continues. It is a weird

scene with the flames belching with fierce tongues high above the short chimneys,—the red glare reflected on the close-reefed sail aloft, and above all the noise and bustle sounds the droning, dragging chantey of the crew as they toil unceasingly at the windlass.

All this vivid scene is suggested by this beautiful figure of the typical whaleman at the supreme moment of his life. After weeks of tedious cruising and keeping constant watch, the whale has been sighted, the boat has reached him, and everything,—the success of the voyage even, depends now upon his splendid nerve and vigorous manhood.

He deserves this commanding public statue. He has waited long for this recognition. It has come, and the tribute is worthy and adequate. Not only we who are living today, but generations yet to come, who study our city's romantic history, will hold in grateful honor, the name and memory of the generous giver, and praise his wise and just appreciation of what this community owes to the New Bedford Whaleman.

In introducing Rev. Charles S. Thurber, chaplain of the Port Society, Mayor Ashley paid a glowing tribute to the work for mankind which that organization has done, and is doing, in this city. "This association, one of the oldest in the city," he declared, "has done more for the uplift of mankind in New Bedford than any other association or society."

Remarks by Rev. C. S. Thurber:

It affords me much pleasure to be privileged, on this brilliant occasion, to give a very brief history of the New Bedford Port Society, and a sketch of the splendid work which they have accomplished since their organization took effect in 1828, or 85 years ago.

The object of this society was to protect the rights and interests of seamen, and to furnish them with such moral, intellectual, and religious instructions as the

Board of Managers should deem practicable. Article four of their constitution reads as follows: The business of the society shall be conducted by a president, two vice presidents, a treasurer, recording secretary, and eleven directors; who shall constitute a Board of Managers. The first election of officers of which we have any record took effect at the annual meeting held June 7th, 1831. Their names in part were as follows: President, Thomas Rodman, Jr.; vice presidents, Sylvester Holmes, John Howland, Jr.; recording secretary, Jonathan Tuttle; corresponding secretary, John H. W. Page; treasurer, Jared Parkhurst.

At this stage of our history it was highly important that some moral, intellectual, and spiritual reform should be brought to pass in the interests of New Bedford seamen; in consideration of the fact that at this time there were 150 ships sailing from this port, whose crews aggregated 7,500 men, and many of these men "like sheep scattered abroad, having no shepherd." They were considered as a distinct caste, or order of being, whose follies, since they could not be corrected, had to be endured. As one of the earlier chaplains presented the situation by saying: "The moment the sailor sets his foot on shore, all the means for the gratification of his fatal instincts are poured upon him in every form of allurements. He is immediately insane by intoxicating drink; and in this condition is surrendered over to the tender mercies of men and women, whose only subsistence is derived from plundering him of his earnings; and who, themselves, are destroying both soul and body by ministering to his vices." To improve these conditions the managers of the Port Society established the Seamen's Bethel, which was dedicated and opened in May, 1832, under the pastoral care of the Rev. Enoch Mudge, who, from that time became, and continued to be, the unwearied, kind, judicious, and Christian friend of seamen. To him they were pearls that came from the ocean; jewels fit to adorn the Saviour's crown, and "what hath God

wrought," through his ministry of love at the Bethel, for it is frequently noted that the Bethel was filled to overflowing with the men for whom it was founded. This ever vigilant chaplain also found, that in sickness the sailor often suffered from neglect and want. Therefore, several benevolent gentlemen united with him in representing to some of the ladies of this place the necessity of having arrangements made for the comfort of the sick. Their sympathies responded to the call, and after deliberation, in 1833, one or two meetings were called, a constitution was presented, adopted, and signed by about forty ladies who were organized under the name of the Ladies' Branch of the New Bedford Port Society. The first object of the Ladies' Society was to prepare suitable garments for the sick, bedding, mattresses, pillows and grave clothes; jellies, fruit, and other little comforts. At this time many of the boarding houses were so wanting in neatness and every comfort, so noisy and disagreeable, that the task of this committee was no light one, and sometimes it was impossible to make the patients comfortable except by a removal. There was no hospital, no receiving house for them, and much vigilance was necessary to secure proper care and attention. From this time on, the subject of a boarding-house for seamen which should be in all respects a "home" for the sailor on his return to port continued to engage the attention of the Board until September 17th, 1850, when through the Board's untiring efforts and the kindness of Mrs. Sarah R. Arnold, in connection with her husband, the Hon. James Arnold, the former mansion of her late father, William Rotch, Jr., was donated as a "sailor's home," together with land eligibly situated, on which to place it, and funds to remove it and fit it for occupancy, adding even the care of fitting it upon its new foundation. The donation was made still more valuable by the condition annexed, that at least \$3,000 should be added from other sources to furnish the "home," and to enable the society to open it under favorable auspices. On Jan-

uary 17th, 1851, the committee reported that the sum of about \$3,800 had been subscribed, of which \$3,000 had been paid into the treasury. Mr. Arnold then delivered the deed of the "home" and lot, duly executed by him and his good wife. The whole expenses of repairing the house, making some required additions, putting up some fences, and furnishing it throughout, was about \$2,200. Of this sum nearly \$1,400 was paid from the funds of the society, and almost \$800 was contributed by the Ladies' Branch.

From this statement it can be seen how deep was the interest felt by the ladies in this movement, and yet we are occasionally asked why we should do so much for our seamen? Let me repeat what you have doubtless heard before. New Bedford is now, and always has been, at the head of the whale fishery throughout the world. Your magnificent public buildings, your private dwellings, typical of the "palaces of kings," are all the product of that form of industry, by means of which this wealth has been acquired. New Bedford owes almost every dollar of its wealth to the tireless energy of its sailors. Its hardy men have scoured every ocean where a whale could be found; and our beautiful city is the product of their labors. It is said that Lowell, Fall River, and Lawrence were built by spindles, but New Bedford was built by harpoons. These men have spent the greater part of their lives amid hours of loneliness and seasons of homesickness. They having left their dear ones in the distant land of their birth, at sea they were comparatively alone; no mother, no wife or sister near to whom they could tell the story of their sufferings. Some of these men came back to you crippled, scarred, and infirm for life, and many of them in need of your tender mercies. The New Bedford Port Society has never forgotten or neglected to provide, as best it could, for our industrious and loyal seamen. Nor have the people of our beloved city, during the 85 years that our society has existed, ever withheld from us their benevolent spirit in our time of need. We

have labored and they have helped us, we have asked and they have freely given, in the interests of these men; and from their hearts, if living, or from their silent tombs, whether they rest in country church-yard, or beneath the shadow of the deep blue sea, the spirits of the invisible heroes arise and hover as a cloud of witnesses about us on this important day, as we dedicate to their sacred memory this lasting monument. Speaking with a more universal language than ours: This, "ye have done in remembrance of me." To none do these words, applied to the living and the dead of our heroes, appeal more strongly than to our venerable citizen, Hon. W. W. Crapo, the generous donor of this memorial stone; this token of his love for his city, and the men who made it. This work for the people will show clearer and clearer, as the years pass on; by this he is building a monument more lasting than granite or metal.

But, let us all, by good deeds, kindly words, and by showing human sympathy for all mankind, also build a monument that will live until memory is gone and time shall be no more. Then when the "earth and the sea shall give up their dead" on that last great "Day of Judgment," the thousands whom you have comforted will say "We were a-hungered, and thou gavest us the bread of mercy; we were thirsty for friendship and thou gavest us companionship; we were strangers and thou gavest us a home; we were sick from hardship and exposure, and thou didst visit us; we were in the prison house of moral and spiritual despair and thou camest unto us;" and the King will surely say, "Inasmuch as thou hast done this unto the least of these my brethren, thou hast done it unto Me."

Representing the Board of Trade, which was formed years ago in the office of a pioneer whaling firm, was the president of today, P. C. Headley, Jr., and he paid tribute to the Yankee ships from New Bedford which carried the Stars and Stripes to every corner of the world.

Remarks by Mr. Headley:

Mr. Chairman, Honored Guests, and Fellow Citizens:

Perhaps it was nothing more than natural that the Board of Trade, as a representative civic body, should be asked to participate today in the dedication of this memorial to the whaling industry, given by one of New Bedford's best known citizens. However, the significance and appropriateness of that request were not so apparent at first. I recall the story of the Irishman and Scot who were vying with each other in connecting their countries with great events:

"Ah, weel," said Sandy, "they toor doon an auld castle in Scotland and foond many wires under it, which shows that the telegraph was knoon there hoondreds o' years ago."

"Well," said Pat, "they toor down an ould castle in Oireland, and begorra there was no wires found undher it, which shows that they knew all about wireless tel'graphy in Oireland hundreds av years ago."

My hearers, I assure you there is a much closer relationship between the Board of Trade and the whaling business in New Bedford and that its claims are more relevant than those of either the Scot or the Irishman; for, not only was this board created in the office of one of the pioneer whaling firms here, but it began solely for that interest, and was organized in the spring of 1884 by the honored George F. Bartlett, our own Mr. Phillips, and John F. Tucker. A little later Mr. Frederick Swift joined the ranks and the board was launched and he was made its first president. All these gentlemen represented leading shipping firms. The board was established for the specific purpose of abolishing the policy of seerecy in the prices received for whalebone and oil, as it was customary for competitors to conceal the prices of their sales. This seerecy worked to the disadvantage of the business as a whole and the Board of Trade opened its doors as a sort of exchange for this industry and tried to wipe out star

chamber methods. An open book of prices was kept in the Board of Trade rooms and each dealer entered the price of his latest sale of oil or bone. Soon disaffection arose among some who clung to secrecy and who went on the principle of the man who said he "made a fortune minding his own business." Then the Board of Trade changed its direction for wider service and invited all merchants and individuals to join in the development of the common interest and helpfulness throughout the entire business life of the city. So the Board of Trade is peculiarly interested in this memorial to the great industry which brought this city into prominence and carried the name and fame of New Bedford from ocean to ocean; in fact, wherever the sea-roving man has turned his ship's prow; and, gentlemen, perhaps I may be pardoned in mentioning the additional pride I take today in representing this board, because that same I. H. Bartlett, in whose office the Board of Trade originated, was my grandfather.

We are also proud of our city's progress and reputation in the great industry of cotton manufacturing, but still we fondly cling to the viking lore and the dauntless courage of those former days, the days of the "Ancient Mariner," when that adventurous and enterprising spirit sent forth our ships over the face of the earth to gather from the far away climes the treasures of the deep in the face of every peril. We do not begin to appreciate the magnitude of their undertakings. Charts of the Arctic seas were most unreliable then and far from correct today, and the compass is so affected by polar magnetism that it cannot be depended upon, and navigation in those waters was largely intuitive and the rest common sense or uncommon sense. Beset with wintry blasts and frigid temperature and ever threatening fields of ice, they cruised about in unknown and unknowable waters. Thus bereft of accurate calculations, the American whaleman braved every conceivable peril, enduring long exile from home, in the face of almost certain death. No wonder these

intrepid sailors earned the reputation of being the most skillful and daring navigators in the world. Moreover, they probably carried the American flag into more inaccessible places than were ever reached by the flag of any other nation. Only last fall, in the harbor of Fayal, the Stars and Stripes were seen flying from nearly a dozen whaling vessels, a sight impossible to duplicate in any other department of our American shipping, about the only evidence we have of a merchant marine.

That same spirit which carried our city to the front rank in this bold quest has also made her the first in fine goods and the second largest cotton manufacturing city in the United States, third in the state and fourth in New England, and fifth on the Atlantic coast in immigration. Nor has she been far behind in glass and silver ware, copper, twist drills, eyelets, and her cordage works from which the rope on yonder harpoon was made. She has many other large lines of business, including lumber and coal, as well as oil refineries known all over the world. New Bedford is of international fame in two great industries, besides a peer of many in other trades. But she began her famous career on the world's waterways. Therefore, as president of the Board of Trade, which was the offspring of the whaling industry, I bring to you, sir, the donor of this gift, the gratitude of the past and the present, and pledge our co-operation in immortalizing the ancient landmarks of fame and honor and in ever seeking this city's advancement for "God and Fatherland."

The last speaker of the forenoon was Otis Seabury Cook, one of the trustees of the Library.

Mr. Chairman, Mr. Crapo, Ladies and Gentlemen :

The New Bedford Library Trustees are customarily a docile and unobtrusive body. The average citizen rarely hears of them. At their board meetings they respectfully listen to the advice of the Librarian, and

are wont to assent promptly to his suggestions. Thus they perform their duties in a manner generally commended by Mr. Tripp in his annual reports.

Today, however, being assured of hearty sympathy, the trustees take advantage of an opportunity to appear for themselves in public.

To participate in these proceedings is a real privilege. The occasion marks an epoch in municipal events. It is an example and may become a precedent. The good spirit and generosity that have prompted the donor in giving the people this remarkable statue deserve magnanimous emulation.

Here is an impressive reminder of earlier activities. It cannot fail to inspire. Rugged and fine, wrought with bold and delicate skill, and cast in lasting bronze, there is portrayed a character of venturesome self-reliance and determination. It seems to be an almost animate presentation of the idea, as the classic motto has it, that there must be "A dead whale or a stove boat."

The conception is accurate. It is correct historically. While the man's figure itself is properly slightly heroic, the demonstrating model, Richard L. McLachlan, has been a New Bedford boatsteerer and first mate of whalers, and the pose is that of experience. The boat was produced from one that has had actual service, and may be found in the rooms of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society. It was measured and photographed and drawings of it were made under the artist's directions in the interest of exactness. The same museum furnished also the original of the harpoon. From our own Library was obtained much assistance.

In this Library is the world's greatest collection of papers, books, and pictures relating to the industry and the romance of whaling.

Bela Lyon Pratt has used these means and sources of information with earnest enthusiasm. His accomplishment is a distinction for the community.

This man, born in Norwich, Connecticut, in 1867, in early youth gave evidence of superior talent, and now ranks as an acknowledged leader among American sculptors, a worthy successor of Saint Gaudens.

Since 1892, when Pratt returned from the Ecole Nationale des Beaux Arts in Paris, where he was awarded three medals and two prizes for excellence, he has been an instructor in modelling at the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. He is an associate member of the National Academy of Design, a member of the National Institute of Arts and Letters, and of many societies of scholars and men of genius.

He designed two colossal groups for the water gate of the Peristyle at the Columbian Exposition; and of his various other notable successes there might be mentioned six large spandrel figures for the main entrance to the Library of Congress; the bronze statue of the "Andersonville Prisoner Boy," erected at Andersonville, Georgia, for the State of Connecticut; groups at the front of the Boston Public Library; the recently dedicated statue of Edward Everett Hale in the Public Garden at Boston; and numerous well known works of art through all of which the lustre of his name has been enhanced.

May his present achievement stand for generations to regard as a credit to himself, an honor to the liberal patriotism of William W. Crapo, and a fitting monument to the abiding fame of the City of New Bedford.

A selection by the band brought the formal exercises to a close.

Appreciation

From the Morning Mercury, New Bedford:

There was unveiled yesterday, on Library Square, the memorial to the race of whalers who brought fame and fortune to the city and who contributed the example of bravery and energy which created a spirit among the men of New Bedford that has led to the prosperity of this neighborhood.

The scene and incidents on the square yesterday will be long remembered in this community. The oldest of the whaling captains who is left, Captain George O. Baker, sturdy as most at seventy-six, but with whitened hair and some of the afflictions that the burden of years must bring, lifted the covering from the bronze figure of Youth at the prow of the whaleboat with the harpoon poised, ready to hurl.

It must have seemed to the aged captain like a glance backward when he stood with a glorious future before him, "In the very May morn of his Youth, ripe for exploits and mighty enterprises."

The life of this captain who drew aside the covering, was typical of those whom the statue commemorates. He had gone to sea at the age of thirteen, had become a captain, and on his first voyage as commander his ship was captured by the Shenandoah and burned. The Confederate captain, Waddell, promised him a high place in the Confederate navy if he would forswear his allegiance to the Union, which he of course refused. Then he was landed at Ascencion and led the army of the savage king, with a sword tied about his wrist with a ropeyarn, "fighting for a king against the common peo-

ple, notwithstanding I have always been a Democrat," as the captain puts it. For this service the king offered to adopt him, but the captain put aside the crown and resumed whaling. So the story runs. We only touch upon the captain's career here to show the experiences that came to the whalemens whom the statue personifies.

An attempt was made to get the captains together. The little group that gathered reminds us how few are left. So it was time that those who remember the whaleman and his deeds should pay the tribute the memory deserves, and it is a source of gratification that the First Citizen of New Bedford, William W. Crapo, was prompted to do this admirable thing in the manner that must fill every citizen with satisfaction.

In selecting Bela Pratt for the task, Mr. Crapo picked the best man available and the result shows that the sculptor found inspiration in the subject and possessed the genius to execute it in a fashion which will make it among the noteworthy achievements of the sculptors of this period.

The harpooner is the figure that deserves to be perpetuated in a composition commemorating the whaleman. It is the harpooner who makes the voyage. His task is the difficult one. When the boat lowers to go upon a whale, custom requires the harpooner to pull the foremost oar. He is not only expected to pull his oar to the uttermost, but he is expected to set an example of superhuman activity to the rest, not only by incredible rowing but by repeated loud and intrepid exclamations.

Mr. Pratt chose for his harpooner such a young man as were found aboard whalers in the palmy days, young fellows of stalwart frames, fellows who had felled forests, and dropped the axe to snatch the whale lance—fellows all athirst for gain and glory in the fishery. The New Bedford whaling master in the olden days wore, when ashore, broadcloth and fine linen, big seals for watch fobs and silk hats. He was pointed out by the boys as a captain, no less a lord than the captain of a Mississippi steamboat. The whaling merchants lived in lofty man-

sions, in brave houses with flowery gardens, "one and all harpooned and dragged up hither from the bottom of the sea."

The sculptor, then, was to fashion a youth, brave, hot and bold looking to become the captain of a whaleship, with all the power and glory that the position meant in that day. That is the youth who is at the prow of the whaleboat in the statue. His face is as handsome as a Praxiteles. It is a strong face, revealing that the imminent instant has arrived. The figure is superb and the pose is grand and free in a way that manifests the genius of the sculptor. We feel that here is a resourceful man, "one who," as Mr. Bullen has said, "could whittle with a jack-knife a quadrant, tear off the rim of a compass focal for an arc, break up a five-cent mirror for a speculum, and with such crude device, fight his way back to home and life."

The whaleman is hard to satisfy when it comes to the details of his trade and the task of the sculptor has not been easy. The bronze whaleman faced a critical crowd yesterday. The old sailors grudgingly admitted, as a general thing, that the position of the harpooner, if he was throwing his lance into a bowhead, was all right. They didn't think the dimensions of the boat were accurate. The harpooner should have more room "foward." The curve of the bow of the whaleboat was not exact. The ribbon on the boat is too wide. The line was not properly rigged in running through the bow direct to the harpoon. "If the harpooner is striking a bowhead he must be in the Arctic, and he ought to have a shirt on," commented one who said he was a whaler, but who may have been a sea cook, or a son of one. "Maybe he's harpooning a sperm whale in the Atlantic," said a bystander. "He wouldn't go out in a boat without his shirt if he was after sparín," was the reply. "He'd burn his back."

The difficulty with most of the critics is that they are unaware that there is such a thing as artistic license. The prow of the boat is purposely foreshortened be-

cause in looking up from the position the statue occupies, the figure would not be visible if this was not done. Mr. Pratt made an effort to find what a whaleman habitually wore. He was told they insisted upon straw hats for the summer season, any old hat at any other time. Old prints showed a harpooner, in one instance wearing a plug hat. The sculptor found nothing in the slop chests of the outfitters that could be effectively reproduced in bronze. So he chose the bareheaded figure, naked from the waist up, and the choice unquestionably assists the suggestion the statue was designed to make. There is authority in Melville, if any was needed, "As for Fedallah," we read, "who was seen pulling the harpooner oar, he had thrown aside his black jacket and displayed his naked chest with the whole part of his body above the gunwale, clearly cut against the alternating depressions of the watery horizon."

These criticisms recall that when Robert Swain Gifford, William Bradford, and Van Beest painted the picture, "The Chase," they mounted it on a card with a six-inch margin and invited the whaling masters to write criticisms upon it. The entire margin was covered and there was no agreement among them. The sculptor need not be concerned. It is like a sailor to grumble. In his heart every son of them is filled with top-gallant joy and delight at the inspiring consummation of the work, a feeling in which the citizens of New Bedford join.

From The Evening Standard, New Bedford:

Elsewhere in this newspaper will be found a full account of the unveiling of The Whaleman statue on the grounds of the Free Public Library, with the eloquent and modest address of the giver, and the appreciative words of the speakers who appeared for the city and for the various organizations which were appropriately represented on this occasion. When the gift was an-

nounced, some months since, this newspaper endeavored to express its own pleasure and the community gratitude that at last a long-cherished hope was to be given visible form. This afternoon we can say no more than to revive a few of the words which came when the conception of The Whaleman, as is now displayed in the centre of the city, was new. So today is repeated:

* * * * * * *

Mr. Crapo's brief address, we venture the suggestion, needs one emendation. Nowhere in it does he refer to himself. The personal pronoun singular is signally distinguished by non-appearance. That he put himself out of sight in his tribute to The Whaleman was modestly graceful. But this community ought never to forget the giver of this emblem of achievement and this inspiration to endeavor.

From The Evening Standard, New Bedford:

Whenever the Observer looks out of his window he generally sees some one looking at The Whaleman statue. At this season of the year, when vacationists and tourists visit this town in larger numbers than many of our people realize, there are many of these people who come round to look at the bronze mariner, and a large share of them, it may be said parenthetically, go into the Public Library. The Observer likes to see them do that, for the Library's interior is one of the most attractive in the country. Almost every one who visits it says so, and it is gratifying to have so many visitors from abroad coincide with the conviction, even if it is partly founded on home pride, of residents of New Bedford who have some qualification for judging. Perhaps some day the librarian and his assistants will repeat to the people of this city a few of the many very gratifying compliments of this magnificent Library of theirs.

But to go back to the statue. It is a great favorite with the amateur photographer. Travellers with elaborate outfits spend a long time in studying lights and shades and angles and backgrounds and distances before they focus and expose. Others pull out vest pocket cameras and snap recklessly from all points of view, lest haply they might get one good picture. The other day a substantial looking gentleman lined up his wife and three children in front of the statue, and carried off a proud souvenir. At any rate, let us hope his shutter worked and that he didn't forget to turn the film. Some visitors look at the statue for a long time and from every side. Others are satisfied—apparently well satisfied—with one glance. There are times when the pantomime is obvious and amusing—as, for example, when a husband and wife come together and when one wants to study the work and the other doesn't, and whose every pose would make an excellent model for the bored. The boys usually want to look inside of the boat; and that is, on the whole, an evidence of their alert interest. It is far better than having no interest at all. Occasionally there comes along a group whose conversation the Observer would like to overhear. The other day two boys, eight or ten years old, home boys, barefooted with trousers rolled up, with their hands behind them, stood at a respectful distance for a long time, and talked. They were serious about it, too. That much could be seen from the window even if not a word could be heard. One would be safe in wagering that the kids were not debating the technique. Another was the trio composed of two Italian men, evidently laborers, and an Italian woman with a red handkerchief over her head. Their inspection of the statue was also minute, and their talk was also serious. The Observer is disposed to believe that their comment would have been worth hearing. So, perhaps, are the comments of men who point and wave their arms. But mostly these latter are knockers—and they are rapidly getting to be in the minority.

APPENDIX I

THE WHALEMAN

Written by John Spollon and first published in *Fibre and Fabric*,
May 14, 1903.

One evening in May I was watching the play
Of the wild restless waves rolling in from the bay
At the breezy south end of the city,
And listening, meanwhile, to the ditty

Of a mariner aged and gray:

“From where towered the masts of barques, schooners, and
smacks,

I turn to see rising those factory smokestacks;

And, I tell you, I think it a pity

That the Whaleman so hardy and gritty

Is rapidly passing away.

“Look! Two arms of the sea half enclose the place.

It resembles to me the despairing embrace

Of a mistress cast off and forsaken,

Who clings with affection unshaken

To a lover grown cold and estranged.

I remember the time when her favors were sought;

But they had to be purchased, and dearly were bought

By the bold rough-and-ready sea-ranger,

No wonder he turned to a stranger:

Picked up a new love and is changed.

“Like the osprey he fared with his wings to the breeze;

Every danger he dared where his prey he could seize,

And no other land was the poorer

(Than this statement nothing is surer)

For the riches he brought to this shore.

When the earth yielded oil it but altered his toil,

And he built the first factory on New Bedford soil.

While his city grows bigger and bigger,
 In cotton he cuts a new figure,
 For his work as a whaleman is o'er.

“Yet I heartily wish his old shape could be seen,
 In marble or bronze, mounted here on the green,
 As a Founder the town should remember
 Till Sentiment's last glowing ember
 To ashes has faded away.

Let his monument stand, with his harpoon in hand,
 Sturdy son of the sea who dragged wealth to the land,
 In defiance of hardship and danger;
 For in this town he'll soon be a stranger,”
 Said the mariner aged and gray.

John Spollon, a mill worker, was born of Irish parents in Camden, New Jersey, about 1858. His career on the sea began when he was sixteen and continued for nineteen years, during which period he twice rounded Cape Horn and the Cape of Good Hope and four times crossed the Atlantic.

APPENDIX II

THE MODEL

When Bela L. Pratt was asked by William W. Crapo to model a statue of a whaleman, to be erected in this city as a gift to its people, Mr. Pratt's first problem was to procure a suitable model.

“I must have a real boatsteerer,” was Mr. Pratt's declaration; “a man who has himself been long familiar with the harpoon.”

Accordingly search was instituted to find an American whaleman of the Captain Ahab type. Augustus G. Moulton of J. & W. R. Wing Company was asked if they could produce one, and responded by offering as a model a native of the Cape de Verde Islands. The whaleman of the statue, however, was to typify the early Yankee courage that sent New Bedford's sailors across

all the oceans of the world, spearing cetaceans for oil,—so the outfitters were asked to find a boatsteerer of the old type,—the type made famous in “Moby Dick” and other stories of the sea.

Then it was that Richard Lewis McLachlan of this city, a veteran of the sea, and who for ten years was a boatsteerer, was proposed. Mr. McLachlan was, accordingly taken to the rooms of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, where he posed in the bow of a whaleboat with poised harpoon for photographs for Mr. Pratt. The pictures pleased, and the boatsteerer was summoned to Boston.

Mr. McLachlan first went to sea in 1873 as a cabin boy in the merchant service, voyaging from Portland, Oregon, to Queenstown, Ireland, round the Horn. Then again he went voyaging from New York to the West Indies; on many other voyages he sailed to the western ocean, continuing in the merchant service until about 1880.

It was about the year 1885 that the boatsteerer went whaling along the Pacific coast to the Arctic sea. His first trip was on the bark *Rainbow*, Captain Barney Cogan, and on the very first trip the savage ice of the north rushed upon the *Rainbow* and shattered her great sides. “Stove in the ice off Cape Thaddeus,” said he, in telling the story, “we were picked up by the bark *Fleetwing*.”

He afterwards shipped on the bark *Hunter*, engaged in Arctic whaling, and finished the season on that vessel. During the Southern California boom, he was engaged as a longshoreman for the Broadway Steamship Company. Then he returned to whaling again in the Behring Sea. In the employ of the Pacific Steam Whaling Company, he spent many winters in the Arctic. In later years, he shipped, after serving for ten years as boatsteerer, as fourth mate on a vessel belonging to J. & W. R. Wing Company to Japan; then as second mate on the *Alice Knowles*, Captain Earle, to the Indian Ocean.

His last voyage was on the schooner Valkyria, which he left at Fayal in October, 1911. The Valkyria was in the whaling business, and Mr. McLachlan was her chief mate.

“The bottom is out of whaling,” declared the boat-steerer, with a despondent shake of his head. “It does not pay to go a’whaling any more.”

APPENDIX III

CONSTRUCTION

In The Evening Standard appeared the following account of the work on the statue as it gradually developed:

Hon. William W. Crapo proposes to give to the city of New Bedford a memorial to the New Bedford whaleman in the form of a statue to be set up, as he suggests in his letter, on the grounds of the Free Public Library. As Mr. Crapo relates, Bela L. Pratt of Boston, one of the chief among living American sculptors, has designed the model for the statue from photographs of which the illustrations given herewith are reproduced. It should be understood that at present the statue is in the stage which the sculptor calls a sketch, and though, in the main, this sketch may be accepted as prefiguring the completed statue, it is subject to more or less change with respect to details. As the sketch now stands in the studio, it is a clay model say two feet or more high, built upon a pedestal. It is still the object of the artist’s manipulations, mostly with the purpose of giving delicacy of completion to the conception, with probably no great alteration of the main idea, and possibly none at all.

As to the conception of The Whaleman, that was Mr. Crapo’s thought. His purpose was to commemorate and typify the New Bedford whaleman, not as a reminiscence, but as a living human being. So, in accord-

ance with Mr. Crapo's desire, the artist has fashioned the presentment of the boatsteerer in the pose of throwing the harpoon from the whaleboat's bow. He stands for the whaling industry at its very prime, a young man, daring and ambitious, full of expectation to make the whale fishery a route to realizing all his dreams of life success. That, in brief, is the meaning of this statue.

The statue, the boat in which it stands, and the conventionalized waves will be of bronze. The figure will be a little larger than life size, its anticipated position as related to the observer making that treatment most effective. The pedestal and the background will be of granite, of a color and texture to match, as nearly as may be, the granite of the Library building. On the face of the background, that is, the side toward the statue, will be carved a suggestion of sea and sky, with sea birds floating on the wing, and at the lower right hand corner, this quotation from "Moby Dick": "A dead whale or a stove boat." The other side will bear an inscription phrased very like the words used in the first paragraph of Mr. Crapo's letter to the mayor: "In honor of the whalemens whose skill, hardihood, and daring brought fame and fortune to New Bedford and made its name known in every seaport on the globe." The top of the granite background will be somewhere from twelve to fifteen feet above the sidewalk level, making the entire structure of dignified and impressive proportions. Two locations have been proposed—one on the northeast corner of the Library grounds, and the other directly in front of the steps. That, however, is a matter to be settled later.

It is not probable that the statue can be placed in position before next year. While the sculptor will advance the work with a reasonable celerity, most of the processes cannot be hurried. So that a year and a half may easily elapse before the memorial will be set up in this city.

APPENDIX IV

SITE FOR "THE WHALEMAN"

"The Whaleman," Bela L. Pratt's monument, the gift of William W. Crapo to the city, will be placed in the grass plot at the northeast corner of the Library lot, the site which Mr. Pratt considers the best for the monument.

A special meeting of the Board of Trustees of the Free Public Library was held Thursday evening to consider the location for the monument, and the members present were in accord with the decision of Mr. Pratt.

Jireh Swift, Jr., was elected chairman of the meeting, in the absence of the mayor, and the members present were Messrs. Milliken, Goodspeed, Kennedy, and Cook. Henry H. Crapo attended the meeting, also Nat C. Smith, architect of the building.

Dr. Kennedy stated that he preferred the north corner, and Mr. Milliken asked if Mr. Crapo had any preference.

Mr. Crapo stated that his father had no personal preference, preferring to leave the matter of the site to Mr. Pratt's judgment. He said that since Mr. Pratt's recent visit to view the possible locations, he had asked him to express his opinion, and he read the following letter that he had received to present to the trustees:

Jan. 18, 1913.

Board of Trustees, New Bedford Public Library,
New Bedford, Mass.:

Dear Sirs:—After my consultation with you and our experiments with the dummy arranged for the testing of the site of the proposed monument given by Hon. W. W. Crapo to commemorate the whalemens of New Bedford, I am more firmly than ever convinced that the proper site for said monument is that which I originally selected, namely, on the north corner of the plot in front of the Public Library building. There might be some

slight change necessary in the arrangement of the paths, but on the whole I consider the site satisfactory and trust that it may be adopted by you.

Most sincerely yours,

BELA L. PRATT.

Mr. Crapo said further that his first impression was that the south corner plot would be the best, but he had been convinced that the north corner was better than the south. As to the central location, he said that if the background was cut down in order to locate the monument directly in front of the building it would have to be entirely obliterated, and the figure would have to be set against the steps.

He said that Mr. Pratt's idea of location on the north lot is to lift it about 18 inches, and to have the boat headed northeast so that the harpoon is directed out towards the corner of Pleasant and William streets.

The site suggested met with the approval of all the trustees present, and it was voted to adopt the sculptor's recommendation. The trustees agreed to leave matters of detail as to exact location, foundation, and drainage connection for the boat with Nat C. Smith, the architect of the building, who was pleased with the site selected for the monument.

APPENDIX V

THE WHALEMAN'S MOTTO

A STIRRING TUNE TO WHICH THE BOAT WAS PULLED

The motto "A dead whale or a stove boat!" to be inscribed on the background of The Whaleman statue, is from a stirring passage in Herman Melville's story of whaling life, "Moby Dick, or the White Whale." Captain Ahab, master of the Pequod, having one wooden leg, was walking on the deck. The recital goes on as follows:

“It drew near the close of day. Suddenly he came to a halt by the bulwarks and inserting his bone leg into the auger-hole there, and with one hand grasping a shroud, he ordered Starbuck to send everybody aft.

“‘Sir!’ said the mate, astonished at an order seldom or never given on shipboard except in some extraordinary case.

“‘Send everybody aft,’ repeated Ahab. ‘Mast-heads, there! Come down!’

“When the entire ship’s company were assembled, and with curious and not wholly unapprehensive faces, were eyeing him, for he looked not unlike the weather horizon when a storm is coming up, Ahab, after rapidly glancing over the bulwarks, and then darting his eyes among his crew, started from his standpoint; and as though not a soul were nigh him resumed his heavy turns upon the deck. With bent head and half-slouched hat he continued to pace, unmindful of the wondering whispering among the men; till Stubb cautiously whispered to Flask, that Ahab must have summoned them there for the purpose of witnessing a pedestrian feat. But this did not last long. Vehemently pausing he cried:—

“‘What do ye do when ye see a whale, men?’

“‘Sing out for him!’ was the impulsive rejoinder from a score of clubbed voices.

“‘Good!’ cried Ahab, with a wild approval in his tones, observing the hearty animation into which his unexpected question had so magnetically thrown them.

“‘And what do ye next, men?’

“‘Lower away, and after him!’

“‘And what tune is it ye pull to, men?’

“‘A DEAD WHALE OR A STOVE BOAT!’

APPENDIX VI

AROUND THE STATUE

That the statue of “The Whaleman” given to New Bedford by William W. Crapo and unveiled Friday has

fired anew the interest of the people here in the romance and the adventure of the old whaling days has been pretty apparent during the past two days, and within that period thousands of people have paused in their journey through the centre to admire the figure, and thousands have been the stories handed down, and perhaps well-nigh forgotten, which have been rehearsed again in front of the statue.

Mr. Crapo said during the course of his remarks at the exercises Friday that he hoped the stories of the old whaling days would never die in this community, and it seems as if no one who ever heard a whaling story or ever read a whaling story here but what the statue recalls it to him. Old citizens who knew whaling masters and sailors in their day have stood in front of the statue during the last few days, and in talkative frame of mind have chatted away with perfect strangers, recounting the tales that they had heard themselves from the lips of the "blubber hunters." And then there is the next generation, some of whose fathers or uncles or grandfathers went to sea and the stories have come down to them. And then, last of all, perhaps, are the youngsters to whom the adventure appeals with tremendous force, who stand in groups with mouth hanging wide open, literally swallowing every word that is said, and turning in wonderment from story teller to the heroic figure of "The Whaleman."

Assuredly one has needed to stand near "The Whaleman" but a few moments at any hour of the day or evening since the statue was revealed to learn that there has already been a lively awakening of interest in the old whaling days, and to learn that the stories of those romantic days will not die so long as the statue stands there.

And some of the yarns are wonderful yarns that are spun in the shadow of this upstanding boatsteerer. In many instances names have been forgotten by those who tell the tales, or perhaps simply a last name is given, but the nub of the story is always there, the in-

cident which has been handed down which typifies the skill and the daring and the courage.

One man stepped up yesterday morning, looked at the statue awhile and then became critical—the work had awakened in him some thought at least.

“Look at the chest muscles and the arms of that man,” he remarked. “I don’t believe there ever was a sailor went out of here with a development like that, allowing, of course, for the heroic size of the man standing here in bronze.”

He was half talking to himself, but around the statue all conversation becomes public property and a bystander was quick to answer. He is a rigger, or at least was a rigger years ago and he knew whalemens. “That may be so true, to your way of thinking,” was his retort, “but I would hate to see you in the grip of some of the arms that have hurled irons from New Bedford boats, just the same.”

And then this brought up a discussion of the feats of strength that have come to the present generation in stories of the sea. One man told of a mate who in sheer desperation when his newly shipped boatsteerer missed on three successive attempts on different days to make a strike, hustled to the bow of the boat, and grabbing the man around the waist hurled him bodily overboard, and then putting about picked him up and carried him back to the ship, scared, but far from drowned, and taught a lesson the moral of which—never try to throw a bluff—he doubtless never forgot so long as he lived.

And then ensued a discussion as to how far a boatsteerer ever hurled an iron; of how often they struck and of how often they missed; of how many hours they remained out in the boats, how fast a whale ever towed them, and how long they’d stick to a 100-barrel “fish” before they would cut a line and give up the fight. All night battles, according to the stories, were common occurrences, as were also stove boats, which formed an interesting question for discussion.

One man told of a boat's crew in which his uncle pulled an oar, of which five out of the six men could not swim a stroke, and never learned during the whole voyage. This boat, of course, got stove, for it was either kill the whale or stick until you found yourself overboard. This boat's crew went up to lance the whale and the whale's flukes, descending, splintered the boat. The captain was forward and twisted the lance. He was one of the five who could not swim, or at least never was known to. But he saw another boat one hundred yards from him, and according to "uncle's" story, re-told today in front of Bela Pratt's statue, the "old man" simply walked through the water, with his prodigious strength propelling him so fast that when the rescuing boat dragged him aboard he wasn't wet above his waist.

And then there were stories of boys, "My grandfather" or my "grandfather's brother" who ran away to sea and finally trod the quarter deck as master of his own ship, stories of foreign islands and strange peoples—and perhaps it is little wonder that "kids" listened for a time, studied the face of the statue a little, and then hustled for the library to get "Moby Dick" and the yarn of the white whale.

There were an endless array of questions, asked by everybody of anybody who happened to be near enough to listen, or skilled enough in whaling lore to answer. People wanted to know what the ropes were, how heavy the iron was, why there was a "hole" in the bow for the rope to run through, why the man with the harpoon was called the boatsteerer, and a thousand and one other queries that were indicative of the interest which has been revived in the old-time industry. And people whose interest is aroused usually persist until they learn.

And then, too, to prove that there was a regular "gam" in progress, there was an argument yesterday afternoon between two old whalemens as to the respective prowess of one of them. Whaleman Number One sailed out on the Reindeer as boatsteerer years ago, and

he and his friend in the argument agreed that the statue was an admirable bit of work. "Makes me think of the time I put an iron in a right whale, the first I struck on the Reindeer. We were right on top of her when I let go, a straight up and down strike, and down went the whale. We ran out two tubs of line, stayed by all night, and in the morning hitched a tackle on and tried to get her up. Ropes broke and we lost her." Thereupon the argument ensued as to whether one rope or both snapped, and as Whaleman Number One was of the opinion that the log was down in the rooms of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, down the street they went to look up the records.

APPENDIX VII

From The Evening Standard, New Bedford:

That the statue of "The Whaleman" should be unfavorably criticized was inevitable. The criticism, however, usually concerns itself with the technical accuracy of the design, not with its general effect, its artistic excellence, or the pleasure it affords the beholder. Some minds could never approve a picture of a battle, be it painted ever so beautifully, if the commanding general had one too many buttons on his coat. Seafaring men are notoriously fussy about details of this sort. A spirited marine, with a ship speeding along, under full sail, would be damned in their eyes if the shrouds were not so accurately drawn as to serve as a working plan to a rigger. "These people," said one observer, "didn't want a picture of a ship—they wanted a map." And all because the whaleman in the case of this statue in front of the Library, observes it under the fatal handicap of an expert knowledge of the business the bronze figure is set to symbolize. The man who never went whaling and never balanced a harpoon is

not burdened with any such knowledge, and to him the creation of Mr. Pratt is satisfying.

* * * *

It has been objected that the whaleman holds his harpoon the wrong way. What it might be asked is the right way? It is inconceivable that there should be just one way of holding a harpoon, just as it is that there should be only one way of holding a pen. It must be remembered that before modelling the whaleman the sculptor had for a model a man who had been to sea and who is rated as one of the best boatsteerers hereabouts. He held the weapon HIS way, even if it was not the way of some other harpooner. Should some sculptor design a statue of a ball player at bat, and model it from so distinguished a batter as Mr. Cobb of Georgia, critics would doubtless come forward to complain that the pose was all wrong because Mr. Wagner of Pittsburg did not bat that way. In the case of a batter, the thing to do is to get a hit; in the case of the whaleman it is to get the whale; and somehow or other, looking at this figure of Mr. Pratt's, with shoulders, arms and chest of a Hercules, we have no doubt that the imaginary whale just ahead of him is as good as caught.

* * * *

“Another thing,” said an old whaleman who had been telling what a bad, bad statue it is, “who ever saw a whaleman without a shirt? I’ve been whaling for thirty years and have made twenty voyages, and I never saw a boatsteerer with his shirt off.” “Where did you go whaling?” he was asked. “Mostly in the Arctic,” was the reply.



OLD DARTMOUTH
HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 39.

Proceedings Annual Meetings

Held December 30, 1913, and March 30, 1914.

THE FIRST SETTLERS OF DARTMOUTH AND
WHERE THEY LOCATED

By HENRY B. WORTH



PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

ANNUAL MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

DECEMBER 30, 1913

Both President Edmund Wood and Secretary William A. Wing of the Old Dartmouth Historical society retired from office at the tenth annual meeting of the society. Both of them declined to stand again for re-election. Mr. Wood has been president of the society for the past seven years, while Mr. Wing has served as secretary for a number of years. Herbert E. Cushman was elected president of the society, to succeed Mr. Wood, while Henry B. Worth was chosen secretary.

The annual reports of the society were read, and any lack of enthusiasm at the beginning of the meeting was replaced by satisfaction when it was announced that the money had been raised to clear off the debt of the organization.

In opening the meeting, President Wood spoke as follows:

"We are met tonight to hold the tenth annual meeting of this society. This meeting should have been held

some time ago but for several reasons it has been deferred. Things have not been going as well with the society for some time as they ought to go. The directors have held several meetings and believed before the annual meeting was held that certain changes ought to be made and certain plans outlined for the conduct of this society. It is not necessary at this time to argue the advantages of having an association like this in this community. This has already been amply proved. We all remember the enthusiasm with which this society was inaugurated, the interest displayed in the idea by such a variety of people and the large membership that we were able to secure. Everyone was congratulating the community on the fact that the formation of the society had not been longer delayed. Historical documents of value, and sources of information in regard to the history of old Dartmouth were fast disappearing. Relics of great historical value which had remained with

some of the old families for many, many years were becoming scattered. Much work has been done and we can see around us in this building the proud evidences of it.

"But all such interest in every community is liable at times to flag. We have the ebb and flow of the tide. This society has had its flow and its ebb. There is no use of disputing the fact that the interest of many of those who did the most in the early days of this society has been waning and new people have not been sufficiently encouraged to take up their work and do their share in carrying forward our well recognized mission. It has become evident to many of us that certain changes should be made, new blood should be introduced for some of the offices. At one of the last meetings of the directors a nominating committee was appointed to bring in a list of officers to be balloted for this evening. That committee has reported and the nominations will be read later when we come to the election of officers.

"Another matter has worked against the sustaining of interest in our work and that is that the society has been going behind financially. We have a beautiful building, well adapted to our work and affording every facility for our meetings, for every social function which might be arranged for and for the storage and display of what has now become a very valuable collection. Representatives from other societies from time to time visit us in New Bedford, and grow envious of our good fortune as they walk about in these rooms and wish they had equal facilities. But with the acquiring of this building, the munificent gift as you remember of one of our members, have come along with it expenses of maintenance and repairs. We have also thought it best to have a curator in charge and in attendance much of the time. All these expenses have been a little more than the annual fees paid by the membership have amounted to. The result has been a constantly increasing deficit; amounting at last to several hundred dollars.

"Experience has shown that it is ill-advised and almost impossible to inaugurate a new regime and enlist the interest and services of new people in a venture, about the neck of which hangs a financial deficit. It was evident to the directors that before this annual meeting should be held and before even new plans could be made and new officers chosen these old bills should all be paid and the society pronounced free from debt. Through the liberality of some of the

members, who have already in times passed showed themselves the generous friends of the society a sufficient amount has been subscribed and paid in to entirely wipe out this deficit; so that tonight it is a satisfaction to be able to announce that we are free from debt and this incumbrance does not stand in the way of the inauguration of a new and active career for the society.

"At the annual meeting it has never been the custom to have research papers read by the different members but to confine our action to hearing the reports from the different sections into which the work of the society has been divided, and then to have the annual election. These reports will now be read."

The reports were as follows, all of which were accepted and ordered placed on file:

Report of the Directors.

Tonight we hold our tenth annual meeting and our society must needs record the death of the following members:

Charles W. Agard, Mrs. George L. Clark, Walter Clifford, Anna J. Donaghy, Betsey W. Kingman, Sarah M. B. Potter, (life), Cynthia J. Read, (life), William Reynard, Arthur Ricketson, Mary Roberts, Mary P. Rugg, Marion Smith, Thomas B. Tripp, Anna G. Wood.

In the deaths of Mr. Agard and Mrs. Smith we lose two of our staunchest friends. They gave of their time, possessions and encouragement and surely we must feel their loss.

Your secretary in such goodly company as our president and treasurer, withdraws from his position, feeling that at the end of a decade a new organization cannot but be beneficial; as a life member the period of his interest in the society's welfare is defined.

We are fortunate in having our Mr. Worth to come to our aid, a member who has done more than anyone else for this society.

Respectfully submitted,
William A. Wing, Sec.

Treasurer's Report.

William A. Mackie read the treasurer's report covering a period of 18 months showing receipts of \$2655.43 and payments of \$2291.19, leaving a balance of \$364.24 with one unpaid bill of \$293.53.

Publication Section.

A case of maps in the society has a bit of history to disclose. The first map shows the original layouts of

land in our present New Bedford in 1710—of especial interest are the lands of Joseph Russell, Manassel Kempton and Benjamin Allen.

The next in chronological order is a map of New Bedford drawn by order of the selectmen in 1795—by act of the general court.

The selectmen being Walter Spooner, William Tallman, Isaac Sherman.

Of particular value are the layouts of the roads and the locations of the mills—in those days merely grist mills, saw mills and fulling mills.

The map of New Bedford in 1815 by Gilbert Russell shows the residences of that period and emphasizes the preference of people in those days and perhaps today, of living south of Union street.

A map of the village of New Bedford in 1834 tells of that great increase in streets from South street on the one side—beyond North street on the other and west as far north as Parker street.

In 1847 New Bedford had a map by E. Thompson and we possess the copy owned by the first mayor, the Honorable Abraham Hathaway Howland presented to us by his daughters.

It has become a place of buildings pictured by the artist, the Commercial bank on this very site is of perhaps the most local interest to us.

Contrasted with the map of 1913 these simple little plans are almost pathetic and teach a lesson we may well apply of small beginning and quiet but steady growth.

Respectfully submitted,

William A. Wing, Chair.

Photograph Section.

We are fortunate in acquiring two photograph portraits from oils by Jarvis. They are of Dr. Foster Swift (1760-1835) and his wife Deborah Delano (1762-1824). Dr. Swift for in those days they were fortunate enough to have a Dr. Swift here to whom they could look for help in truth and reverence and admire, even as we have been so blessed here in our own day.

This Dr. Foster Swift came to Dartmouth recommended by no less a personage than General George Washington. He was instrumental in establishing the first medical society in this vicinity. The meetings being mainly convened at Taunton as a convenient centre.

He became one of the first army surgeons at this establishment after the War of 1812.

The very beautiful wife of this very handsome man, for the portraits show them, was of the Delano family of old Dartmouth, which has given more

than one favored descendant to the world.

Their daughter Mary married George Washington Whistler, father of the artist and their daughter was Deborah Delano Whistler, wife of Sir Seymour Haden. So well known in art musical circles in London, so our portraits link us with George Washington, the early medical profession, the army, art and music here and abroad. A wide circle centering in Old Dartmouth.

Respectfully submitted,

William A. Wing, Chair.

Museum Section.

One of the most interesting features of our annual meetings have been the very able reports of the secretary of our museum section, but tonight you are doomed to a great disappointment, as you will have to listen to one by its chairman, which I assure you will be only commendable for its brevity. First, I will call your attention to a few of our acquisitions from:

Mrs. Duff.

Mrs. Rebecca Hawes, from the estate of William Read.

Miss Sarah Howland Kelly and Mrs. Caroline Kempton Sherman, a sword, which formerly belonged to Silas Williams Kempton, master's mate on the Santiago de Cuba. The sword was carried by him into Fort Fisher. He was drowned March 23, 1865.

Late Mrs. Anthony of Fairhaven, portrait of her father, Captain Cox.

Miss Church and Mrs. Frank of Fairhaven, gift and loans of portraits and other articles formerly in the Church family.

Walton Ricketson, ancient wooden settee which belonged to his father, the late Daniel R.

Mrs. William H. Bartlett, draft box, bowl, etc.

Bequest of late J. Howland, Jr., portraits of his father and mother. These are now, through the courtesy of Mrs. and Miss Howland, in our possession.

Once more we are indebted to one who takes a keen interest in our society, Mrs. Delano Forbes of New York and Fairhaven, the gift of five pieces of Chinese wood carving, of the Foo Chow period, representing: Goddess of Morning, Stork of Good Omen, The Wrestlers, The Warrior, The Priest.

And now I would mention a gift, not to our society, but to the city of New Bedford, ours none the less for that reason,—the statue of The Whaleman. The gift of our first president and most honored member, Mr. Crapo. I am sure you all join me in the wish that he were with us at this meeting.

I cannot but believe that the coming year will be one of great activity for our society but we must not depend entirely on our officers and our committee. The individual members must recognize his or her duty to the society and their opportunities. In the address of Isaiah Thomas, the first president of the American Antiquarian society in 1814, he made the following suggestions.

It will not be expected that we should individually devote a very considerable part of our time to the affairs of this institution, yet without injury to himself, every member may do something for its benefit. There are various ways in which we may contribute to its prosperity. Some may bestow a little personal attention to the management of its local concerns.

Others may devise projects by which its interests and its usefulness may be essentially promoted and others may collect, as convenience and opportunity permit articles for its cabinets. This programme for the individual members, laid out a century ago is as applicable now as it was then. I hope you will consider it. There are some to whom such considerations make no appeal, but they constitute a class that has no legitimate place in a historical society.

The right kind of people for us are those who believe with George Meredith "that all right use of life, and the one secret of life is to pave ways for the firmer footsteps of those who succeed us," and we have in this rejuvenated society of ours so large a company of such men and women that I cannot but feel assured that the Old Dartmouth Historical Society has nothing before it but permanency and success.

Respectfully submitted,

Frank Wood, Chairman.

Educational Section.

The educational department invited, through Mr. Keith, the teachers to visit the historical rooms Oct. 5, 1912. A number of teachers responded and since then several classes have spent profitable hours looking over the collections.

Captain Avery met the pupils of Miss Loring's room at the Donaghy school and gave them a very interesting talk about whaling, May 26, 1913.

Miss McAfee's, Oct. 23, 1912, class sent an appreciative note to the chairman of the educational department, thanking her for their instructive afternoon.

Miss McCarthy of the Jireh Swift school took her class Jan. 28, 1913.

April 12, sisters and pupils from St. Anthony's school.

Miss McAfee, June 24.

Miss Winchester from Middle street, as a reward for perfect attendance, Oct. 23, 1913.

The New York state educational department sent a man to take photos of the rooms for use of the division of visual instruction of public schools of New York state.

Respectfully submitted,

Caroline Jones.

Henry B. Worth reported for the research section saying that owing to the fact that the quarterly meetings had not been called for some time that it had caused a cessation in the activities of the section, but that ample entertainment would be provided along the usual lines in the future.

The following officers were elected:

President—Herbert E. Cushman.

Vice presidents—Rev. M. C. Julien, George H. Tripp.

Treasurer—Frederic Howland Taber.

Secretary—Henry B. Worth.

Directors—William W. Crapo, Walton Ricketson, Edward L. Macomber, (3 years); Abbott P. Smith, (2 years).

George R. Stetson spoke of the educational advantages offered by the rooms of the society to children and said that he was very glad to hear the report of the educational section and thought that it would impress upon some people the great field of usefulness in getting the children interested in our local history. He hoped the usefulness of the rooms might be extended.

George H. Tripp spoke of the museum as an educational factor, and said that he thought that the pupils of the public schools here have recently taken up a study of the history of New Bedford, and he stated that there was no better place to find out about it than right in the rooms of the society.

Mr. Tripp thought the society should in some way show its appreciation for the large amount of work done by the retiring secretary Mr. Wing and he moved a vote of thanks. Miss Watson and Mrs. Clement Swift spoke of the valuable work done by Mr. Wing and the society extended the vote of thanks.

A vote of thanks was also extended to the retiring president, Mr. Wood.

The meeting adjourned.

Annual Meeting, March 30, 1914

About 50 members gathered for the annual meeting of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held last evening. The meeting was a short one, owing to the fact of the meeting held last December, but the president, Herbert E. Cushman, said that it was desired to get back to the old order of things, and the meeting was held according to the by-laws.

The first order of business was the report of the secretary, Henry B. Worth, which was as follows: "To the members of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society:

"According to the by-laws of this organization, the annual meetings should be held in March, but the meeting which should have been held a year ago was deferred until December 30, 1913, only three months ago. As soon as the present officers were elected it was discovered that by some inadvertence the annual period covered by the dues had been extending from July to July. This was an error as the period should be from one annual meeting to the next, or from April first to April first. The executive board ordered the correct dates to be restored and those whose dues according to their receipts were paid up to next July, have observed the discrepancy. This will be adjusted and hereafter the mistake will disappear.

"Soon after the last meeting it was considered necessary to make certain repairs and changes in the building on Water street, which rendered necessary the closing of the building during the remainder of the winter.

"The present membership comprises 619 annual members and 33 life members, of whom William M. Butler is the latest addition. The fee for life membership is \$25 and is deposited in the permanent fund, only the income from which is used.

"Your attention is again called to the number and value of the society's publications. These include 38 pamphlets, comprising over 670 pages, with numerous pictures of houses and persons, together with essays and articles on many topics relating to the inhabitants of ancient Dartmouth and their history. These are being sold at a nominal price which is practically the cost of printing. They are in constant demand in all the libraries of

the eastern United States where the local history of this section is an item of interest. A list of these pamphlets has been printed, giving synopsis of contents for free distribution.

"This society in its widest activity is one of the most useful educational institutions in this vicinity. The records of the past are collected and arranged, and appear in part in these publications; but at the rooms of the society are exhibits which show in wood, iron and ivory what were the tools, implements and handiwork of the New Bedford whalers. Without exaggeration these are the most valuable collections in the world. The arrangement is so picturesque that it appeals quickly to school children, while a student in the art of carved ivory or one desiring to understand the process of obtaining oil and bone, will find the most realistic presentation that can be discovered on land. Nowhere else will your annual contributions be productive of more certain educational benefit."

The report was accepted and placed on file.

The report of the treasurer, Frederic H. Taber showed cash on hand \$364.24; dues received \$252, a total of \$616.24. The bills paid amounted to \$407.30, leaving a balance on hand of \$208.94.

The report of the nominating committee, George E. Briggs, Alexander McL. Goodspeed and Elmore P. Haskins was made, and on motion Frank Wood cast one ballot for the following list of officers:

President—Herbert E. Cushman.
 Vice President—Rev. M. C. Julien.
 Vice President—George H. Tripp.
 Secretary—Henry B. Worth.
 Treasurer—Frederic H. Taber.
 Directors, three years—Warren Kempton Reed, Oliver F. Brown, John C. Tripp.

President Cushman, who was down on the program for an address, spoke as follows:

"It is rather unusual to have two annual meetings so near together as has this society, but it seemed wise to the directors last year to postpone holding the annual meeting of 1913 until December, when you were good enough to elect the present board of officers.

"Since that time the directors have had several interesting meetings, and have made many plans for the future. It seemed better that we should hold our annual meeting for 1914 at the time fixed by the bylaws.

"Looking back over our records, we find that the Old Dartmouth Historical society was organized in a paper read by Ellis L. Howland before the Unity club in Unitarian chapel, January 17, 1903. The formal organization was in May, 1903, and the first general meeting June 30, 1903 at Grace House. It was incorporated in 1905, and the work that has been accomplished during that time has been very gratifying. The present board of managers find itself with a comfortable home, well equipped and well arranged, with a museum that is of great value.

"This work has been done by men and women who have been earnest in their efforts to establish on a firm basis, this society, and we commend and thank them for their interest. No one can visit the Old Dartmouth Historical rooms without realizing how valuable a collection we have, and how interesting. This must be well cared for, and ought we not to feel it is simply a nucleus of a larger collection? They have done well to arrange for the exhibition which had to do with the old days when our city was noted for its interests in whaling. We must not forget, however, that in a few years, what is now being done in New Bedford, will be history, and we must make and keep in line, a record and a collection of that which today is making New Bedford well known throughout the world, its various industries and its activities in all directions. We solicit from all, such as they have, which will make our exhibit stand high in our community. Our good friend, Frank Wood, who has charge of the rooms, will be glad to confer with any one who has that thought in mind.

"We realize that there are in New Bedford probably a great many articles—probably more than in any other city in the United States—specimens and items that would be especially interesting. We must therefore have our friends realize that this institution is permanent, and that any such articles will be cared for as they would like, if they desire to present them to us.

"The other day it was my pleasure to be at the rooms, and looking through the front windows on the wharves, with the oil casks and the whaling ships there, and looking out of the rear windows at the Mariner's

Bethel, one felt that they had stepped out of the New Bedford of the new day, and into the old, and are we not fortunate to be the possessor of quarters located, it seemed to me, in the midst of that for which it stands, that is, the historical part of our city, and its historical interests.

"One cannot go into the rooms without being inspired with the fact of how important it is to our city that there has been brought together our present collection.

"What I have said well applies to the rooms and the exhibits. Do not forget that with these surroundings comes also the opportunity for the research work, which is accumulating valuable records, the educational work, which will awake and maintain the interests of the younger generation, and the social side, which brings good fellowship among its members.

"I now desire to make a personal appeal to every one of you.

"It has been my pleasure during the last few years, to visit some of the old historical societies in other parts of our state, and of New England, and it has been interesting to note the pride that the members had in belonging to such an institution. Many of these societies have been organized many years, and not only one generation, but many, have had a part in their upbuilding.

"We in New Bedford are fortunate in being among the beginners of the work which we are trying to do. We want as many people as possible to have a part in that work.

"It was interesting to hear one of our good friends say, in the northern part of the state, that their fathers and grandfathers had belonged to their society, and they spoke of it with pride. We want as many of our own people to be able to hand down this same saying to their descendants. It is therefore important that we have as many people in our city who are interested in this kind of work, as is possible, as members.

"In looking over the list of members, now about six hundred, I find many names missing that would seem to us ought to be there. The question is, have they been asked to become members? If not, would it not be well for us to see that they have the opportunity, and are you not willing to do your part and help increase the membership by asking at least two or three people during the coming year to ally themselves with this society? If every one would ask and obtain two or three members, we would have a list that would be valuable, and our income would be assured. The

more people that we have interested in our work, the better results we can obtain, and we do feel that now is the time for this administration to increase the membership and interest in our society, and what can do it in a better way than to have people feel they are personally a part of it, and interested in it?

"It is our purpose again to open the rooms on April 8th for a reception to the members by the officers and directors, and it is hoped that all will come and renew their enthusiasm and interest in the good work."

George H. Tripp said that he noticed one interesting remark of the president that should be taken note of and that we should not dwell too much on the past of the city, but should have something to represent the present activities of our city. He spoke of several cities he had visited where they have industrial museums,

and suggested that the society could take up this work, and have on exhibit some of the fine fabrics that are being made here today. He said that he admitted it was a little difficult to get the goods, but he had secured for the library some goods from agents in New York who said they could vouch for the fact that they were made in New Bedford. Mr. Tripp said that the talk about a mile of cloth being made a minute in this city, should be something to be proud of, but there should be some samples of the fabrics that could be exhibited and not only of the cloth, but of the twist drills, the glass ware, and all the other products made here.

Secretary Worth spoke of the visit made by the school children under the auspices of Miss Jones of the educational section, and how interested the children were in the objects they saw.

“The First Settlers of Dartmouth and Where They Located”

By Henry B. Worth

In colonial times when a new settlement was to be established, explorers were sent in advance to investigate the region, and determine where it would be most advantageous to locate the residential center. They would build some sort of rude structure either a log cabin, a stone house, or a cave dug in the hillside and this would suffice for a habitation until they were able to erect separate dwellings for each family. This common house was also used for the storage of property that required protection. It is now proposed to indicate who were the first settlers in ancient Dartmouth, when they arrived, and the locality which they selected as their first abode.

The grant made by Plymouth colony to the thirty-six original purchasers took place in March, 1652, and no settlement had then been formed. The situation at that date, in reference to the Indians, is important to consider. If a circle be described with the Fairhaven bridge as a center and a radius of about twenty miles in length, it would pass through all the nearest English settlements of that period. Where the Buzzards Bay canal joins one bay with the other was the village of Manomet. Northwest was Namasket, which is now the town of Middleboro; further west was Cohannet now known as Taunton, and still further in line of the circle was Rehoboth and other places on Narragansett Bay. None of these villages were strong enough to render any assistance to the settlers on the Acushnet river. An additional menace was the fact that within this circle was a line of Indian villages that would surround any settlement at Cushena. The shellfish at Sippican and the famous fishing grounds at Apponegansett attracted the Indians to these shores in the summer, while the lakes and forests at the north furnished all they required for winter homes. During the King Philip war, in Dartmouth alone, one hundred and sixty Indians surrendered to the English, and it plainly appeared that the Red Men constituted a desperate element of danger in that region.

Under such circumstances the only safety for the English would be to

flee to some stockade near the shore, where they could remain until assistance arrived from Plymouth, or they could escape upon the sea. Appreciating these possible contingencies, the pioneers generally selected as the location of the residential center of sea coast towns, a place where there was a good spring, convenient fishing and where the land would provide food and shelter and a place in which they could locate their habitations, which could be defended against attack or which would furnish safety until they could escape to other communities. An ideal location would be a neck connected to the mainland by a narrow isthmus in order that the approach could easily be watched. Purcuatest neck in Tiverton, was an early settlement and contained in a high degree, all the necessary requirements. Sconticut neck had no satisfactory fresh water supply nor land suitable for cultivation, and was not selected.

A legend has been printed that in 1652 one Ralph Russell came to Dartmouth and established an iron forge at Russell's Mills. As it can be demonstrated that this event was an impossibility and that Ralph Russell never appeared in Bristol county, this tradition may be dismissed without discussion.

Preparation for a new town was accompanied by activity in land transfers. Consequently, the logical course will be to commence with 1652 and examine the recorded evidence, until a point is reached where there is indication that some settlement was in contemplation or had been formed. By an examination of all ancient documents, it is clear that the inhabitants of Dartmouth before 1700, came from three well defined sources.

1. There were the thirty-six original purchasers, but only three settled in Dartmouth, although the descendants of nine others were later among the inhabitants. None of these came to Buzzards Bay before 1660.

2. A vigorous persecution of Quakers on Cape Cod induced some of the Kirbys, Allens, Giffords and Wings to remove to Dartmouth, but this crusade did not begin until 1657 and

the first deed taken by any of these persons was dated 1659.

3. Owing to the crowded condition of the island of Rhode Island, the men of Newport and Portsmouth were compelled to seek homes elsewhere, and finally a great number moved to Dartmouth; but the first recorded indication of this tendency occurred in 1657, and the first deed was taken in 1659.

Consequently there is nothing to show any English occupation before 1659; but during that year a few deeds appear that indicate an approaching activity. Ralph Earle and Daniel Wilcox of Portsmouth, purchased considerable interests in Dartmouth, which was the beginning of that great movement from Rhode Island. But the most significant conveyance was given by the proprietors to John Howard in which they "Do freely and absolutely give and grant ten acres of land adjoining the river, twenty rods wide, bounded on the north by a great rock near the head of the spring." This seems not to be a sale, but a transfer upon some different consideration, and Howard was not one of the proprietors. It is said that he had been a member of the household of Captain Myles Standish; in 1637 with others freely offered to go against the Pequots; later became an inhabitant of Bridgewater where he was one of the first military officers, surveyor of highways, and a most influential citizen. He was the ancestor of the great Howard family of Bridgewater. At that period a new community in its early career always needed the assistance of some executive individual who was familiar with warfare among the Indians. The value of the services of Captain Myles Standish will never be over-estimated, and no more suitable person could be selected for this important service in Dartmouth than one who had been a pupil of the Puritan captain. Here, then, was a practical preparation for a settlement. It is not possible to state the exact relation of Howard to the new community, but he was not required to move from Bridgewater nor become a permanent resident of Dartmouth; and after 1663 his name is not found in the annals of the latter town. His land remained in possession of his family until transferred by his descendants in 1708.

It also appears that in 1660 the government at Plymouth ordered their agent to collect the taxes of James Shaw and Arthur Hathaway at Cushena. As shown elsewhere, the entire amount to be collected was thirty shillings, and the next year the amount was the same, while in 1662 it was seventy shillings. The tax in 1663

is not recorded, and in 1664 the inhabitants were constituted the town of Dartmouth. An analysis of these figures supports the conclusion that the tax was ten shillings from each man, and was not based on the value of property. If this theory is correct, then there were three residents in 1660 and 1661, and in 1662 the number had increased to seven. As Howard never withdrew from Bridgewater, he was probably not the third man who was assessed in 1660 and 1661. This was probably Samuel Cuthbert who is known to have been a resident during the latter date. The seven residents in 1662 were Shaw, Hathaway, Cuthbert, Spooner, Samuel Jenney, John Russell, Thomas Pope or Ralph Earle. John Cooke was in Plymouth probably as late as May, 1662.

So having determined who were the first settlers and that they probably arrived at Cushena in the spring or summer of 1660, the remaining part of the problem is to determine where they located their preliminary habitation. The hint given in the Howard deed will point the way to the conclusion. By tracing the title of that land it appears to have been situated on the east side of the river opposite to Brooklawn park. The rock ledge in the southeast corner of the park at the roadside, extends under the river and appears again above the surface along the road leading to Fairhaven, where in several places it has been cut down to the road level.

A short distance south of the brook, and about three hundred feet east of the highway, the ledge abruptly terminates and at its foot, issues a spring as attractive and picturesque as when first discovered by Howard, Shaw and Hathaway two hundred and fifty years ago. Albert B. Drake, the well known civil engineer, states that it is the finest natural spring on the east side of the Acushnet river, and the only one that comes from the solid rock. Starting from a distant basin in the ledge, its waters never freeze and never cease to flow. Under the designation of "Wamsutta Spring," this water supply is utilized for commercial purposes. The region was diversified with convenient forests and land for cultivation. Where Howard's brook joins the river, until recent years was a choice natural oyster bed, and other shellfish were abundant and within easy reach. At its junction with the river, Howard's brook bends to the north and forms a neck of about eight acres. On account of the high ground it would be easy from this place to observe the approach of Indians, even when some distance away, and escape by water would be convenient. The locality was far

enough up the river to be free from the influence of boisterous storms, and there was ample water of sufficient depth for a ship-yard to be established across the river at Belleville a century later.

The final step is to determine whether this neck was the place selected as the first abode of the settlers. It was set off to Samuel Cuthbert, and in 1661 conveyed by him to John Russell; 1666 Russell to John Cooke, and in 1686 Cooke to his son-in-law, Arthur Hathaway. In his will, dated 1694, Cooke seemed to have assumed that he retained an interest in the neck, and this he gave to his daughter Sarah Hathaway and refers to the land as "Near the burying-place." By inheritance the neck came into possession of Antipas Hathaway, who in 1752 transferred it to his brother Jethro, using the description: "Ye olde burying point in Acushnet village bounded by Howard's brook."

During the periods when they owned this neck Cuthbert, Russell and Cooke were the leading residents of Dartmouth, but each owned a homestead farm some distance away. The same year that Cooke conveyed the neck to Arthur Hathaway the town of Dartmouth voted to build a town house east of Smith Mills at the head of the Slocum road.

In an obscure corner of an old record in Plymouth in penmanship that is difficult to read, is the copy of an agreement executed in February, 1663, by John Howard and John Cooke, as follows: "The neck hath a way allowed to it by those appointed to lay out the land and it was approved by the company; now with the consent of the neighbors at Acushena, John Howard and John Cooke are agreed that the way shall begin at a heap of stones and extend to the top of the hill, and the width shall be from the heap of stones to the brook; and as it is at present incapable for a way, without labor, we are to make it capable on equal terms. And there shall be only one foot way into the neck from James Shaw's stile straight into the neck."

This agreement is one of the most suggestive documents relating to early Dartmouth. It was among the first official acts of the proprietors; a highway proposed by the committee, approved by the owners, laid out by Howard and Cooke, accepted by the inhabitants, and then built by two men representing the proprietors. No public improvement could be established with more precision, and none has been found until modern times laid out with such legal formality. All this public machinery would not

have been set in operation to benefit any private individual. At every step the public directed the proceedings and hence must have been the beneficiary. The inhabitants were to use the way in going to and from the neck, where they engaged in some common concerns. It was the first layout of a public road before 1700. When Russell transferred the neck to Cooke the description included "A way which was allowed by the purchasers and laid out by John Cooke and John Howard." It remains to determine the conclusion to which these facts logically lead.

The town of Dartmouth comprised over one hundred thousand acres and was assigned by the colonial government to those men who arrived at Plymouth before 1627. As they all had their residences in other parts of the colony, it was not expected that they would remove to this territory. It was merely a dividend in land, which cost them nothing to buy and nothing in taxes to hold. For seven years there was no demand for the land and no transfer was made. Then purchasers appeared and the proprietors were ready to sell. To bring the section into the market it was essential to institute some preliminary survey and establish a convenient center, so they secured the services of John Howard and paid him in land. During the year 1659, the exploring party selected the locality at Howard's brook for the new settlement, the place combining the required advantages. Then it became necessary to provide utilities that would be needed. Their own habitation was probably a log or stone house on the neck, or a cave dug in the hillside. The line of travel from New York to Plymouth was by water up Buzzards Bay, across the isthmus at Manomet where the canal is being built, and then by water the remaining part of the journey. Most if not all communication east and west from Dartmouth was presumably by vessels, and hence a landing would be required at Howard's neck. Then they provided for a road from the neck to the great Indian path, which extended from Lakeville to Sconticut neck. The allotment of homesteads was one of their earliest transactions. Beginning at Howard's brook and extending north to the head of the river were three farms, assigned respectively to Samuel Cuthbert, William Spooner and Samuel Jenney. From the brook south, were the farms of John Howard, James Shaw where the Laura Keene place was afterwards located; then Arthur Hathaway down to the south line of the town of Acushnet. After a considerable interval, John

Cooke's farm was on the hill where the Coggeshall street bridge ends in Fairhaven, and John Russell and Ralph Earle settled at South Dartmouth. Sometime later the north end of the neck was devoted to a burial place, but a landing place and a burial ground do not adequately account for the layout of that road. Landings, burial places and private buildings or structures used as garrisons, would not occasion a road built with so much particularity.

The loss of the proprietors' record for the first sixty years after the colonial grant and the fact that no town records have been preserved previous to 1673 has obliterated most of the early history of this settlement. But if these lost records could be consulted they would probably tell substantially the following narrative. That a town house and meeting house, possibly one building for both, was placed on the neck for the use of the inhabitants, in which to hold its public meetings, civil and religious, and this would adequately explain the object of this formal layout. It has been assumed that the inhabitants held their public meetings in dwelling-houses, and while this is possible it is more likely that a different arrangement was made in accordance with the prevailing custom. At that date single apartment dwellings were all that could be obtained, and these would not be convenient either for town meeting or religious congregations. The high respect and veneration felt by the Pilgrims for such institutions would not permit them to neglect erecting at once a building suitable for public gatherings. A common building on the neck, devoted to such purposes, would account for the remarkable interest taken by the townspeople in that short road down the hill to the neck, where they could attend town meeting or hear John Cooke preach. The neck was the town Common or Green adapted to the local situation and was the temporary town center where were grouped all those public utilities that the new community required.

Captain Church in his history of the King Philip war, mentions "The ruins of John Cooke's house at Cushnet." There is a tradition that somewhere Cooke had a garrison or stockade, and it has been asserted that this was a block-house which stood south of Woodside cemetery in Fairhaven. While it is possible that Cooke had some sort of defence on his farm, yet there is a reasonable doubt whether the place referred to by Church was not on Howard's neck, which was provided by the inhabitants as a place

of refuge during the first period of the settlement. This is also possible, because the title to the neck was owned by Cooke during the King Philip war.

As long as the Indians did not disturb the settlers the homesteads were gradually extended in scattered formation into different sections of Dartmouth, a policy that caused criticism from the authorities at Plymouth and was the basis of all the misfortunes that overtook the inhabitants in the Indian war. Fortunately the Dartmouth settlers kept near the shore, so that while they could not offer any firm defence yet they were able to escape by water, and so far as definitely known only four were killed by the Indians.

Until the King Philip war a majority of the inhabitants lived on the east side of the Acushnet river and probably no change was made in the meeting place for public gatherings. During the two years occupied by the war no meetings of the town were held, and the territory of Dartmouth was abandoned. After the death of Philip, the Indians lost their war-like spirit and never recovered from the effects of that struggle. Then the inhabitants slowly returned and rebuilt their habitations and the next meeting of the town was held in June, 1678. From that time the population rapidly increased and soon became widely distributed. The Acushnet river was no longer the western limit; the central and western portions were occupied and ferries were established where bridges could not be built. Soon a demand for a central location of the town house led to a vote of the town to place it "near the mills," that is, Smith Mills. The inhabitants of Apponegansett and Acoaksett greatly outnumbered those who lived on the east side of the Acushnet and easily accomplished the change which took place in 1686.

In the ordinary progress of events, Howard's neck could not always remain the center of the town. The inevitable change had arrived. The public uses to which the neck had been devoted, were transferred to other sections. As a place of refuge, it was no longer required, because the Indians had been forced into a permanent peace. Landings were provided in other sections and the neck was used only by those living in the vicinity. The town meetings were held at the head of the Slocum road. Those who settled west of Acushnet river formed a great majority of the inhabitants; were largely Quakers and not in harmony with the religious practices of the Pilgrims on the east side of the Acushnet and had their separate meeting house. The latter

may have continued to hold religious meetings at the usual place, but it must have been a small struggling body without organization and without settled minister. The only object of interest that remained, was the burial-ground, and to preserve this Cooke made the transfer to his son-in-law, Arthur Hathaway, and here is probably where Cooke was buried. The neck remained in possession of the Hathaway family until 1854, and since 1862 with the farm on both sides of Howard's brook, has been owned by Samuel Corey.

The situation at the neck remains with little change as it appeared when selected as a town center two and a half centuries ago. The road built by Howard and Cooke is still open and used by Arthur H. Corey to reach his residence. An old mill is standing on the brook, but years ago was dismantled and is in ruins. Since the deed of 1752, the name of Howard has disappeared from the locality. Manufacturing industries on the river have driven away the shellfish that were

so abundant along these shores. At the north end of the neck until plowed over some years ago, were found unmarked stones placed at intervals, the indication of an ancient burial place.

The waters of the great spring still flow unceasingly to the sea, the salient and determining feature that fixed the choice of the English in selecting their first home on the Acushnet. People engaged in New Bedford mills have residences on the east side of the river, and the line of houses from Coggeshall street before many years, will meet those rapidly extending south from the head of the river. The space between comprises a few farms near Howard's brook, whose owners still resist the flattering offers of speculation. Here, with little outward change, may be observed those natural advantages that impressed the English on their first visit to Cushena where they located their first residential center, and here is the last spot to yield to progress and innovation.



OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SKETCHES

No. 40

Being the proceedings of the meetings of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society, held June 17, 1914 and October 14, 1914.

FOURTHS OF THE PAST

by Walter H. B. Remington

A TRIP TO BOSTON IN 1838

by William W. Crapo

A JAPANESE STUDENT IN FAIRHAVEN

by Job C. Tripp

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

AT THE

OUTING AND CLAMBAKE

HELD AT PADANARAM

JUNE 17, 1914

About 200 members of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society participated in the outing at Padanaram June 17, 1914, which began with a clam-bake at 2 o'clock, and ended with a dance in the New Bedford Yacht club station.

Walter H. B. Remington, city clerk, read a paper on "Notable New Bedford Fourth of July Celebrations in the Past Century," which proved to be an interesting review of what has happened in this city to celebrate the nation's birthday.

Fourths of the Past

By Walter H. B. Remington

Mr. President, and Ladies and Gentlemen of the Old Dartmouth Historical Society:

When your representative called on me, the Monday following Memorial Day, and requested me to prepare a sketch on the subject "Notable New Bedford Fourth of July Celebrations in the Past Century," I was in no position to refuse, inasmuch as the Standard of the day before had featured a statement, which I had made, a year previously, and had almost forgotten, advocating a patriotic and popular celebration of the glorious Fourth. I could see no way of getting out of it, and on the theory that one might as well be hung for sheep as for a lamb, I readily consented, apparently much to the surprise of George H. Tripp, who made the request at the behest of your president.

With my spare time occupied in the work incident to assistance in the preparation of a Fourth of July celebration of the present century, I am afraid that I have not been able to give the matter as much care and attention as it deserves, and for this reason I desire to offer an apology, at the outset, if what I have found fails to interest you, and to make the criticism that your worthy president ought to have known better than to have made such a suggestion.

I have been unable to find any record of the celebration of the glorious Fourth in New Bedford until the advent of the New Bedford Mercury, the publication of which was begun in 1807.

In the town records of New Bedford, the 8th article in the warrant for the annual meeting of 1790 contains a phrase which, when my eye caught it, in my search, led me to believe that I had found what I was looking for. In this article, the townsmen are cited to assemble "To do what they think proper relative to purchasing a town stock of ammunition, agreeable to law." It developed, however, that this town ammunition was not for the purpose of celebration, but for the preservation of peace, and the protection of the citizens in the case of need. Inasmuch as a similar article appeared, year after year, for several years, in the annual town meeting warrants, I was puzzled, at first, to know what became of the ammunition, since there was evidently

no necessity for using it for the common defence. It then occurred to me that the ammunition was used at the annual training meetings of the militia and the constant need for replenishing of the stock was explained.

A fairly full report, for the time, of the doings on the Fourth of July of 1809, which was the 33rd anniversary of the signing of the Declaration of Independence, appears in the issue of The Mercury following the day.

"In this town," says The Mercury reporter of that day, "the celebration was unusually brilliant. At an early hour of the day a large number of our fellow citizens, joined by several gentlemen from the neighboring towns, particularly the gentlemen officers of the regiment, assembled at Mr. Nelson's, where, after a friendly interchange of civilities and attentions, a procession was formed, under the direction of Col. Benjamin Lincoln, consisting of Capt. Coggeshall's company of artillery, Capt. Barstow's company of militia, the officiating clergyman and orator of the day, the president and vice presidents, committee of arrangements, gentlemen officers of the regiment in uniform, the municipal officers of the town, the citizens and strangers." At 11 o'clock the procession moved to the meeting house, where, after an appropriate address to the Throne of Grace by the Rev. Mr. Kirby, an oration distinguished for classical purity, firm patriotism, and correct sentiment, was pronounced by Lemuel Williams, Jr., Esq. The company afterwards participated in an excellent dinner, prepared by Mr. Nelson. In the evening there was a handsome display of fireworks prepared by Mr. Benjamin Hill, Jr., and several lanterns, made by Mr. Arnold Shaw, very judiciously arranged, exhibiting the names of a number of American Worthies, together with a representation of Liberty."

The description closes with the statement that "the exhibition was truly pleasing and gave great satisfaction to a crowd of spectators."

That must have been some show! You can look back, in your imagination, and see the artillery company and the militia assembling, with true military pomp, at Mr. Nelson's. There was no discussion, at that time, as to whether the men who played the drum

and life to which the brave soldiers timed their martial tread were or were not members of the musicians' union. There was no walking delegate to bust up the procession because the members of the village school, with tin whistles and battered dish pans, led the parade a few feet ahead of the stately figure of Colonel Benjamin Lincoln. And then the "friendly exchange of civilities and attentions" after the companies and the citizens and the strangers had assembled at Mr. Nelson's. I am unable to find that there was a governor of South Carolina present to suggest to the Massachusetts men that it was a long time between civilities; and probably there was no need.

Following the dinner at Mr. Nelson's, after the parade was over, there was the customary string of toasts, that to Washington being drunk standing, as was the courteous practice in those days. If each toast required a drink to wash it down, Mr. Nelson's helpers must have been kept busy filling the glasses, for there were 33 toasts, some regular and some volunteer. Most of them would be considered rather stilted, in their style, at this time, but they all bristled with patriotic sentiment, which was the proper thing, and is to be commended. The first toast, for instance, reflected the political situation. It ran:

"The day: may the reign of visionary philosophy and the gloom of an unlimited embargo never again be permitted to shroud its glory."

The preliminaries of the second war with England were going on, and the embargo on shipping had left its bitter impress on the community. New Bedford was a strong Federalist district, it will be remembered, and the authorities at Boston and Washington were not conducting themselves in a manner satisfying to the New Bedford citizens, as a whole.

Things reached a rather high pitch when the time came to celebrate the day of national independence in 1811. On that day, after the usual procession and the oration at the Congregational meeting house, the paraders proceeded to Caldwell's hotel on Main street, where they sat down to what the Mercury describes as "an entertainment worthy of the occasion." The paper further says that "The Hon. Edward Pope presided, and order and propriety marked the proceedings." Quite needless to state!

While the usual giving and taking of toasts was going on, a committee, headed by Colonel Benjamin Lincoln, was chosen to frame and report resolutions expressive of the citizens in relation to "the recent alarm-

ing measures of our national and state executives." Resolutions a column in length, denouncing the conduct of the state executive and decrying the possibility of war with Great Britain, which it was said, in 57 varieties of ways, would be "ruinous to our republic," were unanimously adopted, after which the celebrators proceeded to more toasts, not forgetting "The Ladies, God Bless Them."

The Fourth of July, 1812, found the second war with England a grim fact, and the country was in such a serious state that it does not appear, from the newspaper record, that there was much of a Fourth of July celebration in New Bedford.

Patriotic enthusiasm, as demonstrated by celebrations, seems to have died out on the New Bedford side of the river for several years. The "Corsican Jigs" over on the Fairhaven side, however, were not backward with their patriotic displays, and processions, and fireworks, and orations, with dinners at the Fairhaven hotel, were the order of the day.

Finally, in the issue of The Mercury of Friday, July 4, 1823, a communicant who signed himself "Observer," and who wrote from the Fairhaven side of the river, dipped his pen in gall and wormwood and wrote after this style:

"Among the general preparations throughout the country for the celebration of the anniversary, why is it that the respectable village of New Bedford is alone silent and inactive? Are not the inhabitants Americans, descended from the sons of the fathers of '76, and can they let such an opportunity pass without manifesting, in some measure, that they inherit the spirit and feelings of their forefathers?"

Evidently the shaft went home, for the respectable village of New Bedford woke up, the next year, 1824, and The Mercury historian says, "the day was noticed with more than the usual spirit."

I am of the opinion that the elder Lindsey took the day off, that Fourth, and that a printer named "Grouch" set up the remainder of the celebration description, for the story continues:

"While we find much to gratify us in the celebration of the day, we must enter our protest against the ringing of bells. It ought to be entirely discarded on such occasions. We hear this ding-dong three times a day during the week, and three times three on Sundays. Let that suffice."

It appears that the young men of the town did not forget this editor-

ial complaint the next year, and they evidently believed that Mr. Lindsey penned the protest. For the Mercury's account of the Fourth of July celebration of 1825 goes on to say: "After a day which ended with a splendid ball, at which grace and beauty mingled in the mazy dance, the town was serenaded by a band of music which continued until the dawn of the 5th."

Instead of grumbling, this time, however, the Mercury editor did the graceful thing. "Perhaps nothing can be more grateful," he wrote, "after nature has partaken of her restorative sleep, than to be awakened from the late slumbers of night by a melodious serenade." That is what I assume to be the retort courteous.

The fiftieth anniversary of the birthday of the nation was celebrated in New Bedford July 4th, 1826, by public festivities and impressive ceremonies "in every way worthy of the momentous occasion," to borrow the Mercury's phrasing. An extensive procession was formed and proceeded to Rev. Mr. Dewey's meeting house, where prayer was offered, the Declaration of Independence was read by Russell Freeman, Esq., and an appropriate and animated address was pronounced by Thomas Rotch, Esq., to a crowded and highly satisfied auditory. An ode, prepared for the occasion, was sung, and at the conclusion of the exercises the procession marched to the town hall where about 200 citizens sat down to a sumptuous dinner provided by Mr. Cole. John Avery Parker, Esq., presided, and toasts all patriotism and a yard long were drunk. There were so many of these toasts that I am inclined to take with a grain of salt the editor's description, in a final paragraph summing up the events of the day. He wrote, "Sobriety, good order and good feeling pervaded throughout the celebration, and we may safely say that not the slightest untoward incident marred the general enjoyment of our citizens." Good feeling, undoubtedly, but with the long list of toasts, sobriety must have flown out of the town hall windows early in the evening unless our forefathers were made of different stuff than the modern New Bedford citizen.

The first Fourth of July celebration after New Bedford became a city occurred on the 5th of July, 1847. The steamers Massachusetts and Naushon, from Nantucket and Edgartown, arrived in New Bedford at an early hour, deeply freighted with some 1700 passengers, "including a larger proportion of the fairer crea-

tion," to quote the newspaper account, which continues, "Groups of lively and animated faces were moving in every direction, and altogether our beautiful city presented in every part a scene of gaiety and rational enjoyment never, perhaps surpassed."

A procession led by the local fire companies, together with fire companies from Fairhaven and Nantucket, marshalled by General J. D. Thompson, and including the New Bedford Guards, under Captain Seth Russell, with divisions of Sons of Temperance from Dartmouth and other surrounding towns, paraded through the streets. Exercises were held in the North Christian church, with an oration by J. A. Kasson, who later became famous as a writer of treaties. Of Mr. Kasson's oration, the Mercury says: "The oration was listened to by a numerous assembly, and it is warmly eulogized for its purity of language and elevated moral and patriotic sentiment. We had intended to publish a sketch of this masterly production, but have no room today." There was room in the paper, however, for a column of Fourth of July oration delivered by Edward Everett, in Boston, and it may be presumed that in the eye of the editor, the Edward Everett production was more masterly than that of Mr. Kasson.

Of course, there was a burst of fireworks in the evening, attended by a great concourse of people.

It is interesting, to me at least, to compare the cost of this celebration, which was paid for from the city treasury, with the cost of the celebration which we propose to have this year. The total cost of the celebration in 1847 was \$546.36. There were 16,000 people in New Bedford at that time, as appears from the figures in the Municipal Manual. That would make the cost of the celebration 3.4 plus cents for each individual. It is proposed to spend, this year (if we can get the money) \$3000 at the outside. There are 111,000 people in New Bedford according to the latest census figures. This means that the celebration will cost 2.7 cents plus for every individual. So it seems, that while the cost of living is popularly supposed to have advanced, the cost of Fourth of July celebrations has shrunk. I do not know whether this condition can be traced to the tariff or not, but I do know that the copper cent of 1847 was considerably bigger than the copper cent of 1914 and for this reason it may be fairly argued, I assume, that the figures which I have quoted

(and you know that figures never lie) show that we are getting more for our money in the way of celebrations today than our fathers did when New Bedford was an infant.

Just to show you that things have changed in other respects, I will read to you from the statement of the 5th of July expenses as shown in the finance report of the city covering that year.

The first item is:

Lewis Boutelle, 72 dinners.....\$72.00

It seems that "junket" feeds are not the novelty that some of our reformer politicians would sometimes have us believe. The report continues:

Citizens Brass band.....\$136.00

Evidently the bands didn't blow their heads off for nothing in those days.

L. A. Mace, ringing bell.....\$1.50

This is about half the current price for ringing bells, but at that time a day's wages for the ordinary man was about half what he receives now, so the difference is not great.

Lewis C. Allen, policeman.....\$3.00

Shubael G. Edwards, policeman. 3.00

William O. Russell, policeman.. 3.00

Marshall B. Bird, policeman... 2.00

With the exception of Bird, the policemen fared better than they do today, assuming that they did the regulation day's work.

Lewis L. Bartlett, ringing bell and cleaning church.....\$5.50

The janitor question does not seem to be a new one, after all, and it appears, that the janitor was worthy of his hire then, as he is today.

Thomas B. White, amount paid for fireworks.....\$194.00

New Bedford Guards, music.. 50.00

Hiram D. Wentworth, hack.. 8.00

The hack was probably for the committee on fireworks, who could not be expected to walk, of course, with the burden of responsibility for the success of the day upon their shoulders.

In the account of the Fourth of July celebration of 1848, The Mercury reporter took occasion to do a little eagle screaming on his own hook.

"If the Fourth of July is now celebrated with something less of boisterous hilarity than in former years," he said, "it has at least lost nothing of the sentiment of grateful veneration for the wisdom and patriotism of the illustrious statesmen of the Revolution whose firmness and valor achieved for us the glorious heritage of freedom and prosperity that we now enjoy. They sowed the seed, while we gather the fruit; they planted in tears and should we not reap

with grateful hearts? From 1776 the course of the republic has been continuously onward and upward. We had then 13 colonies and four millions of people. We have now 30 states and twenty millions of freemen, and with corresponding improvement in the social condition of the masses. Long may the Fourth be cherished, and while it continues to be observed as a great national festival we shall have little fear for the republic."

That is the sentiment which is well worth repeating today. With the millions of people who have come from other shores to become a part of our great country, many of them ignorant of the hardships and struggles from which our country has resulted, and careless of the principles involved, it is not amiss, once a year, at least, that the eagle should scream a little, just to make an impression on the minds of these foreigners. No American community is too small, nor too large, to give one day in the year to pressing home the lessons which the history of our country teaches. The object lesson which the display of patriotism, demonstrated by Fourth of July enthusiasm, furnishes to these people is well worth the price, and no truly enthusiastic American can afford not to do his share. "Do it now," is a good motto, to be applied to Fourth of July as well as to business. If there is one within the reach of my voice who hasn't contributed his part to the coming Fourth of July, either in money or in service, I ask him to think, for a minute, what this country would be without that which Fourth of July stands for; and when that thought has sunk in, let him ask himself if the individual, or the community, or the country, can afford to let the Fourth of July go by without recognition.

To go back a little to The Mercury's account of the 1848 celebration, there may have been a little reason for the editor's patriotic words, presumably to offset something of the spirit of commercialism which it appears, from reading between the lines of the story of the celebration, had begun to show itself. This portion of the story is not found in the newspaper, but in the city's financial statement of the cost of the celebration, which was under municipal auspices.

This statement shows that the Boston Cornet Band was engaged at a cost of \$196.37, to which must be added \$26, paid to Simon Packard for "boarding band," there was a \$400 display of fireworks, and S. B. Robbins received \$24 for 24 dinners. While the day was supposed to be in celebration of the event which en-

sured free speech, the Fourth of July speech of that year was not entirely free, since there is an item in the expenditure account of "Amount paid orator, \$25." The most interesting thing in the items of expense, however, is the charge "William Hall, expenses after music, \$8.00."

I can imagine the committee on audit of that day, as they gathered to approve the monthly bills, two or three weeks after the effects of the celebration were worn off. William Hall's bill is read, and some member of the audit committee, who was not on the Fourth of July committee, pricks up his ears. "What's that?" he asks, and the bill is read again. "What does that mean?" he asks, aghast. "Oh, that," answers one of the audit committee, who was also on the Fourth of July committee, "that's all right; you see, after the music, the committee had to have a bite to eat, etc.; we had been working all day, looking out to see that the boys didn't fire the set pieces before evening, and none of us had a chance to get any supper, so after the fireworks we went over to Hall's and had a snack. Of course, if the committee doesn't think it was all right, I will pay the bill myself,"—and more at length. And at last, after talking about it for half an hour, the bill is passed and ordered paid. Times have not changed much, after all.

We now come to the celebration of 1851, which was so novel and successful as to deserve special notice from *The Mercury*.

"The usual municipal procession was dispensed with," reads the account, "but instead of fat aldermen (they will pardon us for mentioning what everybody knows) instead of the usual parade of council in carriages, we had the dear children, all marching as proudly as if they had been soldiers in earnest. The boys dressed in their best, and the girls, who would have looked unexceptionable dressed in their worst, paraded in a style which would have done honor to veteran troops." The parade was led by John F. Emerson, principal of the High school, and each school represented bore an appropriate motto. The High school led the procession. "The notable feature of this department was a car in which appeared The Muses, appropriately dressed and bearing the proper emblems. The Charles street grammar school appeared with a young and beautiful personage who had been duly elected and installed as "Queen of the Pageant" together with her maids of honor, all members of the High school, seated in a splendid barouche elegantly decorated with wreaths of flowers. The Market

Street Primary rode in a young mass of youthfulness and innocence upon a finely decorated van. The Grove Grammar school carried the motto "Get good and be good." The Charles Street Intermediate carried a banner on which was inscribed, "We are destined to fill our places," and so on.

Engine Company No. 6 did escort duty, and afterwards dined at the Parker House, after which they appeared in a procession with blazing torches, accompanied by two bands of music, and proceeded to the house of the mayor, where they were greeted by a handsome and complimentary speech. There was the usual display of fireworks, viewed by the "immense concourse of spectators" which the reporter of the period was so fond of describing. In summing up the features of the day, *The Mercury* says, "Although not marked by as usual pomp and circumstance as may have attested previous occasions, it was nevertheless one of the most pleasant and satisfactory which we recollect."

The festivities of the next year, 1852, were marked by an incident which for a time threatened to sadly alter the plans made for the celebration. In the first place, it was the hottest day of the season, and the number of visitors had never been exceeded on the New Bedford streets. While the parade was forming, an alarm of fire was spread. The fire was on the roof of the extensive hardware establishment of Taber & Co., and was caused by fire-crackers, of course. When the alarm was given the fire companies, which composed the important feature of the procession, immediately left the line and proceeded to the fire, pell mell, followed by the throng.

"Their numerous guests," says the story, "while watching the efforts of the New Bedford boys to show how they put out fires, also lent their own exertions to repress the raging element. The brakes of No. 7 were manned entirely by the Pioneer company from Providence, who showed that they knew well how to brake her down. A member of the Warren Company of Charlestown exhibited a feat by climbing through a bow window of the building onto the roof, which for hardihood and daring could not be surpassed. In the heat of the moment it could not be expected of our gallant firemen that they should act in a perfectly cool manner. They knew that there was a fire, and they knew, too, that it was in a very dangerous locality. Their sole object was to crush it, and they did so very effectively. The fire was thoroughly extinguished in about 20 minutes." After the fire there was a great to-do to get the procession together again.

The Mercury jokes a little as to the fact that a Fourth of July procession was never known to start on time, and the fact that this procession was about an hour and a half late did not detract from its interest. The only thing that marred it was that the engines, which had been handsomely decorated, as was the custom, appeared stripped for business, but you may be sure that this did not take from their appearance in the eyes of the true firemen. This procession, by the way, contained a carriage with a group of Revolutionary soldiers, the oldest 93 years of age. Captain Timothy Ingraham was the chief marshal.

The celebration of July 4, 1855, was interrupted by a fire which interfered with the firemen's trial. This fire caught in the stable of George Howland, at the corner of Walnut and Seventh streets, and before it was put out it burned several other stables with their contents.

"Various causes have been assigned for the fire," said the Mercury's account. "Crackers ought to bear the blame, for they were fired in close proximity to the stable which first took fire. Another report is that the coachman was smoking in the stable that morning, and that his pipe is answerable for the consequences. Unfortunately, editors have to take facts as we find them, or we should declare for the crackers. We wonder not that so many buildings are destroyed annually, but that any escape. But those most interested in knowing the cause incline to believe that the tobacco was guilty, which we are very sorry for."

This Fourth was made notable by the laying, at sunrise, of the cornerstone of Liberty hall, the old theatre building which occupied the site of the present Merchants bank building, and where, before, an older Liberty hall had been built and burned. Joseph Dearborn, Esq., made a brief and spirited address, and Rodney French, then mayor, laid the corner stone. Under the stone was placed a copper box which contained, among other things, "An address delivered at the consecration of Oak Grove Cemetery by James B. Congdon, Esq." not a too appropriate phamplet, it would seem, to place under the corner stone of a play house. This was not the only joke tucked away under the Liberty Hall corner stone, for the box contained "a fine set of artificial teeth made by Dr. Ward." Included in the documents in the repository were the transcripts of several speeches made by the statesmen of the day,—N. P. Banks, Anson Burlin-

game, W. H. Seward, Charles Sumner and among them, T. D. Elliot's speech on The Nebraska Bill. "From the exceedingly political character of the deposit," said the editor, "we cannot infer much for the dramatic prospects of the hall, but when the corner stone of its predecessor was laid, the anticipations were less Shake spearian."

You may have noted, as I did, that the Mercury's descriptions of Fourth of July doings contained a drift of pessimism. The secret is explained when we come to know the editor's ideal of what a real Fourth of July should be, and make comparison with what the real Fourth of July usually was. In writing an editorial which was printed on the Fourth of July, 1856, the Mercury's ideal is so clearly expressed that I cannot refrain from quoting it here, although, perhaps, it is not exactly a part of the story. This editorial is headed,

WHAT TO DO TODAY.

and reads as follows:

"We don't wish to interfere with any preconceived plans for celebrating today on the part of our readers, but we can tell them one or two things they can undertake, if it seems to them agreeable.

"Those who prefer seashore entertainments may take the Eagles Wing for Newport, or the Spray for Horse-neck beach. Mr. Nye, who keeps the hotel at the latter place is well qualified to make the day satisfactory down there.

"But whether people go forth to make demonstrations or remain at home, it is best to take things easy and keep cool. After the boys have spent all their money for fireworks and let them off, they should not cry for more powder. And all manner of rowdism and ugly dissipation should be avoided, as utterly beneath the notice of a reasonable man.

"On the whole, those who have friends in the country, who live in old farm houses or new villas, where the air is pure, and green trees and fields of sweet smelling grass and clover abound, where strawberries and cream are not in a minority, and quiet and comfort can be secured,—we say, on the whole the pleasantest thing for the dusty and parched citizen is to visit these country friends on the National Holiday and so get rid of the noise and confusion of the town. If there is any better way of celebrating the Fourth of July than this, we have not heard it particularly alluded to.

"Then in the evening, we can all return and witness the fireworks, so liberally provided by the city fathers,

and conclude in the end that we are about the greatest Yankee nation on earth."

This is the prophesy. Look at the fulfillment, as it appears on the next day's page:

"Celebration of the 4th of July began with a comfortable rain much needed by corn and potatoes but not by boys and girls. There have been, during the last 67 years, or since 1789, thirteen rainy Fourth of Julys, and this might have been added had not the elements proved kindly at about 1 p. m., when mere patches of blue sky made their appearance. During the night of the 4th, some enterprising calithumpians were on hand, and discoursed hideous music and peals of crackers in various localities, but on the whole silence reigned. At about 3 a. m. the wind chopped round to the north and again obscured the sky; we had more rain, next a clear sunset, and no fireworks by the city. Liberty Hall, the engine houses and ships in port displayed flags, and in spite of the moist weather, the young people did a good business in crackers."

It seems a little cruel that after such a sweet dream of strawberries and cream, and peaceful quiet spent in green meadows, that the editor and all the rest of the people should have been doomed to spend a rainy Fourth within doors, with the monotonously broken occasionally by the horrible noise of the calithumpians and peals of fire crackers. There is, after all, some excuse for the bitterness which may yet be traced, after half a century has passed in some of the writings of the man who carved the notches in history with the pen which was mightier than the sword.

You have recently read, in the Sunday Globe, Mr Peases's allusion to the celebration of 1865, when the returned soldiers from the Civil War were publicly welcomed by the people and 3000 school children were in line; of the celebration in 1868, when the Wamsutta Base Ball Club defeated the Onwards, by a score which in these days would lead one who read about it to think it was a cricket match; (49 to 13).; of the centennial celebration in 1876, at which William W. Crapo delivered the oration, telling the story of New Bedford and the whaling industry so well and completely that no-one has had the temerity to try to better it.

In my recollection and yours, are the celebrations when we were boys and girls, with their noise, and heat, and balloon ascensions, and proces-

sions, and whaleboat races, all of them paid for from the city treasury, and some of them, it must be confessed, loaded down with second hand patriotism. You are familiar, through recent publications of the story, as to how Councilman Charles W. Jones, when a boy, was caught in the grappling anchor of a balloon, as it ascended from the Common and when the rope was cut, dropped through the trees, saved by their branches from instant death, so it is not necessary to repeat these things. Of course, our enthusiasm has somewhat dimmed, since those days, and we view the events from a different angle but nobody can take the memory of these Fourth of July celebrations from us. And as we grow older, and our children and grandchildren call for the unearthing of these memories, they will come back again, fresher and fresher as the years go by.

So much for the Fourth of July of the past century. The story has been but imperfectly told, because there was not time, with the demands of the day, to read between the lines and analyze the words which will remain as the record forever. Through it all, however, there stands out from the printed page, in type which is magnified as the years go forward, the patriotic sentiment of the men and women who enjoyed their pleasures and mourned their sorrows fifty and a hundred years ago.

The reading over of these records teaches its own lesson. In spite of the pretty annoyance brought by the music of the calithumpians, and the hideous clanging of the bells, and the dangerous nuisance of the firing of the powder crackers, there stands out the underlying love of country which cannot be hidden. These men and women were not content to let the spirit of the day die. Their varied modes of attracting attention to the lessons of the day by the different celebration in vogue from time to time, were all calculated to make an impression on the boys and girls of the day, lest they forget. They kept the patriotic feeling alive, at some inconvenience to the individual, perhaps, but in the interest of the good of all.

The New Bedford of that day was not the New Bedford of today. Then the Yankee stock predominated. It is true that the whaleships brought men of many nationalities to New Bedford, but they did not come to stay, and after a brief shore respite they went their ways, most of them never to return. Vast colonies of foreign people did not exist as they

do today, when more than half of our population is either foreign born or born of foreign parents.

If it was worth while to celebrate Fourth of July in those days, for the purpose of keeping alive the spirit of '76, is it not more than worth while that we, today should make our best efforts to keep the lessons of the holiday before the people?

It is my belief that New Bedford cannot afford to let a single Fourth of July pass without some public observance. And I am glad to say that

my belief is shared by many. This year, we are trying to see what can be done to rouse public spirit by an observance of the holiday in which representatives of all the nations which go to make up New Bedford's diverse population shall have a part, and I feel confident that when the last rocket fired on the Fourth of July 1914 has spread its meteoric splendor on the midnight sky, that we all shall feel that we have done something to make better Americans of the people of New Bedford.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

MEETING

OF THE

OLD DARTMOUTH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

HELD OCTOBER 14, 1914

To Boston by stage in 1838 was pictured Wednesday afternoon, October 14, 1914, by William W. Crapo before a large audience of members of the Old Dartmouth Historical society at the rooms of the society on Water street. Though Mr. Crapo was only eight years old at the time of the trip he has remembered almost every detail. His account of the journey and his experiences in Boston could not but carry one back there on the lumbering stage and in the quaint city of culture in the early half of the last century.

This was Mr. Crapo's first visit to Boston. He went with his father. The trip took a day and the route was by the way of Bridgewater and Randolph. In the evening Mr. Crapo attended a play in which he remembers a huge man, dressed as an Indian who strode in and said: 'You have sent for me, I have come! What are your commands.'

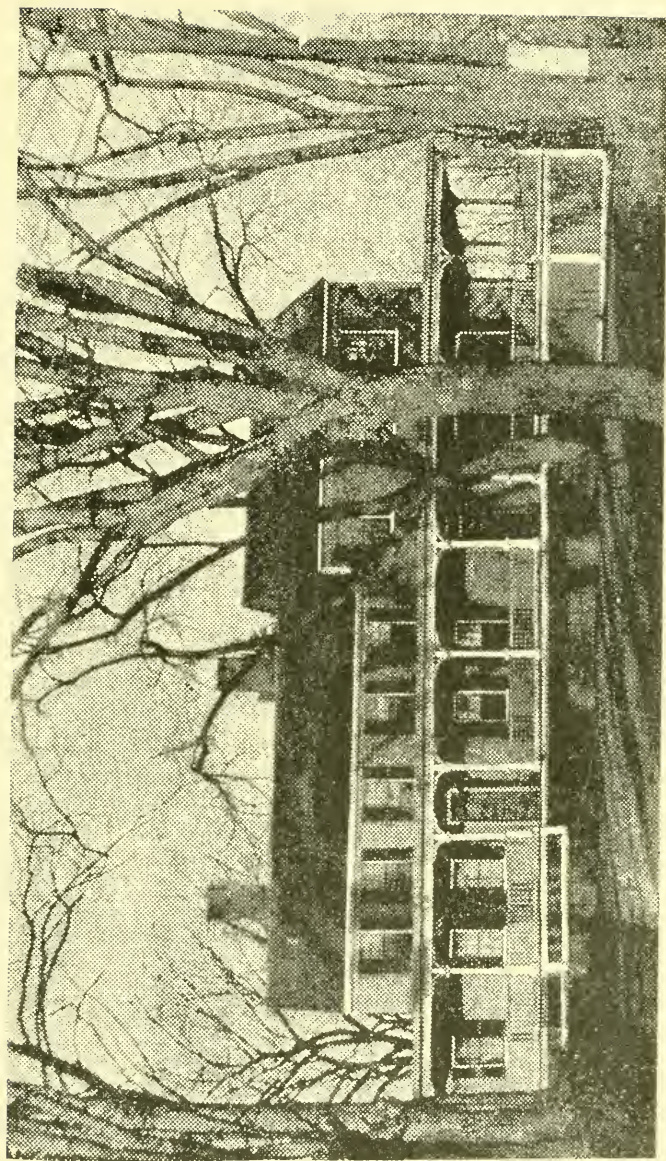
The almost Arabian Nights tale of Nakahama Munger, a Japanese boy who rose from a shipwrecked boy to a prince of the flowery kingdom was told by Job C. Tripp, who went to school with the boy in Fairhaven. Mr. Tripp said that the boy finally decided to go back to Japan and after sailing

most of the way in an English vessel, made the remaining 400 miles in a whaleboat.

President Cushman made a brief report, in behalf of the secretary, stating that since the first of the year, 266 names had been added to the membership list. He said that 500 more were desired, and appealed to each of the present membership to help in securing them. Since June, 780 people have visited the rooms, 330 of them coming from out of town. During the summer, 500 of the society's members visited the rooms, which President Cushman said showed that it was wise to keep the rooms open every day.

He announced that the entertainment committee had not yet made up its winter program, but that one event had been decided upon—an exhibition of old-fashioned costumes. This will be given on Nov. 3, from 3 to 6 o'clock, and it was announced that anyone who would loan old-fashioned costumes, capes, wraps, or caps, would be of great help.

Following a delightful rendition of "Ye Banks and Braes of Bonny Doon," by Miss Edith Drescott, President Cushman announced that at the conclusion of the program, old-fashioned refreshments would be served in the colonial room, although he jokingly declined to go into details as to what the refreshments were to be.



SAMPSON'S TAVERN, ASSAWAMPSETT POND
LAKEVILLE, MASS.

TAKEN DOWN IN 1913 BY THE CITY OF TAUNTON TO PROTECT ITS WATER SUPPLY

A Trip to Boston in 1838

By William W. Crapo

Mr. Cushman introduced William W. Crapo with a description of a parlor game in which one of the party starts the telling of a story, and at a certain point tosses a soft ball to one of the others present, who must take up the story and carry it along. "I will toss the first ball to Mr. Crapo," he said, and suited the action to the word by tossing a frilly bouquet to the latter, whereupon, Mr. Crapo began his remarks.

The speaker said that he would tell the story of his first trip to Boston. "It was made in 1838," he said, "and I was a lad of eight. At that time, communication by Boston was by means of the stage coach. The railroad to Taunton was not then constructed. The stage route was owned by Elias Sampson, and the stages started from here and from Boston, every week-day. His stable was located on the north side of Union street, at the head of what was then Third street. Third street started from the south end, and went north to Union. Ray street started from the Acushnet road, and went south in a line with Third street, stopping at Elm. Afterward both streets were joined, with the name of 'Acushnet avenue.'

"Close by the entrance to the stable was a small wooden building, which was called the stage office. A person wishing to travel by the stage, went to the office and placed his name on the book, with the place of his residence. Then he was booked as a passenger for Boston the next morning. The stage was a huge vehicle, containing three seats for three persons each, so that nine people could ride inside; and there was also accommodation on the outside. The stage, drawn by four horses, left the even before daylight. The driver started out for his passengers, and when he came to a house he blew a stable in the early dawn; in winter horn loudly as a notification to the passenger. When all the passengers had been picked up, the stable-boy, who had accompanied the driver to assist with the baggage—the driver never leaving his seat on the box—left the coach, and it started on the journey to Boston.

"The first stopping-place was at Sampson's Tavern, which had a beautiful location, looking out upon Assa-

wampsett pond. The stop was for a change of horses, and to enable the passengers to have breakfast. The breakfast at the tavern was a famous feature, as, after a ride of fourteen miles in the cool, crisp air, over roads that were by no means smooth, the passengers had keen appetites. We had ham and eggs, beefsteak, sausages, potatoes, brown bread, biscuits, Johnny-cake, and buckwheat cakes and molasses. I will not say that these were all the things that were served, but I will say that it was a meal fit for a small boy or a king.

"Breakfast completed, fresh horses were obtained and refreshed passengers took seats. We went to Boston by way of Bridgewater and Randolph, changing horses at the relay stations; and reached Boston in the afternoon.

"We stopped at the Elm Street Tavern, the favorite hostelry for New Bedford people, as it was kept by a Mr. Dooley, who for several years was a clerk in Coles Tavern here. The latter hotel was located on the east side of South Water street, between Commercial and School, and was a favorite on account of its location near the wharves, making it convenient for people arriving from the Vineyard or on coasting vessels. Another New Bedford hotel of the time was the Eagle hotel, on the site now occupied by the Star Store.

"Having reached Boston, you may have some curiosity to know why I made the trip. For several years there had been an agitation in this part of our county for a shorter road to Boston, and after several years' agitation, the new road, which was simply a cut between two angles, was granted by the county commissioners. The distance of this road, or how much was saved, I do not know. The contract for its construction was given to Jonathan Tobey, a well-to-do farmer, who owned considerable real estate at what is now known as Sissons.

"When the road was completed, a dispute arose between Mr. Tobey and the county commissioners, as to the amount of payment under the contract. Mr. Tobey was very stubborn and would not yield on his claim; and the county commissioners being equally stubborn, the dispute continued for a year or two. At last, Mr.

Tobey seeing that a suit must be brought, changed his residence and went to Little Compton, for the reason that he believed he could not obtain justice in Bristol county.

"At that time my father was town clerk, and also a land surveyor. Mr. Tobey had employed him to measure distances and compute the excavating and filling which would be necessary under the terms of the contract. When the case was ready for trial, my father was summoned to appear before the federal court in Boston, as a witness. He had a theory that a great deal could be learned by travel, and that even to a boy it was an advantage to see other places and people. For this reason, he took me to Taunton and Plymouth with him, when convenient; and when he was summoned to Boston, he thought it was a grand opportunity for me to go.

"The case was ready for trial in the morning, and my father, fearing that I might get uneasy and ramble about the streets and get lost, took me to the court house with him. This was quite a novel experience for me. On the bench, the first thing that attracted my attention was a man with a black silk gown. No other man in the room had on a black silk gown, and it was explained to me that the gown was an emblem of his judicial authority. That man was Justice Storey of the United States supreme court. The only other individual of the court that attracted my attention was a man who sat at a small desk, with a semi-uniform, and a mace, who I was told was the marshal.

"The attorneys were Daniel Webster, who appeared for Mr. Tobey and Levi Woodbury, for the county commissioners. Mr. Woodbury served in President Van Buren's cabinet.

"Webster impressed me not only by his fine figure, but also by his blue swallow-tail coat, ornamented with bright brass buttons. He seemed to ask most of the questions, and do most of the talking. I knew nothing of the proceedings, but the novelty was enough to keep me reasonably quiet. Later, in that same federal court, I was frequently in attendance, but Storey, Webster and Woodbury were not in the court, my contemporaries being Thomas M. Stetson, Robert C. Pitman, Edwin L. Barney, Adam Mackie and those of that generation. It is possible that I may be the only living person who has seen Justice Storey on the bench, and Daniel Webster presenting and arguing a case before him.

"In the evening, my father took me to the Federal Street Theatre, then

the largest and most popular playhouse in New England. When we entered, I saw a large room, brilliantly lighted by sperm-oil lamps and spermaceti candles. On the main floor were benches, where a large portion of the audience was seated; this was the pit. Around the walls was a balcony, where the nabobs and aristocrats had seats; while in the gallery above the balcony were the large boys, clerks and laboring people found places. Most of the noise came from that gallery.

"The play was 'Matamora,' and the star was Edwin Forrest, the great tragedian of America. The play treated of an early incident in Plymouth county, an Indian chief being accused of stealing cattle and destroying crops. The government of the colony was in the hands of the elders of the church, and the Indian chief was summoned before them. There is only one scene of the play that I can remember. There was a table at the back part of the stage, at which sat a group of grave, austere men, the judges. In strophe Matamora, a giant of a man, wearing Indian costume and a headgear ornamented with a profusion of feathers. He shouted in a voice of thunder: 'You have sent for me, and I have come! What are your commands?' That is all that I can remember; but I have no doubt that when I reached home I told my mother everything I had seen and heard.

"The thought of this trip leads to a comparison between past and present. In those days when a merchant, a refiner of oil or a manufacturer of candles, had occasion to visit Boston on business, he occupied one day in making the journey; the next day he spent in transacting his business; and the third day he came home. Now, when I go to Boston, I take the 8:35 train in the morning, arriving a little after 10; discuss the business matters for which the trip is made; take the train at 12:30, and arrive home at 2:25 in the afternoon—six hours instead of three days. The secret of how so much can be done in a short time is this—I never go shopping.

"This rapidity of motion has entered every branch of human activity, especially in business life. We have had the Stone Age, and the Iron Age. We must call this the Automobile Age. The slogan of the automobile is speed, and the automobilic inoculates with the spirit of the whirlwind. The old stage coach was better. The auto has merit and I favor progress; but the auto is not perfect. The old coach is far ahead in the element of safety.

"Speed is not the synonym of progress. When New Bedford had a population of 8000 or 9000, the people began to think that they ought to have better and speedier communication with Boston. They saw that Taunton had built a railroad to Mansfield, and they said that certainly New Bedford could build one to Taunton. Joseph Grinnell was the master spirit of the enterprise, and a charter was obtained, the money subscribed and the road paid for. In those days, a bond was not considered as paying a debt—and today some railroads' bonds are not held in very high esteem. The new railroad ran two trains a day, at 7 a. m. and 3 p. m. Soon there came movements for improvements on the line. The old wood-burning locomotives were discarded, and the link-and-pin coupling which was a menace to the brakeman gave place to a safer method. The air-tight

stove, which used to be located at one end of the car, keeping that end at a suffocating temperature, while the temperature was Arctic at the other end, was also superseded, and we now have reasonable heating facilities. There was real, substantial progress."

In contrast to that method of progress, Mr. Crapo cited the career of Charles S. Mellen, and his scheme for the unification of the railroads of New England. "The trouble," he said, was speed—undertaking to do in two or three years a work which, if carried along for twenty years, would have resulted in success.

"After coming to the Old Dartmouth society and seeing what our forebears have done for progress, we should not stop the work that they left off. We must go on; and in doing it, let us build upon the foundation they left us.

A Japanese Student in Fairhaven

By Job C. Tripp

After Miss Drescott had sung, "Loch Lomond," Job C. Tripp was introduced. Mr. Tripp told the romantic story of Nakahama Munger, a Japanese boy who attended a private school with him in Fairhaven, over 70 years ago. Nakahama, together with five other Japanese boys, survivors of the wreck of a Japanese junk, were rescued by Captain William H. Whitefield of Fairhaven from a rock in the China Sea, where they had subsisted for 60 days upon seabirds that Nakahama killed, and rain which fell in the clefts of the rock. The other boys were landed at the Sandwich Islands, but Captain Whitefield, who had taken a great fancy to Nakahama, brought him to Fairhaven, and entered him at the school. Mr. Tripp described Nakahama as very polite and kind-hearted, and very studious.

Captain Whitefield was a member of one of Fairhaven's three churches, and he took the Japanese boy into his pew with him. Finally, one of the officers of the church said to the captain: "We have a pew for Negro boys, and would like it if your boy would sit there." The captain, who never argued, simply bowed and went out. The next day, he went to another church and hired a pew. After a while one of the deacons informed him that that church had a pew for Negro people. Thereupon the captain engaged a pew in the third church, and from that time on, no one ever objected to the Japanese boy's sitting with him.

Nakahama learned the cooper's trade and became very efficient. One day, he announced that he was going back to Japan. Captain Whitefield advised him to remain, but he persisted, and the captain secured him a chance to work his passage to the Sandwich Islands on board a New Bedford whaler. There he found the Japanese boys who were his companions years before. Nakahama purchased a whaleboat, and the captain of an English vessel bound for a port in China agreed to let the party work their passage to a point 400 miles from the Japanese coast, where the whaleboat was launched, and Nakahama, who had mastered the

art of navigation, took command. In seven days they had reached the coast of Japan, where they were held prisoners until they had given good reasons for entering the country. Establishing the truth of their story by Nakahama's successful translation into Japanese of Blount's Navigator resulted in their release, and Nakahama was permitted to see his father and mother again.

Nakahama was given a government position, and rose in favor until the time of Commodore Perry's visit to Japan, for the purpose of securing the opening of the port of Tokio to the United States. The mikado was prejudiced against foreigners, on account of the disorderly conduct of the sailors of other nations who had been in Japan, but Nakahama assured him that Commodore Perry and his men were gentlemen, and prevailed upon the mikado to receive the commodore. Nakahama acted as interpreter during the interview, which resulted in a treaty with the United States. Subsequently Nakahama was placed at the head of a commission of seven Japanese students to visit European nations and make similar treaties with them.

Coming to New York, Nakahama had three days there before sailing for Europe, and he took the opportunity to visit Fairhaven. He went to the home of Mrs. Whitfield—the captain having died—and when she saw Nakahama she burst into tears, as did the Japanese, so affected were they by the meeting. He remained in Fairhaven that day, and to every one of his old acquaintances he met, he presented a Japanese gold coin. Mr. Tripp expressed regret that on that day he was out of town, and failed to obtain one of the coins.

Nakahama's European mission was so successful that the mikado made him a prince of the empire. Mr. Tripp displayed a portrait of the Japanese in the costume of a prince.

Following Mr. Tripp's talk, Miss Drescott sang "Oh, Dear, What Can the Matter Be," and the meeting closed with the singing of "Auld Lang Syne." The speakers were extended a vote of thanks for their addresses.

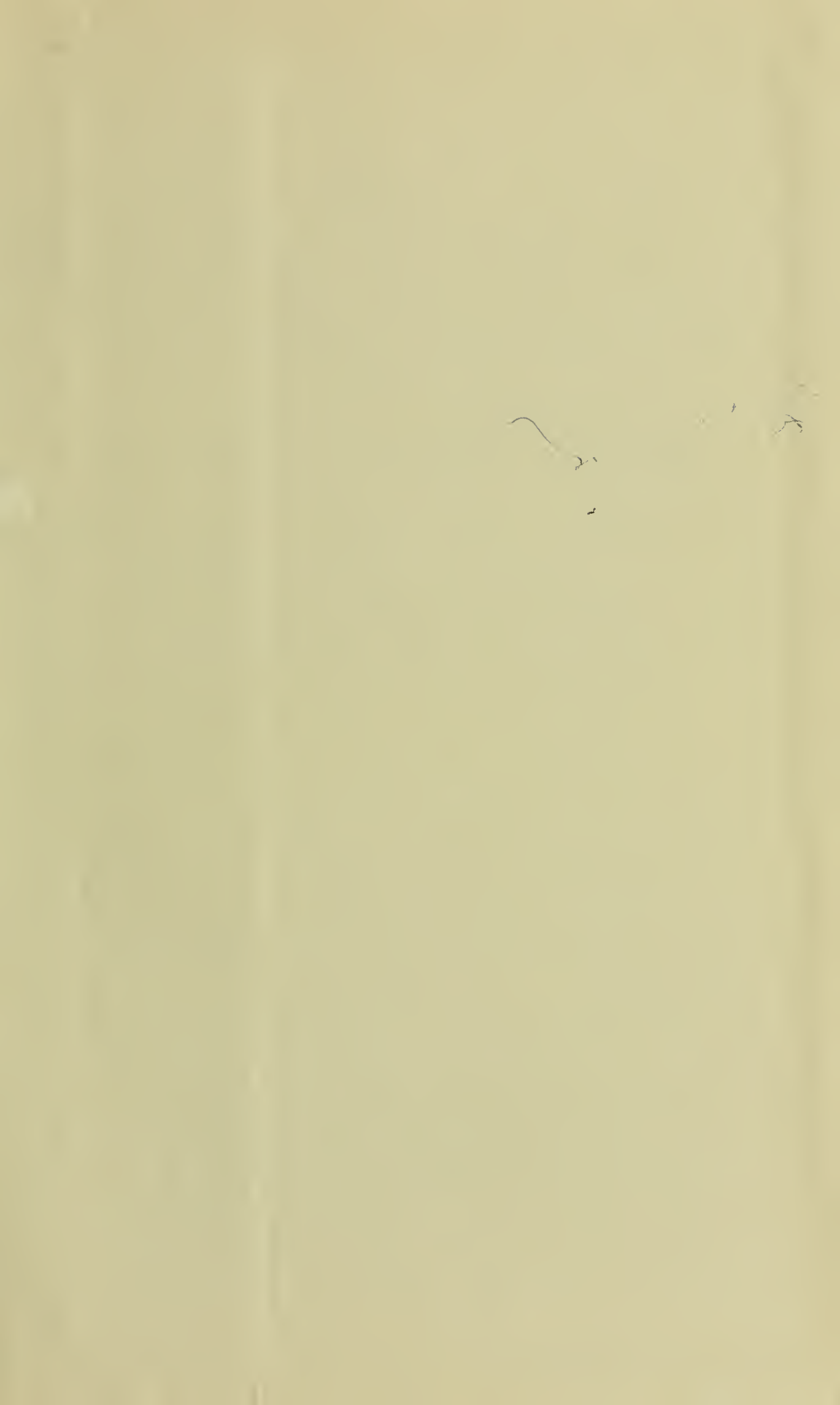
In addition to Miss Drescott's vocal selections, Edmund Grinnell who played her accompaniments, rendered Mozart's Minuet, with variations.

The company adjourned to the colonial room, where the old-fashioned dainties promised by President Cushman were dispensed. In a corner of the room, Miss Mary Bradford poured coffee, from a beautiful old-fashioned urn; while Mrs. William H. Snow presided at the centre table. Miss Mar-

garet Price served cider from an earthen jug; and doughnuts, apples, and popcorn were also served.

The refreshment committee comprised Miss Edith Tripp and Miss Margaret Price, assisted by Miss Pauline Hawes and Miss Marguerite Walmsley.

E 907



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 012 608 733 0

